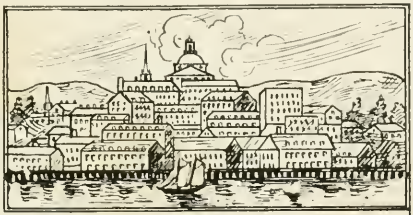
1916



WALKS & TALKS
About
HISTORIC · BOSTON

"Here stands to-day, as of yore, our little city of the rocks; here let her stand forever on the man-beaning granite of the North! Let her stand fast by herself! She has grown great, she is filled with strangers; but she can only prosper by adhering to her faith. Let every child that is born of her, and every child of her adoption, see to it to keep the name of Boston as clear as the sun; and in distant ages het motto shall be the prayer of millions on all the hills that gird the town; "As with our fathers, so God be with us."

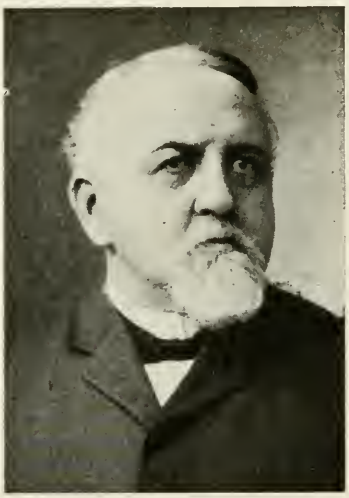
RALPH WALDO EMERSON

COMPILED & EDITED
by
ALBERT W. MANN

PUBLISHED BY THE
MANN PUBLISHING CO.
BOSTON, MASSACHUSETTS

Copyright by
ALBERT W. MANN
1917
All rights reserved

Printed by the
PURITAN LINOTYPE
152 Purchase St.
Boston, Mass.
1917



ALBERT W. MANN

Introduction

A native and resident of Boston, educated in her public schools, one of the many thousands she sent forth in defence of the Union, a lover of her history and her traditions, the writer submits this volume for the perusal of other lovers of this good old town and of citizens all over the great Republic who hold the name and fame of Boston in reverence.

The early settlers on these Eastern shores, the Pilgrims and the Puritans, were intelligent, liberty-loving, God-fearing men and women, who laid broad and deep the foundations of this mighty nation. They were devoted to principle. They toiled, they suffered, they fought, and, in many cases, they died for righteousness' sake. They were men of like passions as ourselves, with their faults, but their virtues far outweighed their failings, and they left us a glorious heritage of character and achievement.

In the mad rush of these days for wealth, power, and self-gratification, we need to pause and ask whither are we tending? A well-known educator once said: "The biographies of the good and great have, for their direct tendency, the reproduction of the excellences they record." Let us hope that a careful reading of the character and work of some of the men herein recorded may result in a saner outlook upon life and a better and nobler use of our opportunities.

The writer acknowledges his great indebtedness to many sources in the compilation of this work; to the "Boston Globe," the "Boston Post," and the "Boston Budget," for much interesting and valuable matter; to the State Street Trust Company, for permission to copy from their interesting historical pamphlets such pictures as might be selected to illustrate the articles herein presented; and his sincere thanks to all who have in any way assisted him in this work.

ALBERT W. MANN.

Contents

Boston, the Modern Athens 1
John Winthrop, the Founder of Boston 4
The Settlement of Dorchester and Mattapannock (South Boston) 14
The Early Settlers—How They Dressed and How They Lived and Worked 24
The Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company 37
Cotton Mather and the Days of Witchcraft in New England 45
The Puritan Blue Laws 51
Roger Williams, the Apostle of Religious Toleration 56
Some Items of Historical Interest—First Things 63
Boston Streets, Old and Present Names, and Some Items of Interest Concerning Them 72
Old Boston; Additions and Improvements 78
The Old State House 88
Faneuil Hall, The Huguenots and the Faneuil Family .. 97
The Stamp Act, 1765-1766 125
The Boston Massacre 134
The Boston Tea Party 147
The Boston Port Bill, 1774 167
Lexington and Concord, April 19, 1775 176
The Battle of Bunker Hill 187
"The Sword of Bunker Hill" 197
Some Famous Places of Resort for Whigs and Tories of Revolutionary Days 199
How Washington Compelled the British to Evacuate Boston 205
William Cunningham 210
The American Flag 214
The Hiring of Foreign Mercenaries by England to Subjugate America 221
Samuel Adams 225

Contents (continued)

Paul Revere, the Mercury of the American Revolution .236
Benjamin Franklin 247
John Adams 275
General John Glover, a Revolutionary Hero 281
General Henry Knox, Bookseller, Patriot, General, and Secretary of War 299
The Charles River Bridge 309
The Exchange Coffee House 311
The Public Garden 315
Boston Schools 320
The First Church 326
The United States Navy in the War of 1812—On the Ocean and on the Lakes 335
Daniel Webster and His Home in Boston 353
The Visit of Lafayette to America in 1824-1825 362
The Anti-Slavery Struggle and the Abolition Leaders in Massachusetts 371
The Visit of the Prince of Wales to Boston 390
South Boston in the Early Fifties 400
Boston Common 416
Boston Libraries 425
Union Bank Building, 40 State Street, 1850 428
The Merchants' Exchange, State Street 430
Dr. Oliver Wendell Holmes 431
Rev. Edward Everett Hale, D. D. 438
George E. McNeill 441
Temple Place 444
Parker's Restaurant and the Parker House 447
Musical Festivals 451
The Old South Church 454
Park Street Church 464
The Baptists in Boston—First Baptist Church 467
Tremont Temple Baptist Church 471

Contents (continued)

The Brattle Square Church 480
The Arlington Street Church 484
The Birthplace of the Universalist Church 487
The Roman Catholic Church in Boston 490
The West End Church 497
The Draft Riot in Boston, July, 1863 500
Christ Church, 1775 508
Trinity Church 513
The Christian Science Church 519
Methodism in Boston 521
Ralph Waldo Emerson 523
Some Views on Tremont Street 531
New South Church 539
Old Boston Theatres 541
Albert W. Mann 546
Events Preceding the Civil War 548
Massachusetts and Boston in the Civil War 555
The Boys in Blue Who Saved the Union 564
Lincoln's Gettysburg Address 568
Lincoln and the Soldiers 569
An Illinois Soldier at the Funeral of Abraham Lincoln.. 571
Boston: Its Area, City Government and Present Standing 574

Walks and Talks About Historic Boston

Hon. William A. Morse

Boston, The Modern Athens

From a speech at the banquet to the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company of Boston at Norfolk, Va., Oct. 5, 1904.

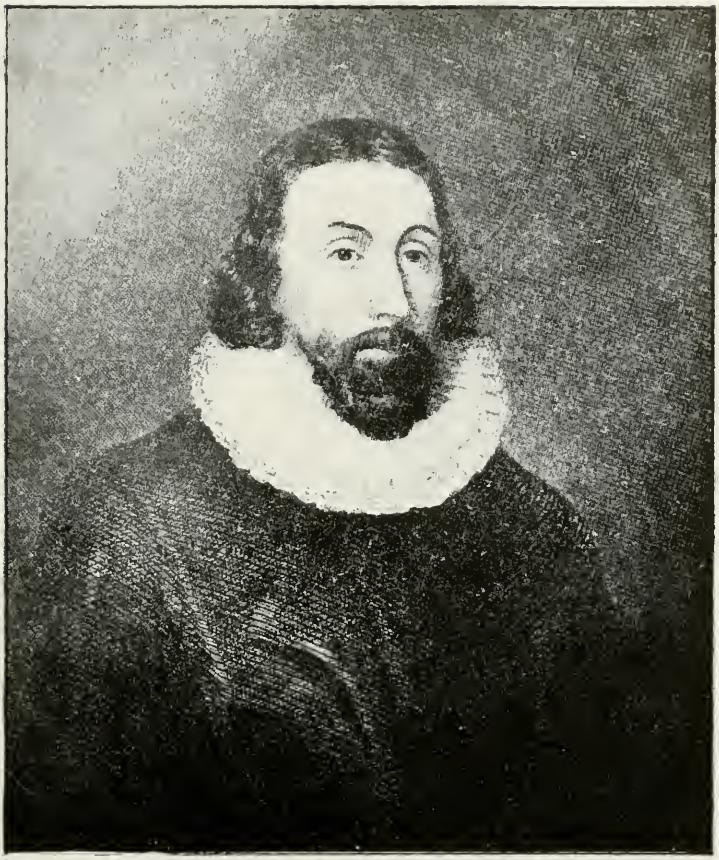
Boston is indeed the modern Athens, and well deserves the title, for she has preserved the genius and spirit of the art and culture of her illustrious predecessor. The old Athens erected a forest of majestic Corinthian columns in front of the

temple of Olympian Jove as a symbol of his might. On Bunker Hill there rises a plain, unadorned column as a symbol of the simplicity of the power of right. The old Athens had her Mars hill, where Paul ascended, and gazing on the beautiful, costly temples about him dared say, God does not dwell in temples made by hands." Our Athens has the old South church, where Joseph Warren entered and forcing his way past British officers to the pulpit, while drums of a regiment were beaten to drown his voice, dared to denounce the injustice and oppression of his majesty King George in the presence of his soldiers.

Old Athens had her blue Ægean sea, where her ships sailed to destroy the Persian fleet, the conquerors of the east, but on the shores of our Athens was built and launched the iron-sided frigate Constitution that rebuked the haughty mistress of the seas, and in the roar of her cannon, proclaimed the fact that Britannia rules no more. Grand, glorious, the gem of ancient Athens was her temple-crowned Acropolis, its summit rising to heaven and consecrated to the immortal gods, but our Athens, with the diviner light of understanding and conscious pride in beautiful Copley Square, where is gathered together within the granite walls all the best recorded thoughts of all the centuries, holds in reverence this her most priceless jewel, which scintillates with the brightness of her intelligence as she points to the inscription, "Built by the people and dedicated to the advancement of learning." Gone are the immortal gods of the old Acropolis, but modern Athens, still in the enchantment of her youth and with perfect sublimity of faith, looks toward the future by the power of her genius, determined to reveal more to man of his own destiny and clearer revelation of the purposes of the infinite.

Dear old Boston, we, your sons, hold you in tender remembrance tonight. Like all your absent children, we ever turn to you in loving thought and affection, and when the sands of life are nearly run, we want our last walk to be in the old familiar streets, we want our last look to be on the old familiar faces, and as the twilight deepens into darkness we want to sink to our eternal night, our soul exalted by memories of you.

The mother may forget the child
That smiles sae sweetly on her knee:
But I'll remember thee, Glencairn,
And all that thou hast done for me.



John Winthrop

Founder of Boston and First Governor of Massachusetts

John Winthrop, The Founder of Boston

John Winthrop was born in 1588, in the manor house of Groton, County of Suffolk, England. He came of an ancient and honored family of staunch Puritans. The estate of Groton was a part of the monastery of Bury of St. Edmands and was purchased in 1544, by his grandfather, Adam Winthrop, a wealthy cloth merchant of London, shortly after the monasteries were abolished. The son, also named Adam, succeeded to the estate. He was a lawyer, with a London practice, and sat as magistrate, at his manor at Groton, for the County. He had a fine estate, a snug fortune, and was a scholarly and hospitable man.

John Winthrop, as a youth, met at his father's table many intelligent men and preachers of the Puritan persuasion, for the sympathies of the family were with the principles that led the Pilgrims to emigrate to Plymouth, and, later, were to lead to the settlement of Boston, in which John Winthrop was to have a leading part. There is no doubt but that the conversations and arguments of such guests, made a deep impression on the young and plastic mind and had much to do in shaping his career. At the age of 14 he was sent to Cambridge University, not far from his home. At 18 years of age, he was converted, and became an earnest Christian, and at 21 years of age, he sat for the first time as a magistrate, at his home in Groton Manor, showing that he was a good student of the law, for he had already been admitted to practise in the London courts.

His third wife, Margaret Tyndale, was a rarely attractive character, and was devoted to Winthrop and her family duties. At this time the spirit of religious persecution was sweeping over England. Many had taken refuge in other countries, especially in Holland, and from these refugees came the little band of Pilgrims, who set sail on the "Mayflower" for America. John Winthrop saw, that if he was to be true to his religious convictions, he, too, must fly to some place of refuge, so he made ready to leave his pleas-

ant home, his old friends, his lucrative business, and he joined his fortunes with the men who were to found the colony of Massachusetts Bay.

The settlement of the Pilgrim Fathers at Plymouth, was made under a patent, issued by the Virginia Company, in 1620 and the Company was called the "Council for New England," and it was from this latter Company, that six well-to-do Englishmen, secured in 1628, a grant of Massachusetts, which was defined as having a northern boundary three miles south of the Merrimac river, and its southern boundary, three miles south of the Charles river, and extending indefinitely westward. The primary object of this grant was commercial, but among the promoters were men of sterling Puritan views, and as things fell out, the Commercial Company's enterprise was to develop a predominating religious character, and this came about largely through the election of John Winthrop as the first Governor of the Community to be planted in Massachusetts. It was an important position, needing a good organizer, a man of great wisdom, judgment, integrity and forbearance. All these qualities Winthrop possessed in an eminent degree, in addition to a sympathetic nature, and deeply religious temperament. To lead these colonists meant a great sacrifice on his part, for he stood high in the estimation of his fellow men, he had a fine estate, and a very large law practice. His selection of several hundred persons, composing the company of emigrants, the chartering and victualing of so many ships, the employment of ministers, a surgeon and other persons for places of responsibility and trust, the purchase of supplies for the settlement, the arranging of his personal affairs for a long absence, possibly never to return, occupied every moment of his time.

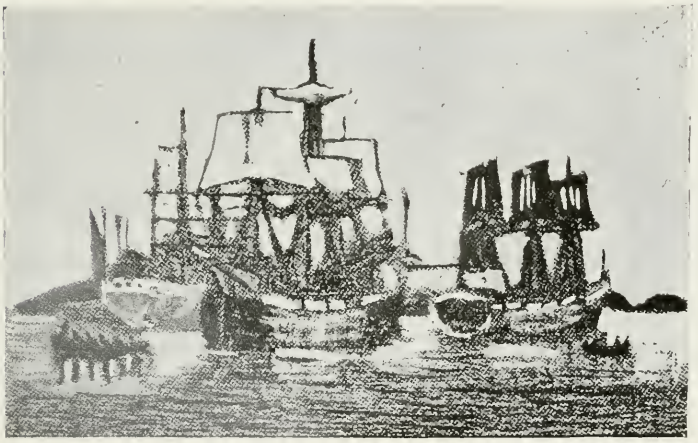
"No event of ancient or modern times is more interesting, as certainly none has proved to be more important in its influence on the political institutions of the nations, and the cause of liberty and civilization, than the emigration of this band of colonists in 1630." The ships' rendezvoused at Southampton and it is estimated that the expense of supplying them amounted to nearly one hundred thousand dollars. Among the emigrants were clergymen, physicians, magistrates, military officers, millers, merchants, mechanics, and others, possessed of horses, cattle and other prop-

erty. "In point of intelligence, social position, firmness of purpose, and an exalted standard of conscience, it was the most remarkable party of colonists that ever left their native shores to lead the way in the establishment of great civil institutions." Just before the fleet sailed, Rev. John Cotton of Boston, in Lincolnshire, the spiritual guide of the emigrants, and who was to follow them to the new world, two years later, preached a sermon from 2 Samuel 8:10, "Moreover I will appoint a place for my people, Israel, and will plant them that they may dwell in a place of their own." On March 23, 1630, four of the ships set sail on their "long and tedious voyage across the stormy Atlantic." The "Arabella" named for Lady Arabella Johnson, a passenger on the ship, led the way. On board the same ship were Governor Winthrop, Sir Isaac Johnson, Richard Saltonstall, William Coddington, afterward Governor of Rhode Island, Thomas Dudley, later a Governor of Massachusetts, and others, as someone has said: "all devout and serious people in the better walks of life; leaving the strong ties of home and country, like Winthrop, to find freedom of conscience in the new world." After a stormy passage of eleven weeks, they came in sight of the shores of Eastern Maine. Under date of June 8, 1630, we find the following entry in "Winthrop's diary of the voyage": About 3 in the afternoon we had sight of land to the N. W., about ten leagues, which we supposed were the isles of Monhegan, but it proved Mount Munsell (Mount Desert). Then we tacked and stood W. S. W. We had now fair sunshine weather, and so pleasant and sweet an air, as did much refresh us, and there came a smell of the shore like the smell of a garden." Coasting along towards Massachusetts, encountering fog, calm and head winds, at four o'clock on June 12, 1630, they were off their point of destination.

The emigrants had reached the little settlement of Salem, then two years old. "There Winthrop expected to find ample means sent out the year before with which to establish his new community, either there or elsewhere, but in this he was bitterly disappointed."

In the expedition headed by John Endicott in 1628 to Naumkeag were six ships, and in the Company were 300 men, 80 women and maids and 26 children, bringing with them 140 cattle, 49 goats, farm implements, and household goods. Winthrop expected to find houses built, crops

planted and everything in a prosperous condition, but saw nothing but misfortune on every hand. A shipload of food had not arrived. During the previous winter, sickness had carried off 80 of the company. The rest were so ill and hungry, they were scarcely able to move. They were in such a desperate condition that Winthrop had to take care of them, as well as of his own company, making over 1,000 souls, that he must carry through the Winter and he had not sufficient stores to do that. He at once sent back to



Winthrop's Ships

England for more food. His destination was Boston Harbor, where was a small settlement at Mishawan (Charlestown) a kind of picket post, sent out by Endicott, to hold the ground against all other comers. But according to Winthrop's understanding, his charter embraced, not only Naumkeag, but Massachusetts also, should a favorable location be found, so with his vessels, he sailed up the Mystic river six miles, to the present site of Medford. He noted the land carefully, and the final decision was that Charlestown was best suited for all the purposes of his party. In the last days of June his company disembarked. Governor Winthrop moved into a great house that had been built there, as did also some of his prominent associates, while the multitude set up cottages, booths and

tents about the Town Hall. On August 23, 1630, the first court was held, a meeting of the Governor and his Councillors or Associates, as they were called, numbering 18. It was the first representative government in the Colony, and this may be called the birth of the "Great and General Court of Massachusetts." It was a religious community. With but few exceptions, all the members of the little band had emigrated to America because they could not conscientiously worship according to the rules of the Church of England. They did not separate themselves entirely from the church and so stated in a petition to the clergy before leaving England. What they desired and asked for was a church reform without a separation. But the Church of England did not heed their petition, and the Puritans continued to stand for Congregationalism. As religious men the first question which they settled was the support of their minister. Sickness swept away several of that little band at Charlestown, among others Lady Arabella Johnson. Following the sickness came other trials and hardships. Their stock of provisions was getting low, the springs began to dry up. At last only one spring remained and that could be reached only when the tide was out. In this extremity there came across the Charles river from Shawmut, William Blaxton (Blackstone) whose home was on the Southerly slope of Beacon Hill, and who was known as the hermit settler. He was a man of education, but very eccentric. He settled in Shawmut about 1625 and was about thirty-five years of age. He was rather tall and slender in form with a pale and thoughtful face. He told Governor Winthrop of a fine spring on the peninsula and invited the colonists to change their settlement to its vicinity. The majority voted to accept the invitation and the colonists moved over in September 1630. "In 1634 he sold 44 of his 50 acres to Governor Winthrop for $150, the money being raised by a tax levied on the inhabitants. He retained 6 acres for his homestead, which one hundred years later was owned by Copley, the famous portrait painter.

The 44 acres became "Boston Common." The General Court at this time decided to name the town. In honor of the ancient East county city where their favorite minister, the Rev. John Cotton, preached, and from whence came several of the prominent emigrants it was called "Boston."

In the sharp, frosty weather of a New England autumn, Winthrop, and his fellow colonists, raised their roof trees in Boston, and it was with much foreboding they looked forward to the coming winter. The new location was a rough, uninviting place, its surface uneven, and covered with a scrub growth and hideous thickets in which wolves and bears nursed their young in sight of all beholders. Marshes surrounded it on three sides. Governor Winthrop's first house in Boston, was located on State Street, where now stands the Exchange Building. It had been framed in Charlestown and was moved over. A little later he changed his residence to Washington Street, opposite School Street, the site of the Old South Building. He was induced to make the change because it was in the immediate vicinity of a never failing spring of excellent water, where now is Spring Lane. Many of his associates located near him.

Winthrop's garden extended to Milk Street. That was 100 years before the Old South Meeting House was erected. The removal from Charlestown in September, did not give the settlers time to erect substantial dwellings, and many had to pass through the rigors of a New England winter in tents. The few houses that were constructed, were of the roughest materials, with roofs of thatch, and chimneys made of sticks and mud, and these houses were filled to overflowing. The exposure of the voyage, the poor and insufficient diet, and unsanitary condition, brought on an epidemic of fever, dysentery and scurvy, which proved fatal in a large number of cases. From the Governor's house, where a considerable number appear to have been sheltered, 12 corpses were carried out to be buried in the flinty frozen ground. Such was the scarcity of food, that the men scoured the shores for clams and mussels, and scraped the snow on the wooded hills in search of nuts and acorns. There was the howling of wolves at night, and their inroads by day, on their fast dwindling stock. There were not many Indians in the vicinity, but these few were friendly. In those dark days the strength of the homesick and stricken people was John Winthrop. He was the valiant soul that gave them all courage. He tended the sick. He labored with his own hands to help the suffering. He shared his food with whoever was in need of it. He quelled the turbulent. He chastised evil doers with inexorable justice. He kept alive the flame of hope. To the Indians who came

among them, the Governor put on a "brave front." The crisis came February 5th, 1631. As the Governor was distributing with his own hands, the last handful of meal in the barrel, to a poor man, distressed by hunger, they spied the ship at the harbor's mouth, laden with provisions for them all. On account of the floating ice in the harbor, the ship anchored off Long Island. She had on board 20 immigrants and 200 tons of goods. Food was immediately carried by boats to the starving colonists and four days later the ship anchored off the little settlement. "On the 22d of February, 1631, a day of General Thanksgiving was held." The long and bitter winter finally wore away and with the coming of Spring, they commenced to look for land which would yield an adequate return in agriculture. The land of Boston was too uneven and rocky for cultivation. Farms were apportioned to the settlers bordering on the Charles, Mystic and Neponset rivers, and crops were planted. The Governor had one assigned to him on the Mystic river of several hundred acres, extending from Charlestown to where Medford now stands. He built a substantial stone farmhouse, where he spent most of his time in Summer and called the place the "Ten Hills" because ten well defined hills were visible from it. He built and launched on the Mystic, a craft of 30 tons, which he christened "The Blessing of the Bay," in which he made voyages, on the business of the Colony, going East to the coast of Maine, and west as far as New York. Into his private life were to come happier days, for in November 1631, his wife, whom he was obliged to leave behind in England, arrived with four of his children. It was a time of rejoicing in the little colony.

When the ship arrived off the town, she was saluted with artillery. The Governor, on landing, was honored with a guard, and most of the people from the nearby plantations came in to welcome him, and brought and sent for days, great stores of provisions and fat hogs, kids, venison, poultry, geese, partridges, etc., so as the like joy and manifestations of love, had never been seen in New England.

"The next day the following entry appeared in the Governor's Diary: 'November 11. We kept a day of Thanksgiving in Boston."

The next few years, while full of labor and care for Governor Winthrop, appear to have been prosperous and hap-

py. He now felt that New England was his home, his country, for when he left England his manor house in Groton was sold. He received no salary as Governor, and when requested by the freemen for an accounting, he confounded them by showing that he had spent out of his own pocket for the good of the community $6000 a good part of his fortune. He was truly the one man, the mainstay. He surrounded himself with strong men. His justice and broadmindedness made him, at all times, a tower of strength. In 1634, a representative government was established in Massachusetts, the second in America.

At this time in England there was a violent struggle for power between the monarch and the people. Many of those who loved peace and quiet and foresaw the coming storm, fled to America. During the year 1635, three thousand settlers went to Massachusetts Bay, among them many men of wealth, influence and discretion. The Colony at that time was somewhat excited over the theological disputes, Roger Williams taking an active and leading part in dissenting from the Puritans. Winthrop often tempered some of the harsh laws of the Colony with a merciful mildness in their execution. On one occasion, it was reported to him that a man had been stealing from his winter's store of firewood and he was urged to punish him. "I will soon put a stop to that practice," said the Governor sternly. He sent for the offender. "You have a large family," he said to the culprit, "and I have a large magazine of wood. Come as often as you please and take as much of it as you need to make your dwelling comfortable." Then turning to the accusers, he said, "Now I defy him to steal any more of my firewood." In those early days there was a prosperous commerce between Massachusetts and the West Indies Islands, and as a result of the trade much bullion and uncoined gold and silver was brought to the Colony and a Mint was established in Massachusetts in 1652 and silver coins of the denominations of three pence, six pence and twelve pence, or shilling, were issued and this was the first coinage within the territory of the United States. Governor Winthrop who was re-elected ruled wisely. Like Bradford of the Plymouth Colony, he courted the friendship of the surrounding Indians, and chiefs and sachems from the Mohegans on the distant Hudson River, dined at his table.

They told him of the beautiful Connecticut Valley, and invited him to send settlers there. There also might have been seen the son of the aged Canonicus, his nephew, Miantonomoh, the brilliant young chief of the Narragansetts, and the representative of the Nipmucks and Wampanoags, with Massasoit, the great chief of the latter nation. Winthrop also cultivated friendly relations with neighboring settlements and distant colonies. At the time of his death he lived in the two story house on Washington Street opposite School Street.

There were no religious services at funerals at that period of our Colonial history. Rev. John Cotton preached a sermon in respect to Governor Winthrop on a Special Fast Day held by the church during his last illness. No religious services were necessary, however, to make the occasion of Governor Winthrop's death a solemn one. The portrait of Governor Winthrop, which hangs on the wall of the Senate Chamber in the State House on Beacon Hill, represents a fine looking man, his countenance beaming with intelligence and goodness. Regarding this portrait, there appears in the memoranda of the Winthrop Family the following incident. "One of the Pequot Sagamores, who knew Governor Winthrop, coming to Boston after his death, went into the room where the portrait was, and seeing it ran out, very much surprised, exclaiming, "He is alive! He is alive!"

In a busy part of the old town of Boston, which he founded and which he loved, under the shadow of quaint old King's Chapel, lie the mortal remains of this truly great and good man. His moral was equally developed with his religious nature. He was amiable, kind hearted, sympathetic, serious and truthful. He was gentle in temper and free from vindictiveness. Generous in forgiving the errors of others, he was magnanimous in confessing his own.

Josiah Quincy well said: "Had Boston, like Rome, a consecrated calendar, there is no name better entitled than that of Winthrop to be registered as its "Patron Saint."

On Shirley Street, in the town of Winthrop, stands the Deane Winthrop House.

The house was built by Deane, the sixth son of Governor Winthrop, about the year 1640, and is a typical Colonial farm house. It is still in a fair state of preservation,

although it has weathered the storms and suns of over two hundred and seventy-five years. The Deane Winthrop Chapter of the Daughters of the American Revolution have met there and are making efforts to buy the property.

The Settlement of Dorchester and Mattapannock (South Boston)

The first settlers of Mattapan or Dorchester came from Devon, Dorset and Somerset in England. On the 20th of March, 1630, the Company set sail on the ship "Mary and John" of 400 tons, commanded by Captain Squeb. They encountered a violent storm on their passage, but says one of their number "they came by the good hand of the Lord through the deeps comfortably." In a poem written shortly afterwards by Governor Wolcott, son of Roger Wolcott, one of the passengers, some particulars of the voyage are narrated. This poem may be found in the collections of the Massachusetts Historical Society. Just a couplet from the poem will show the motives which actuated those persons to remove to a wilderness:

> "Religion was the cause that did our hearts incline,
> And moved our founders to this great design."

It was on the 20th of May, old style 1630, that the Company arrived on the coast of Massachusetts. It was the last day of the week and as the last rays of the setting sun gilded the land which was in the future to be their home, they were desirous to land, that the rest of the Sabbath might not be disturbed. But the Captain, not knowing the channel, and fearing that there might not be a sufficient depth of water, declined to land them and cast anchor for the night. The agreement was that the Captain should land them on the Charles River. But he failed to keep his contract and despite their repeated protestations the whole company was obliged to land with their goods on the Lord's day at Nantasket Point. History informs us that the Captain was afterwards obliged to pay damages for this act.

From their known habits we have no doubt that their first act on landing, was to kneel in prayer to Him who had thus far been a God to them.

John Oldham, an old planter, had left the Plymouth Colony and settled at Nantasket, and afterward united with the Dorchester Company. They procured a boat from this man and on Monday forenoon, Captain Southcoat, Roger Clap and eight other able bodied men were appointed to take the boat and visit Mishawaum, at the mouth of the Charles River, and ascertain whether they could be accommodated. In the meantime other parties sailed up a bay, now called from that circumstance, "Old Harbor," and seeing that the peninsula, now known as South Boston, was a favorable place for the pasturage of cattle, they immediately decided to settle in Mattapan, now Dorchester. By this means they could enjoy the use of Mattapannock (South Boston) as it was then called by the Indians. Dorchester, therefore, owes its early settlement to the benefits supposed to be gained by having Mattapannock as a pasture ground for cattle.

Many of the settlers of Dorchester were persons of note and figure, being dignified with the title of "Mr." which but few in those days were. Quite a number of these men were traders and when they first selected Dorchester as their residence, intending it as a place of commerce. They first settled near the Neck, between Mattapan and Mattapannock, and there built their town. Arriving in May they were too late to do any planting for that season, and they soon came to want.

In the early part of 1631 bread failed in every house in the settlement, except that of the Governor. The people ate mussels, clams and ground nuts, and of these even they had but a limited supply. Accustomed to the best of fare and to comfortable habitations it was a great hardship for these persons of good rank and circumstances in their native country. They endured great sufferings but murmured not. Their privations and sufferings are thus described by Captain Roger Clap in his Memoirs:

"O, the hunger that many suffered and saw no hope in the eye of reason to be supplied only by clams, mussels and fish. We did quickly build boats and some went fishing; but bread was with many a scarce thing, and flesh of all kinds as scarce."

Believing that God could aid them in their troubles they set apart February 6 as a day of fasting and prayer." Before the day came, however, they were relieved from their want and distress. Governor Winthrop, foreseeing that provisions would be needed had sent to Ireland for a supply. On the 5th of February, the ship Lion arrived, laden with food, and

prevented the Colony from perishing by famine, and thus the 6th of February was observed as a day of thanksgiving and prayer instead of a day of feasting.

What Roger Clap says in his Memoirs of the arrival of a supply of provisions is well worthy a place in this story of the early settlers of Dorchester and South Boston. "And in those days, in our straits, though I cannot say God sent a raven to feed us as he did the prophet Elijah, yet I can say to the praise of God's glory, that he sent not only poor, ravenous Indians, which came with their baskets of corn on their backs, to trade with us, but also sent ships from Holland and Ireland with provisions, and Indian corn from Virginia to supply the wants of his dear servants in this wilderness both for food and raiment."

In 1631 several ships arrived from England bringing a large addition to the Colony, and increased their stock of provisions, as each vessel brought food for the settlement. They gathered a bountiful harvest this year, and though they had enough and to spare, they practiced the strictest economy, not knowing what was before them.

It is believed that the form of government or town organization which has prevailed in New England for over two centuries had its origin in the town of Dorchester. In 1633, the settlers began the practice of electing selectmen to provide for the best interests of the Colony and to put into operation all laws that might be made.

In August 1633, the Rev. Richard Mather arrived in Boston. Says Blake: "There came with him a great number of godly people to settle here. There came with him 100 passengers and 23 seamen, 23 cows and heifers, 3 calves and 8 mares, and none died by the way, though they met with as terrible a storm as was almost ever heard of."

Mattapannock, now so valuable a part of the city of Boston, was in those early days, used only as a pasture for cattle, and the first settlers did not consider it of sufficient value to be divided. A fence was built near the present junction of Dorchester Avenue and Dorchester Street in the district known as Washington Village, and from thence ran a pathway to the Neck, commanded by a gate, and persons were appointed to drive the cattle to and from the pasture. Only a certain number of the people of Dorchester had a right to use Mattapannock as a pasture. In 1637, according to the Town Records, 104 persons had that right. In that list are

numbered some of the most illustrious men among the Colonists. Several Representatives, three or four Captains, two Clergymen, quite a number of Good Men and Masters, sent their kine daily to South Boston to eat of the fat of the land. Among the names of the one hundred and four we find several widows. There was Widow Foster, Widow Sneed and Widow Purchase. Even good Richard Mather shared in this privilege, and sent his brindle to graze on the very ground, perchance, where now stands the edifice called by his name and devoted to the acquisition of useful knowledge. It is difficult for us to imagine the appearance of South Boston in those days. It was a peninsula, or rather an island at high water, covered with a rich growth of grass. In some parts there were clumps of trees which afforded shelter for the kine. It is interesting to note some of the regulations made at various times by the town of Dorchester in regard to the cattle to be pastured at Mattapannock. "April 3, 1638. It is ordered that for this year, only the oxen, mares, goats and young cattle shall be kept at the Neck, and no man shall keep any cow there, on pain of ten shillings for every cow so kept there contrary to this order."

It is plain that this last order was passed to prevent persons from turning their cattle out to pasture before the grass was of sufficient growth to supply them with food. No division of the land in Mattapannock seems to have been made until 1642. When the division was made the town reserved a portion for a common pasture. Any person had the privilege of allowing his cattle to graze there by the payment to the town of a small tax.

"In 1637, the persons who owned land in Mattapannock were obliged to pay a tax of half a penny on each acre of plowed land. The total amount thus assesed was 19 shillings 9 pence, showing that about 475 acres was under more or less cultivation. There is no doubt that the Peninsula was much liked and frequented by the Indians. Powow Point at the south end of K Street and facing Thompson's Island is highly celebrated in the history of our aborigines. Here the Indians were in the habit of holding an annual feast. This gathering was in commemoration of a celebrated Indian Treaty which was of great importance to the early settlers and called together multitudes of the red men of the forest. It is said that during this feast, nothing was to be used but what came from the sea. Even the water was literally taken

from the ocean and drank from clam shells. Near the centre of Powow Point is a spring of fresh water, which at high tide is completely covered by the sea. From this source, the Indians, in olden times, procured water for daily use. It is not known when the first dwelling house was erected in South Boston, but it was probably about the year 1660, by Deacon James Blake, an ancestor of the Blake family for so many years residents of that section. The site of the building was at City Point. In a will made in 1693, we find mention of the house and in the year 1732, it was so impaired by age that it was taken down and a new one erected on the same spot. Connected with the Blake house was a large orchard of one hundred trees of different kinds. Another old house on the peninsula was the Foster House on the corner of E and Fourth Streets opposite the school house. In the early fifties, the cellar of this house could still be seen. It was built soon after the Blake house, above referred to. This was the nearest house to Boston and in the early settlement was the only house west of Dorchester Street. This residence had a fine orchard of peach, apple and plum trees. In 1681, Mr. John Foster, one of the family who resided in South Boston, died. Under the date of that year in the "Annals" we find the following: "Died, Mr. John Foster, son of Captain Hope-still Foster, Schoolmaster of Dorchester, and he that made the then Seal or Arms of ye Colony, namely, an Indian with a bow and arrow, etc. Upon his tomb or gravestone, is written, as follows:

"The Ingenious Mathematician and
Printer
MR. JOHN FOSTER
Aged Thirty-three Years. Died September 9th, 1681.

Mr. Foster was a graduate of Harvard College and was a man of considerable note. The funeral was attended by a large number of mourning friends, and in accordance with the custom of the times the afflicted family received many eulogies on the death of their brother.

The Foster House was built previous to the Revolution, replacing the original house, already spoken of. It was, in its day, one of the most elegant houses in the vicinity of Boston. It is related that in the early days of the war, several Continental soldiers who strolled over to the Neck were with difficulty restrained from destroying the house, they thinking

it belonged to a Tory, as several of the rooms were papered, a luxury almost unknown in those days, and to these Continentals it was almost a sure sign that the occupant was a Tory.

In the early part of 1776, the weather was very cold and the harbor was frozen over. The ice was very thick and improving this opportunity about five hundred British grenadiers and light infantry on the 13th of February, crossed the ice to Mattapannock, intending to surprise and capture the American general, and picket post, stationed there, consisting of seventy men. They very nearly succeeded in their design but the general escaped. Not wishing to return without some exploit they set fire to several houses on the Neck, captured two prisoners and then returned. A detachment of Americans was sent to attack them, but the red coats escaped. Among the houses destroyed was the princely house of Mrs. Foster. This conflagration, wholly unprovoked and uncalled for, was one of the most dastardly and wanton acts committed by the British during their occupancy of Boston, for the inhabitants of Mattapannock were quiet and inoffensive.

Mr. James Blake, the son of the original settler at the Point, died in the sixty-third year of his age. His son succeeded to the estate and resided in the old homestead. In the latter part of 1775 he became fearful lest he should receive injury from the British soldiers stationed at Castle William (Fort Independence) who were in the habit of visiting Mattapannock. Several times his family were grossly insulted, and at last he was forced to remove to Dorchester, leaving his house and barn at the mercy of the enemy. One day the old gentleman saw the red coats at the fort point their cannon toward the Neck, and thinking they were about to practice a little, he sent his eldest son to take the glass windows out of the homestead as there was great danger that they would be broken by the concussion.

The young man immediately mounted his horse and was soon busily engaged, obeying his father's command, when a cannon ball passed directly through the window in which he was at work and lodged in the back wall of the house. Fortunately he was stooping to reach something on the floor at the time and hence escaped with his life. Soon another ball came whizzing by the house and passed very near the horse which stood tied to a tree about a rod from the house. The young man thought the British were becoming too social and leaving the windows to their fate he sprang upon his horse

and returned with all speed to Dorchester. Soon after this a party of British soldiers visited the Point and placing a tar barrel against Mr. Blake's house, set fire to it and the house and barn were totally destroyed. It was such acts of vandalism on the part of British soldiers that made them cordially hated by the Colonists.

Mr. James Blake who died in 1750, was one of the most distinguished persons in Dorchester. He was for many years Town Clerk and Town Treasurer, and for several years the principal Selectman. All these offices he continued to fill till he was rendered incapable of active duty by reason of sickness and infirmity. He was an excellent mathematician and the most noted surveyor of his time. His plans were so accurate as to elicit universal praise and during his life he surveyed several whole towns. He once made plans of every acre of land in Dorchester, and that when its territorial limits were much larger than now. Many plans drawn by him are still in existence and show by their elegant construction the hand of a master workman,

In those early days of Dorchester few names stand out more prominently than Roger Clap. He came to America in 1630, with the original settlers in the ship "Mary and John." In his memoirs he mentions that the passage from England was made in seventy days, and the Word of God was preached and expounded every day during the voyage. He was one of the founders of the First Church in Dorchester and a member for sixty years. We pause here to give a little history of that Church.

The First Parish Church, Meeting House Hill, Dorchester, is the oldest religious society in Boston. It was organized in Plymouth, England, March 20, 1630, the eve before the embarkation of the first settlers of Dorchester in the ship "Mary and John." John Maverick and John Warham were the first pastors. The church held its first religious service in America in the open air in Dorchester the Sunday after their settlement in June 1630. Their first church edifice was a log house with palisades as a protection against the Indians, and it stood at the corner of Pleasant and Cottage Streets.

A larger and more expensive structure was erected in 1643. In 1670 this building was moved to Meeting House Hill, which hill derives its name from the church, which, for nearly 250 years has been located there. In 1677 a new house of worship was erected which cost £200 and this was replaced

by another structure in 1743 which stood until 1816. On February 3, 1896, this noble landmark which had stood for 80 years was destroyed by fire and the present edifice is as nearly as possible a duplicate and is the fifth church building which has stood on that spot. Including Maverick and Warham and two coadjutors who assisted Rev. Richard Mather, this church had only eight ministers in 250 years of its history. The list is as follows: Richard Mather, 33 years; Josiah Flint, 9 years; John Danforth, 48 years; Jonathan Bowman, 44 years; Moses Everett, 19 years; Thaddeus Mason Harris, 43 years; and Nathaniel Hall, 40 years. The old bell, originally cast in England in 1751, which was so badly cracked in the fire of 1896 was recast and now hangs in the belfry. All the old inscriptions were reproduced in the new casting.

Roger Clap was an active and liberal supporter of this church all his life. He was an active man in town and state affairs filling important offices in the town from 1637 to 1665. He was lieutenant of the Dorchester Training Bands in 1644. A lieutenant in the Artillery Company in 1655 and a representative to the General Court for fifteen years. In 1659 the General Court granted him five hundred acres of land. After the death of Captain Davenport in 1665, the General Court appointed Captain Roger Clap to the command of Castle William which he held until 1686, when he resigned. A little account of Castle William, now known as Fort Independence, may be interesting in this connection. "On a little island in the harbor, the first settlers in and near Boston, built a fort for their defence in July 1634. It had walls of earth and it was given the name of Castle William. In 1643 the mud walls having gone to decay, the fort was rebuilt with pine trees and earth under the superintendence of Captain Richard Davenport, who was appointed to command it. In a little time that decayed and a small castle of brick was built, having three rooms in it, a dwelling house below, a lodging room over it, and a gun room over that, wherein were six guns, called sacker guns and over it upon the top, three lesser guns. "Such was the condition when God was pleased to send a grievous storm of thunder and lightning which did some harm in Boston," says Roger Clap in his Memoirs. Captain Davenport, weary by severe duty, had retired in a room separated from the powder magazine by a thin partition and while asleep was killed by a flash of lightning, no material damage being done to the Castle. The Castle as it stood, cost about £4000.

In 1663 the General Court passed a bill allowing two barrels of powder per annum "for saluting of ships" at the Castle. This Castle was burned by accident in 1672 and a new fort of stone was erected having four bastions and armed with thirty-eight guns. The bastions were long known by the names of "The Crown," "The Rose," "The Royal" and "The Elizabeth." In 1864 a direct descendant of the Roger Clap family served as Sergeant of a Company doing garrison duty during the Civil War, Sergeant David Capen Clapp of the First Unattached Company Massachusetts Volunteer Militia.

"Captain Roger Clap was of the ultra Puritan School and by no means tolerant of the innovations attempted by the Antimonians and Quakers. It is said of him that his soldiers were treated as if they were of his own family and none were permitted to be enlisted, but pious as well as brave men. So greatly was he beloved by the people of Dorchester that in the year 1676, "when taken sick they kept a day of fasting and prayer, to beg his life of God, and when he recovered a day of Thanksgiving." He died February 2, 1690, and his grave stone in the Chapel Ground is standing on which his name is plainly legible.

The early settlers of Dorchester were a remarkable body of men, brave, intelligent, liberty-loving and God-fearing and many of the descendants are still residing in Boston and vicinity. The names of Blake, Clapp, Capen, Clement, Dickerman, Dyer, Duncan, Farnsworth, Fenn, Hayden, Hawes, Hill, Humphreys Jones, Knight, Kinsley, Minot, Nils Smith, Sumner, Swift, Wade, Wales, Weeks, Whitman, Wiswell Wilkins, Withington and Wright, are all found in that early band.

Mr. Toomey in his excellent history of South Boston, awards to Dorchester the honor of having the first public school in America. He says: "One of the most important and historical entries on the Record Book of the Dorchester of the early days is the order providing for a free school, the first free public school in America. Thompson's Island, Boston Harbor, was granted to Dorchester in 1634, by the General Court. May 30, 1639, the town voted to lay a town tax upon the proprietors of the Island for the maintenance of a school in Dorchester. The Dorchester Free Public School was the first to receive support from taxation, and also the first school to be directly in charge of a school committee. The first school house was erected in the vicinity of Meeting House Hill and was a small one-story structure. The first

school was named after the minister of that period, Rev. Richard Mather and from that day to this there has been a Mather School in the district."

Sassacoed, Chief of the Pequots

The Early Settlers

How They Dressed and How They Lived and Worked

In a book published by Rev. Charles Brooks, a very interesting account is given of the costumes, the daily routine, and the various occupations of the early settlers of Dorchester. It shows that each had his or her work to do in the upbuilding of the town, each labored for the general welfare of the community. They did their work willingly and uncomplainingly. The Church of God stood high in their esteem and the greatest care was taken to have every one attend its services, that they might listen to words of wisdom and make good and worthy citizens. We quote from this book:—

COSTUMES.

"The every day dress was plain and comfortable, but Sunday suits were quite elaborate and expensive. The men, on Sunday wore broad-brimmed hats, turned up into three corners, with loops at the side, showing full bush wigs beneath them, long coats, the very opposite of swallow tails, having large pocket folds and cuffs, and without collars, the buttons either plated or of pure silver, and of the size of a half dollar. The vests, also, without collars, were long with graceful pendulous lapped pockets. The shirts had bosom and wrist ruffles, with buckles at the wrist united by a link. The neck cloths or scarfs were of fine linen or figured stuff, or embroidered, the ends hanging loosely. Small clothes were in fashion, and only reached a little below the knees, where they were ornamented with silver buckles of liberal size. The legs were covered with gray stockings, and the feet with shoes, ornamented with straps and silver buckles. Boots were sometimes worn having broad white tops, and gloves were also in fashion, on great occasions, and mittens in winter. A gentleman with his cocked hat and white bush wig, chocolate coat, buff vest and small clothes, brown stockings and black shoes, ruffles, buckles and buttons, presented an imposing figure.

and he was a man who would probably demean himself with dignity and intelligence. Rich men dressed very expensively. They had a scarlet coat, wadded shirts, full sleeves, cuffs, reaching to the elbows, wristbands, fringed with lace, embroidered bands, tassels, gold buttons, vests fringed with lace, and small clothes with puffs, points, buckles, and a sword hanging by the side. The visiting dress of the women was more costly, complicated and fancy than their husbands and brothers were. Their coiffures were so high as to bring their faces almost into the middle of their bodies. They wore black silk or satin bonnets, and their gowns were extremely long waisted, with tight sleeves, which were oftentimes very short with an immense frill at the elbow. They had spreading hoops and long trails, high heeled shoes, and dressed in their brocades, flounces and embroidered aprons. They were prepared for any social function. Their dress on the Sabbath was simple, secure and modest. A cheap straw hat, with only one bow on the outside, and no ornament inside, topped off the head. A calico dress of sober colors, high up in the neck, with a simple white muslin collar, just peeping around the top, a neat little shawl, and a stout pair of shoes, and they were dressed ready for church.

HABITS AND DAILY ROUTINE.

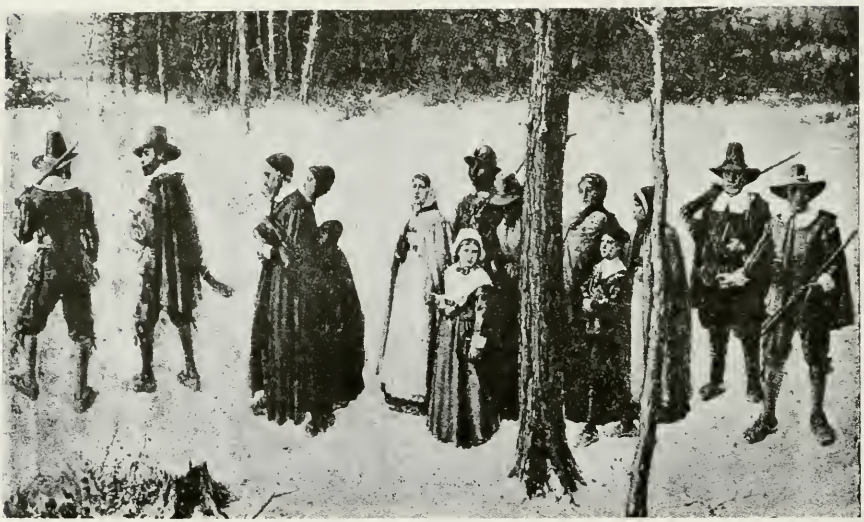
To understand the habits and daily routine of the people, it may be well to follow a family of moderate circumstances throughout their duties on a Saturday and Sunday. The father is a strong, able-bodied farmer of forty-six, and his wife seven years his junior. Their first child is a son of eighteen, and the next a daughter of sixteen. Then there are three boys, fourteen, eleven and eight, and the youngest child is a daughter of six. Of hired men they had none. Extra help came from what they called "change work." Before daylight Saturday, the entire family was awake and about their morning oblations. The father awoke first, lighted the fire under the kettle, in which the water for the porridge was to boil. Then he called the boys and family, the mother and eldest daughter, followed shortly afterwards by the youngest of the family. A wooden wash basin in the sink served each in turn, and one roller towel sufficed for wiping all the faces. With all the sturdiness of their nature they set about their

duties. The dress of each was suited to their work. The father wore an old cocked hat, or a thick cotton cap, no cravat, but a low shirt collar, a short frock of strongest warp, a pair of old leather breeches, and leggins which were tucked in above the knees, and tied over the shoes with a string, round the middle of the foot. The boys had cotton caps, or the remnants of old felt hats, short jackets of the current fabrics, leather breeches and leggins. Just as the sun rose over the horizon, the father and his three sons were in the cow yard milking. Then the youngest boy drove the cows to pasture, across to Dorchester Neck, replaced the bars, and hastened back to his next duties. The boys had received their allowance of buttermilk, and the morning milk was strained off for the cream, or heated to begin a cheese. Returning to the house all joined in the reading of the Scriptures, after which they had breakfast, which, in winter, was by candle light, and in summer, by dawn. The father asked divine blessing, and then all ate heartily of the pea porridge, dealt out in small wooden bowls, and from a small central dish some salted shad and smoked alewives, or perhaps some fresh eels, caught from the bay the evening before. Brown bread and beer were served, and sometimes the children were regaled with samp and milk. After breakfast the father returned thanks. Father and the sons then returned to the fields for work, the hour being 6 o'clock. With their tools they took the family gun, more to be ready for game than for protection. By 8.30 the laborers were ready for lunch, which consisted of smoked shad, bread and cheese eaten from the basket in which they brought it, and cider. During the forenoon they did much work and were glad of a respite when they heard the dinner horn at 11.45. Just at noon they sat down to the dinner table, a blessing was craved and they began with the Indian pudding which they relished with a little molasses. Next a piece of broiled salt pork, or black broth, fried eggs, brown bread, cabbage and cider. The dinner was styled "boiled victuals," and the plates "wooden trenchers." Until one o'clock the laborers were allowed to noon, and were free to sleep or play. Then they returned to the field, and perhaps found that a fox had killed a sheep. The father took the gun, and started in pursuit, leaving instructions if the boys saw the fox to whistle as loud as they could. At 3 o'clock there was a drink of beer, for all, the only pauses in the afternoon's work which ended at five.

Then the youngest drove home the cows and the milking finished at six. The hogs and sheep were put in their enclosures and the faithful dog left to watch them for the night. Everything well housed up, supper was ready. The father took a slice of cold broiled pork, the usual brown bread and beer; while the boys had milk porridge or hasty pudding. In season they had musk melons, and on occasions, cherry wine. Sometimes they had boiled Indian corn, mixed with kidney beans. Into bean and pea porridge they put a slice of salted venison. They also delighted in succotash. The meat of the shagbark was dried and pounded and put into the porridge to thicken it. Baked pumpkins were common. The extra dish for company was a cake made of strawberries and parched corn. Supper, like the other meals, was preceded by asking a blessing and by offering thanks. At 7 o'clock a neighbor called, a mug of cider was drunk by way of entertainment, and at 7.30 the neighbor had gone, and the family were ready for evening prayers. In the morning the Old Testament was read and in the evening the New. Eight o'clock and all had retired, excepting the youngest boy who had been given permission to stay up an hour later. Mother and daughters had likewise their routine. The house consisted of two corner rooms, below, and a kitchen and two lofts, used as attics for sleeping rooms. These rooms were but little care, and the beds could be made in a short time. After that breakfast was cooked and set with wooden plates, peweter spoons, two knives and forks and the good things eaten, the women washed the dishes, and one of the daughters prepared the men's lunch. Then the cheese was made with great care. Saturday was baking day and the three females were kept particularly busy. The oven had its opening on the outside of the house, behind the chimney, and was double the size of modern ones. One daughter brought wood to heat the oven, another got Indian meal and rye, and a third brought in a pail of water. There were beans to be picked and pork to be cut and dough to be kneaded. The baking for seven days required three hours' steady work. In the afternoon, the house being nice and tidy, the mother did some weaving, the elder daughter a little mending, and the child stole away to play with her pet lamb. A female neighbor called to invite her friends to a "quilting" and the anticipation of the event made the young folks happy. When the brothers returned for supper the quilting was announced.

With the setting of the sun the Sabbath was begun. All gathered about the domestic altar and the pious father read the Scriptures and offered prayer.

The hour for rising was late, and nothing like hurry was known. After the milking and the chores there was breakfast at which there was usually a surprise with a fresh baked apple pie. Each of the young folks took a slice in hand and immediately proceeded to business. After breakfast there was



Early Settlers Going to Church

morning worship. The father took down the Bible and read. With all standing, the father offered a prayer thanking the Giver of every good, for his bounties, confessed his sins with penitence and humility and asked for pardon through a Divine Redeemer. He took care to thank God for the religious freedom enjoyed in America. During the hour that then elapsed before the start for meeting the children committed to memory a few verses of the Bible, or a hymn, or a page of the Catechism, and the mother taught the daughter some Christian history. The hour having arrived, the start was made for the meeting house and no matter what the distance to that place may have been, there was no excuse for non-attendance.

God's command and the penalties of the Statute law decided this without equivocation. If the weather was fair, the children walked, each dressed in full Sunday attire, and feeling it of paramount importance, not to tear or soil their clothes. The father mounted a horse and took his wife upon a pillory behind him. If it rained the oxen were hitched to a cart and seated therein they made their way to meeting. Services began at 11 and were a glass and a half long, ending at 12.30. A half hour intermission was spent about the meeting house where friends met and talked of what had occurred since the last Sabbath. The young folks, doubtless, did not always talk religion.

The afternoon services were from 1 to 2.30 and an hour later the family reached home. All partook of the meal then, which was really dinner and supper, and from the oven was taken the pot of beans, Indian pudding, all perfectly done, having been in prison twenty-four hours. After grace the pudding was first served. That was so nice that two slices were necessary to satisfy. Then there was a piece of pie. After Sunday clothes were removed, the mother assembled her children about her, each seated on his block, and heard them recite the catechism, and then endeavored to impress their minds with the sermon of the day. The religious exercises of the Sabbath were concluded with the reading of the Scriptures and family prayer. Father and son then went to the barn and the milking was soon finished. With the setting of the sun the Sabbath was over.

The wood for the next day's washing was carried in, the great kettle filled with water, and everything ready for an early start. In the evening the eldest son slipped out, clad in his evening dress, and at 7 o'clock "dropped in" accidentally, at neighbor A's house, whose blooming daughter of 17 he enjoyed watching. The visit was short and he then returned home. At home the children had been led in singing the good old psalm tunes, and at 8.30 the candle was out and the day of rest and worship had ended to the farmer's family. In those days the singing school was the favorite social function and all delighted to participate.

Our fathers had strong common sense and while they were devoted to a Puritan faith, and an exclusive church, they did not lose their humanity, but the very necessities of their condition brought them to the most practical results and to the soundest philosophy of life.

THE FAIRBANKS HOUSE IN DEDHAM.

The Fairbanks family ranks among the very oldest in the Puritan Colony of Massachhusetts Bay, for as early as 1633, we find two of the name on the records—Richard Fairbanke and his wife Elizabeth, came over that year and it is generally believed that they came on the good ship "Griffin," the vessel which brought over the renowned preacher, Rev. John Cotton, to these shores. Savage, the

The Fairbanks House, Built in 1633, Dedham

historian, tells us that "Richard and Elizabeth Fairebanke signed 'ye covenant on the 8th month 1633,' on the same day with Elder Leverett and his wife, Governor Brewster, and Edward Hutchinson."

Richard Fairebanke at once took an active part in the affairs of the infant colony. He joined the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company, where he rose to considerable prominence and has the honor of being the first postmaster of Boston. He was appointed in 1639, by the Council in answer to the petition of many of the citizens for a more systematic distribution of the mails. Like all the

public papers of those days there is a quaintness in the wording of the order appointing him as postmaster that is rather attractive. It reads as follows: "For preventing the miscarriage of letters, it is ordered that notice be given Richard Fairebanke, that his house in Boston is the place appointed for all letters which are brought beyond the seas, or are to be sent thither, are to be brought unto, and he is to take care that they be delivered and sent according to their direction, and he is allowed for every letter, a penny, and must answer all miscarriages through his own neglect, in this kind, provided that no man shall be compelled to bring his letters there except he please."

It is evident that Mr. Fairebanke made a very acceptable Postmaster as he retained the office until his death in 1667, a period of 28 years.

He left no descendants in the male line, and only one daughter, Constance, who married Samuel Mattlock of Boston. Richard Fairebanke's house was on Washington Street, on the site now occupied by the Boston Globe building.

The ancestor of the Dedham branch of the Fairbanks' family was Jonathan Fayerbanke, a native of the County of Yorkshire, England. It is thought that he came on the same ship as Richard and that they were brothers, but research has failed to show the exact date of his arrival or his relationship to Richard. "With Jonathan Fayerbank, came his wife, Grace and six children. It is said that he brought across the seas with him the frame of a house, of good old English oak which he stored in Boston, for three years, until he had decided where he would locate with his family. A survey of the various sections around Boston led him to choose Dedham or "Contentment" as it was then called, which was established on the 10th of the 7th month 1636, on a petition of twelve persons to the General Court. The Dedham Covenant was drawn up and signed by the petitioners and others, and after the grant by the General Court, persons were admitted from time to time. This Covenant was in the nature of a mutual compact concerning the future management of the affairs of the town, and if lived up to meant a peaceful, law-abiding community governed by the Golden Rule, and like all the documents issued by those Puritan settlers of Massachusetts, was strongly religious in tone. The Fairbanks' Family Histo-

rian says that Jonathan Fayerbanke "had a good education for the times, and was a man of strong common sense, sound judgment and good executive ability. He was a man of strong individuality and with a dogged tenacity of purpose, which characteristics seem to have been inherited by many of his descendants," many of whom have "raised themselves to high rank in their respective callings" and it may be claimed that the average position which the family has always occupied mark it "as a family second to none in any respect on this side of the Atlantic."

Jonathan Fayerbanke was "evidently possessed of ample means for those days, or he would not have been able to have taken care of so large a family until he secured his permanent home. He received various grants of land in Dedham at different times including the lot on which the Fairbanks House now stands. Before 1637 there had been granted him a twelve acre lot, four acres of which were "swampe" land; and in that year he received another allotment of four acres more. In those early days lands were granted to individuals in twelve and eight acre lots.

His first house, the older portion of the present "Fairbanks House" was built in 1636 on the upland in his grant for a house lot. In 1648 an addition was built, and "a few years later a larger addition was made, which was called the new house.. supposed to be built for the occupation of his oldest son John and his family. On this spot this historic house has stood for nearly three centuries, and is today without doubt the oldest frame house in the United States.

"Winter and summer, frost and heat, have done much to undermine its symmetry, and its leaning walls and sloping floors are only held in place by its massive oak. Down to 1899 it was handed down through eight generations with never a mortgage incumbrance upon it. As we view this old house we obtain a clear idea of the actual appearance of the houses of our forefathers. What changes have been made are more in the nature of repairs and have served to keep the old house from falling to pieces. The solid and simple effect is still retained. Its old gray walls tinted by the brush of Father Time with the natural stain of the rain-drops; the moss-grown shingles on the roof in varying shades of sage and mauve; the brightness of the meadow carpet, stretching away to the south, dotted with the yel-

low white of the 'Marguerite,' and the buttercup; the purple shadows on the tree trunks, and on weather-beaten clapboards, make a composition of form and color which is hard to equal." It is a picture which is appreciated by art students, and it is constantly being painted and sketched, in the summer time. The most picturesque view of the house is as you approach it from the railroad station, where it is seen nestling among the tall and stately trees. It occupies one of the best corner lots in the town, the lot being about one acre in extent. The large farm long since was divided among different branches of the family.

"The house is in three sections, a main part and two wings, the entire length being seventy-five feet. The middle part has a pitch roof extending down over the lean-to at the back within a few feet of the ground. Both wings are gambrel roofed. Long years ago, an Indian arrow projected from the roof, having been there beyond the memory of any of the family. It is a family tradition that the arrow was shot in during the Indian raids in the trying days of the past. As we stand before the house we count eight windows of which no two are alike in size, and they are irregularly placed as well. The boarding of the house is peculiar, ranging from a narrow clapboard four inches across. In front of the door is the old well with a well-sweep."

As we enter the house we are in a small entry eight feet in depth, from which five doors open, the front outside door, those opening into the rooms on either side, a door at the foot of the stairway to the floor above, and another at the head of the stairs to the cellar. Throughout the house the doorways are so low that a person of medium height can scarcely pass through without bending the head. On the left of the entry is the kitchen, which looks older than any room in the house. It is sixteen feet square and lighted by two long narrow windows on the front. Overhead all the beams and rafters show, as this room has never been plastered. The walls are made of over-lapped boards with rounded edges. The outside walls were finished the same way before the clapboards were put on. All the woodwork in the kitchen has turned to a deep brown, chocolate brown, the results of age and the smoke from the wood fires of two centuries. The brick oven still remains but has outlived its usefulness. The chimney at the bot-

tom measures eight by ten feet. So this old kitchen stands in 1916, the same as in 1636. Across the entry from the kitchen is the parlor, about two-thirds the size of the kitchen. It is one of the lowest in the house, measuring in the highest part not over six feet in height, and near the front wall, which has sunk so much it is several inches less.

The Eastern addition built for John Fairbanks and his bride is a cosy tenement with two lower and one upper room, with fireplaces in each of the lower rooms. In the parlor over the fireplace, still hangs a wooden crane five feet long. Long years ago, before the discovery of petroleum, the family used to hang grease lamps, called "widders" or "Old Bettsy" on this crane, to light up the room during the long winter evenings.

The room over the parlor in the main house has been the family chamber through all the generations that have lived here. Many of the best relics have been sold or given away but in the dark kitchen chamber are many "old timers," such as foot warmers and spinning wheels, candle moulds,

Dutch ovens and other articles of domestic use. There is a pannier such as our grandsires slung along the old mare's side when going to the mill or to the store or post office: an ox saddle, a very great curiosity, and rarer still some of the diamond shaped panes of glass, brought from England which were set in strips of lead, as putty was not in use in those times.

Henry Irving Fairbanks

Throughout the 280 years which have passed over it, the house has never been deeded. A Fairbanks built it and his descendants have always owned and occupied it, up to 1902, when a bolt of lightning struck the house and killed the dog in the room where Miss Fairbanks was lying. As she was alone and had a strong dread of the place on account of the stroke of lightning, she removed to Boston the following winter. The house was then let and for the first time in its history it was occupied by strangers. A year later Miss Rebecca Fairbanks returned to the house and remained until the estate was purchased by the Fair-

banks Family in America, Inc. The old house proves a great attraction to visitors, and annual reunions of the Fairbanks Family are held there. It is a "home-coming" of the clans, and its meetings are always of great interest and largely attended.

Mr. Henry Irving Fairbanks, President of the Fairbanks Family in America, and his wife live in the bungalow near by and are custodians of the property.

The Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company

The men who settled Massachusetts under John Winthrop were not adventurers or fighting men, but they were wise and courageous, and made preparations for defence and also for direct hostilities when occasion required. Their Charter authorized the Governor and Company "from tyme to tyme, and at all tymes, hereafter, for the special defence and safety, to incounter, repulse, repell and resist by force of arms, as well by sea as by land, and by all fitting waies, and means, whatsoever, all such person or persons, as shall, at any tyme hereafter, attempt, or enterprise the destruction, invasion, detriment, or annoyance to the said plantation, or inhabitants."

The John Winthrop Colony brought over quite a stock of ordnance, firearms, powder, munitions and equipments, for a number of men. Train bands were organized almost immediately upon their arrival, and these were drilled by veteran officers, who were paid for their services. As early as 1631, an order was issued for the monthly training of these bands. In 1636 there were ten of them, officered by leading men of the Colony, many of whom had belonged to the Honorable Artillery Company of London. The recollection of that organization, doubtless, prompted twenty-four of the Massachusetts officers in 1638, to form an Artillery Company in New England which would serve as a Military School, in which the officers of the scattered town companies could acquire uniformity of tactics and drill. They petitioned Governor Winthrop for a charter of incorporation, and the Military Company of Massachusetts as the Artillery Company was first called, was organized in Boston on the first Monday in June, 1638. The officers elected on that day, according to the second article in the Charter, were all charter members. There was a captain, lieutenant, ensign, two sergeants, clerk and drummer. The Book of Discipline of that day says, "The Captain was expected to be a good posture man himself, that when he sees any of his soldiers handle their arms in an indecent and slovenly manner, he

may the better reprove them for the same. His place of marching with his company is some six feet before the first division of musketers." The position of the other officers is also clearly defined. The drummer, at that time, Arthur Perry, was quite an important personage, in the town as well

An Artilleryman of the Olden Time

as in the company. There were no newspapers, at that time. The first printing press was not brought over from England and set up in Cambridge, until 1639, so the drum beat summoned the faithful to Church, and to the weekly lectures, besides summoning the military to their colors for drill and parade. When the Artillery Company paraded, the Color was displayed early in the morning from the vicinity of the market, after which the Drummer, accompanied by a Sergeant, beat "to the colors" along the water side to Winni-

simmet Ferry, and then back along what is now Hanover Street, to Tremont Street, which was then a cart path along the edge of the Common. Captain Robert Keayne lived on State Street opposite the First Church, now the present Merchants Bank Building. As founder and first Captain of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company, Mr. Keayne deserves more than a mere mention of his name. He was born at Windsor, England, in 1595, and joined the Honorable Artillery Company of London in 1623. He came to America in 1635, in the ship "Defence" and commenced business as a tailor on the southeast corner of State and Washington Streets. He had some capital, and this with his industry and energy soon made him one of the leading Colonists. He was a firm friend and supporter of Governor Winthrop. He bought over 300 acres of land in what is now Revere. Because he accumulated money, it was considered an offence by some of his townsmen and he was brought to Court for trial. The Court said among many other things, "Inasmuch as he was already wealthy and had but one child, and inasmuch as he came over for conscience sake, he shall not strive to make money." The Church Elders decided to compromise the matter by his paying "Eighty pounds, Captain Keayne having promised with tears not to strive to make money." The incident shows the prevailing idea in the good Old Colony times, regarding the amassing of great wealth. The "Trusts" of today would have fared hardly at the hands of these rigid Puritans. Captain Keayne was highly respected by his fellow townsmen. He gave liberally to the town, the Church and the schools. He gave £250 to Harvard College, and a like sum for a Town Library and for introducing fresh water into his neighborhood. Every institution designed for the benefit of the people, received liberal donations from him. In his will he left £300 for a market place and building which should have rooms for the Townsmen, the Courts, a Library and an Armory. He died in his own house March 23, 1655. It is thought that he was buried in King's Chapel Burying Ground.

In the Bi-Centennial sermon before the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company, Rev. Dr. Samuel K. Lothrop, speaks of Captain Keayne: "as belonging to the great middling class of New England, who, possessing neither extraordinary wealth, nor extraordinary talent, yet have been eminent for their public usefulness, for their high moral

worth as men and for their faithful services as citizens."

Among the prominent men belonging to the Artillery Company was Humphrey Atherton, who came to America in 1635 and signed the covenant of the Dorchester Church. He showed a great taste for military affairs and occupied a leading position in the militia of the Province. He was frequently sent to treat with the Indians. He was a man of great strength and personal courage. He had several children and gave them peculiar names, which was characteristic of the times. They were Jonathan, Rest, Increase, Thankful, Hope, Consider, Watching and Patience. He was killed by a fall from his horse September 17, 1661. He was buried in the North Dorchester Burying Ground at Upham's Corner, where his epitaph may still be read:

"Here lies our Captain and Suffolk, was withal
A worthy magistrate was he, and Major General
Two troops of horse with him here came, such worth his love did crave,
Ten companies of foot also mourning, marched to his grave,
Let all who read be sure to keep the truth as he has done
With Christ he now is crowned, his name was Humphrey Atherton."

Robert Turner was another officer of the Artillery Company. He was an innholder and kept the "Blue Anchor Tavern on the site of the Boston Globe building. The rooms in the Tavern were designated as the "Cross Keys," "Green Dragon," "The Anchor and Castle Chamber," and the "Rose and Sun Low Room." He furnished lodgings and refreshments for the Selectmen, prominent officials and the Clergy when they met in Convention.

Robert Bridges was another character who figured prominently in the early history of the company. He was one of a committee of five to draft bills for "positive laws against lying, Sabbath breaking, profanity, drunkenness and kindred vices."

John Hull was captain in 1671 and was a silversmith. He made a contract with the Province for coining silver money, the first coinage being in 1652. He was allowed to take as his pay fifteen pence out of every twenty shillings. He amassed a large fortune out of this contract. The General Court desired to be released from it, but Captain Hull declined to do so. His daughter married Samuel Sewall, afterwards Chief Justice of the Province. There is a tradition that

when dressed for the wedding and in the presence of the guests, her father placed her in his large scales, and piled the silver shillings on the other side until the scales balanced, and that was her wedding dowry.

The Civil War in England began in 1642 between Charles the First and Parliament. It was in 1633 that Oliver Cromwell came to the front as Leader of the "Independents" and became their soul and inspiration. Several of the Boston Artillery Company espoused the cause represented by Cromwell and served under him on the battlefield. We record their names and some of the descendants are still among us. The roll of names is as follows: Col. George Cooke, Col. John Leverett, Col. Stephen Winthrop, Wm. Rainsburrow, Lieut. Col. Israel Stoughton, Major Nehemiah Bourne, Major Benj. Keayne, Major Samuel Shepard, Surgeon Francis Lyall, Captain William Hudson, Capt. Thos. Marshall, Ensign Thomas Tucker. We have given only a few names of the many prominent citizens who served honorably in this old Artillery Company. From 1637 to 1737 there were 952 names, including the Charter Members, borne upon the rolls.

The position of those persons in the social, civil and military life of the Colony and Province indicate the respect which the people entertained for the company as well as the ability, prominence and influence of its members. They were the first in organizing churches and supporting them; they were the constant friends of public schools; they were prominent in framing and administering the laws of the Colony; they were foremost in the introduction of manufactures and in the extension of the trade of Boston; many of them were public benefactors, devoting somewhat of their wealth to religion, education and charity. They trod every battlefield of New England in the first century of the company's existence.

Their loyalty to this country stands forth fearless and prominent. They planned, spoke and acted to hasten the birth of the Independency of the Colonies and the establishment of the Republic of the United States. And what was true of the character, benevolence and devotion of the members of the company to the best interests of the community, state and nation during the first one hundred years of its existence, has been true all the subsequent years of its history down to the present date.

A Modern Artilleryman
The Late Moses E. Chandler, for Many Years an Active Member of the A. & H. A. Company

Statue John Harvard

Cotton Mather and the Days of Witchcraft in New England

The name of Mather figures very prominently among the clergy in the early days of Boston. Rev. Increase Mather was pastor of the New North Church. Until the great fire of 1677, when his residence was destroyed, he lived in North Square. He then built a house on the corner of Hanover and Bennett Street, where he lived until his death, and here his celebrated son, Cotton Mather, spent many of his boyhood days. For over 100 years this house was virtually the parsonage, for here, after the days of the Mathers, lived the distinguished Andrew Eliot, and here his equally celebrated son, John, for 50 years in the 17th century. They were pastors in succession of the New North Church from 1742 to 1813. On the corner of Hanover and North Bennett Streets may be seen the following inscription, on a tablet:

> Rev. Increase Mather, Minister of the Second Church 1669-1673, removed to a house on this site after the Great Fire of 1676. It was later the home of Andrew and John Eliot, Father and Son, Ministers of the New North Church, 1742-1813.

A recent writer in his "Glimpses of Old Boston," published in the Boston Post, says: "This house was the first in Boston to be visited by the garrulous John Dunton, a London bookseller, whose account of his residence here affords a very vivid picture of the Boston of the 17th century. 'I made my first visit,' says Dunton, 'to that revered and learned divine, Rev. Increase Mather; he is the present rector of Harvard College; he is deservedly called the metropolitan clergyman of the kingdom. And the next to him in fame (whom I likewise visited at the same time) is his son, Mr. Cotton Mather, an excellent preacher, a great writer; he has very lately finished the Church History of New England, which I am going to print. "Cotton Mather, the son of Rev.

Increase Mather, was born in Boston, February 12, 1663. He is said to have been a most precocious student, entering Harvard College at the early age of thirteen. He tells us in his own words, that at the age of fourteen he had read Terence, Ovid, Virgil, and other Latin poets, and was so familiar with

that dead language, that he took notes in Latin of the sermon. He read the New Testament in Greek and he began to study Hebrew, which he mastered before his fourteenth birthday. He taught school for several years after he graduated from Harvard. Later he was ordained to the ministry and he became a colleague of his father, who was then pastor of the Old North Church of Boston, where he remained as colleague and pastor until his death in 1728. He was a most prolific

writer, being the author of nearly four hundred volumes, chiefly of a religious nature, the best known of which is his "Magnolia." But he stands out most prominently among the men of his time as a firm believer in

WITCHCRAFT

and as the principal leader and prosecutor in the trials of the so-called "Witches." The belief in "Witches" and "Witchcraft" was universal in those days. For three hundred years the Church of Rome sanctioned the most extreme punishment of persons whom they found guilty of witchcraft. Thousands of suspected persons were burned alive, drowned or hanged. In Germany it was estmated that in the sixteenth century, more than one hundred thousand persons accused and convicted of this sorcery, perished in the flames. The most enlightened men of England, even in the days of the Commonwealth, held the belief. The ministers entered earnestly into the work of stamping out this delusion, and, because of their powerful social influence, they did more to foster the wild excitement and produce the distressing results of what is known in history as

"SALEM WITCHCRAFT"

than all others. Hubbard, the Puritan Historian, believed that "America was originally peopled with a crew of witches transported thither by the devil." Cotton Mather seems to have fully shared this belief as shown in his methods and that of his associates in dealing with witches in the case of the poor old Irish woman who was hanged as a witch. The circumstances are as follows: In 1688, a wayward daughter of John Goodwin, about thirteen years of age, accused a servant girl of stealing some of the family linen. The servant's mother, a wild Irish woman and a Roman Catholic, vehemently rebuked the accuser as a false witness. The young girl in revenge, pretended to be bewitched by the Irish woman. Some others of the family followed her example. They would alternately become deaf, dumb and blind, bark like dogs, purr like cats, but none of them lost their appetites or sleep. Cotton Mather took the cases in hand and hastened to the Goodwin home, to allay the witchery by prayer. Wonderful were the alleged

facts of his supplications. The devil was controlled by them for a time. Four other ministers of Boston, and one of Salem, and all as superstitious and credulous as Mather, joined him, and they spent a whole day in fasting and prayer in the house of the "afflicted," the result of which was the "delivery" of one of the family from the power of the "witch."

This was sufficient proof for the minds of the ministers, that there must be a witch in the case, and these deluded clergymen persecuted the ignorant Irish woman as such. She was bewildered before the court, and spoke sometimes in her native Irish language, which nobody could understand, and which her accusers and judges construed into involuntary confession. Mather and his associates had the satisfaction of seeing this poor old Irish woman hanged as a witch "for the glory of God." An epidemic broke out in Salem, and when the physicians found themselves unable to control it, they ascribed the malady to the witches. People believed that Satan and his evil spirits had been permitted to overshadow the land with a terrible visitation. The terror in the people's mind caused them to forthwith accuse some individual. The afflicted and the accused became so numerous, that no person was safe from suspicion, and its consequences. Those who were active in the persecution, themselves became objects of suspicion. A constable, who had arrested many and refused to arrest any more, was accused, condemned and hanged." Sir William Phipps, the Governor, and near relations of the Mathers, and learned men who had suffered the delusion to go on, in their turn became objects of suspicion. The Governor's wife, one of the best and purest of women, was accused of being a witch. Some prominent people were compelled to fly to save their lives, and near relatives of the Mathers were imprisoned. As might have been expected, malice and revenge made use of this terrible weapon to accuse the innocent, and when the statements of the accused would move the Court in their favor, the accuser would declare that he saw the devil standing beside the victim and whispering words in his ear, and, incredible as it may appear, the judges on the bench would believe the statement. It was not until the magistrates in Church and State found themselves in danger that they remembered the Golden Rule and saw the wickedness of their conduct and called a halt in the

persecution. "A citizen of Andover, who was accused, was wiser and bolder than others had been, and immediately caused the arrest of his accuser on a charge of defamation of character, laying his damages at five thousand dollars. The public mind was in sympathy with this action, its effect was wonderful, and the atmosphere began to clear." It compelled the clergy to take action. At a convention held in June, 1693, they made the devil a convenient scapegoat for the sins and follies of magistrates, clergy and people by stating that "the devil might assume the shape of a good man and so deceive the afflicted." Governor Phipps, after his wife was accused, at once gave orders for the release of all persons under arrest for witchcraft. "A day of general fast and supplication was held 'that God would pardon all the errors of his servants and people in a late tragedy raised among us by Satan and his servants.' Then followed many solemn denials by parties who had accused others, of the statements they had made.

Judge Sewall, who had presided at many trials at Salem, stood up in his place in church on that Fast Day, and implored the prayers of the people "that the errors which he had committed might not be visited by the judgments of an avenging God on his country, his family, or himself." During the six months that this delusion was at its greatest height, nineteen persons were hanged, one killed by being pressed to death, fifty-five tortured and frightened to a confession of guilt and one hundred and fifty were imprisoned.

During all this time there was no such thing as mutual confidence. While other leading men saw the error of their ways and made open confession of them, and abandoned the belief, Cotton Mather, made no confession or retraction. He persisted in the belief and continued to write in its defense. As one historian says: "Mather's account of the delusion is unprofitable reading. It deals in the absurd fancies of a man deluded by bigotry, superstition and childish credulity." Robert Calef, a merchant, wrote many letters, which were published, in which he ridiculed the views of Mather and there was a long controversy between them. They aroused the anger of Mather, who used very strong language and prosecuted Calef for slander. Mather's letters were published in book form. Cotton Mather's kinsman, at that time president of Harvard College, to show his disapproval, caused several copies of the book to be publicly

burned on the College grounds. It was a dark and unpleasant chapter in the history of the New England colony. It made a lasting and unfavorable impression not only on the civilized world but upon the minds of their nearest neighbors, the savage Indians, who turned from a religion which inflicted such cruelties upon one's own countrymen. It was of service to the Jesuits, whose missionaries were laboring among them and who presented religion in a milder and more beneficent form. The Indians, therefore, naturally allied themselves to the French in the wars which followed, which resulted in great loss and distress to the colonies.

The house shown in the cut was probably built by Cotton Mather and was his home for thirty years. He bought the site in 1688 and in 1718 sold the property to Mr. Turrell. In 1822 the property came into possession of John Howard, whose daughter sold it to John Miller. It remained practically as it was built until 1846, when the front wall was taken down and the building extended to the street, and the site is No. 288 Hanover street. It was a comfortable looking dwelling and located in what was then, a quiet and popular neighborhood.

Cotton Mather's Home

The Puritan Blue Laws

In this Twentieth Century all sorts of isms seem to drift naturally to Boston. Sometimes they find a welcome and in course of time gain many adherents, for in these days there is no arm raised to crush them or banish them to the wilderness. They may have to run the gauntlet of criticism or ridicule from the press, but as long as they keep within the pale of the law, no harsher measures are used. This toleration is in marked contrast to the methods which prevailed in this Puritan town of Boston from 1630 to 1700. The Puritan of those days regarded himself as his" brother's keeper," to save him from error. "In his opinion he was God's chosen High Priest." The laws of that day on the Statute Books, and the records of Court proceedings show his stern, unflinching character.

Having invited the persecuted of all lands to come to them, many "unsettled persons," and of unrestrained opinions, came to Massachusetts to disseminate their peculiar views. The Puritan then became alarmed. He saw clearly in that dissemination of differing opinions the disorganization of his church. His ideas on Church and Civil Government were founded on deep convictions, and it must be remembered that he was not broadly educated. He felt that the country which he had conquered with so much toil and peril, was his own, and that he had "as good a right to regulate its internal affairs according to his own notions, and exclude all obnoxious persons, as had a householder the affairs of his family, and the avoidance of an unwelcome visitor." To guard his church and protect society and his domain, the Puritan went to the extreme in the passage of fiery penal laws, and he was implacable in their execution. There were no dead letters on his Statute Book. A law once established must be rigidly enforced. This iron rule of bigotry was condemned by not a few good citizens in those days, but it was many years before the rigor of those terrible laws was relaxed. The leading men, Governors and Ministers, were very strong

and extreme in their views. "God forbid," says Governor Dudley in his old age, "our love for the truth should be grown so cold that we should tolerate errors."

"Better tolerate hypocrites and tares, than thorns and briers," said the well beloved parson, Rev. John Cotton. "To say that a man ought to have liberty of conscience is impious ignorance," said Parson Ward of Ipswich. "Religion admits of no eccentric notions," said Parson Norton, the colleague of Ward, biographer of Cotton, and a chief persecutor of the Quakers.

They forbade all gaming for amusement or gain, and would not allow cards or dice to be introduced into the Colony.

They fined families where young women did not spin as much flax or wool daily as the Selectmen required of them.

They would not allow a Jesuit or Roman Catholic priest to live in the Colony.

They forbade all persons to run, or even walk, except reverently to and from church on Sunday.

They doomed a burglar because he had committed his crime on that sacred day to have one of his ears cut off.

They commanded John Wedgewood to be put in the stocks for being in the company of drunkards.

Thomas Petit for suspicion of slander, idleness and stubbornness, to be severely whipped.

Captain Lovell was ordered "to take heed of light carriage."

Josias Plaistow for stealing four baskets of corn from the Indians was ordered to return to them eight baskets of corn, to be fined four pounds, and thereafter to be called by the name of "Josias" and not Mr. Plaistow as formerly.

The Grand Jurors were directed to admonish those who wore apparel too costly for their income, and if they did not heed the warning, to fine them.

In 1630. Samuel Maverick was fined for entertaining strangers.

In 1630. A man was whipped for shooting a fowl on Sunday.

In 1631. Philip Ratcliff had his ears cut off for impiety.

In 1632. Several men and women were whipped for petty crimes.

In 1635. Roger Williams was banished for what was called heresy.

In 1636. Swearing and pow-wowing was punishable by a fine of ten shillings.

In 1637. Rev. Mr. Wheelwright was banished for heresy.

In 1638. Captain Underhill was banished for defamation.

In 1638. Several Quakers were hanged for their profession.

In 1639. Stocks were built to punish criminals.

In 1640. Hugh Bewett was banished because he thought he did not sin.

In 1650. The wearing of great boots and silver lace was strictly prohibited.

In 1651. Obadiah Holmes was whipped for being a Baptist.

In 1656. Severe laws passed to punish Quakers.

In 1658. Three men whipped and had their ears cut off because they were Quakers.

In 1660. The observance of Christmas was strictly prohibited.

In 1667. Many persons whipped for being Baptists.

In 1677. Margaret Brewster, a Quakeress, was tied to the tail of a cart and whipped.

In 1692. Giles Corey pressed to death for witchcraft.

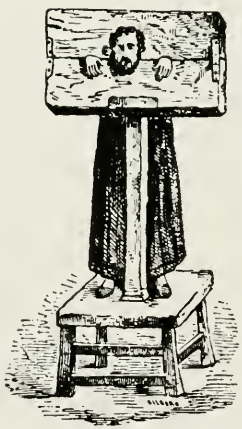
In 1698. Kissing was an offence, to be punished by fine (if parties could be caught in the act).

We have already mentioned that "kissing" on the streets was forbidden. It was not even allowable in the case of relatives.

We close this gruesome list of offences and penalties with a little story which bears on this point and has been handed down by a well known historian.

"Almost a hundred years after that law forbidding kissing on the street was passed, its penalty was inflicted upon the Commander of a British man-of-war. The vessel arrived in Boston Harbor after a long cruise. As her Commander was going toward his home in that city, he met his wife on the street, hastening to greet him, and in the joy of seeing her, he gave her an affectionate kiss. A stern old Magistrate in a cocked hat and powdered hair in

a queue, who was "learned in the law," seeing the act, caused his immediate arrest. The next morning, after due trial, the Captain was convicted, and the punishment of flogging was administered in a very mild way, but in a public place and causing much merriment. When the victim was about to sail on another cruise, he invited that magistrate and others, whom he understood had approved his punishment, to a complimentary dinner on board of his vessel, as a token of his forgiveness and submission. They gladly accepted the invitation, and when they were all merry with good cheer, and on deck ready to depart, he ordered his boatswain and mate to give the magistrates a flogging. Each officer was armed with a knotted cat-o-ninetails, and they laid on the blows with strong arms and a good will, driving the astonished guests pell mell over the side of the ship into the boat waiting to receive them. The Captain soon weighed anchor and sailed away, and the law was shortly afterwards repealed."



Roger Williams
The Apostle of Religious Toleration

Roger Williams

The Apostle of Religious Toleration

James Russell Lowell, one of our great American critics, after a careful study of the early colonial period, says: "Let me premise, that there are two men, above all others, for whom our respect is heightened by their letters,—the Elder John Winthrop and Roger Williams." Said another historian: "He stands out from the somewhat monotonous Puritan decorum as the mountains of his native Wales stand out from the uniform sweep of the English coast." He was born in the year 1600 in a little country village amid the mountains of Wales. After his graduation from Cambridge, England, he entered the ministry. His tolerant ideas on religion brought down upon his head the displeasure of Archbishop Loud. He could not bow down in submission to the ceremonies of the English Church, as then prescribed by law, and he determined to emigrate to America.

Accompanied by his young and beautiful wife he sailed from Bristol, England, arriving in Boston, February 5, 1631. Soon after his arrival he received a call from the church in Salem, to become the associate pastor. "He accepted the invitation, but the civil authorities interfered to prevent his settlement, giving as their reason that Williams had refused to join the congregation in Boston, declaring as his opinion, that the magistrates might not punish a breach of the Sabbath, nor any other offence that was a breach of the first table." Williams maintained that every national church is of a vicious constitution, and that a majority in such churches are unregenerate.

Notwithstanding the opposition of the Puritan leaders, Williams settled in Salem, but the authorities in Boston started such a storm of persecution against him that his stay there was of short duration. He then removed to the more liberal colony of Plymouth, and became assistant to the pastor, Rev. Ralph Smith. While there, he was on the

most friendly terms with several Indian chiefs, among them the good Canonicus, the Sachem of the powerful Narragansett tribe, and with the young Miantonomoh. By his kindness and fair dealing, he won their love and confidence, which he retained to the very end. He felt and wrote that the Indians were entitled to some compensation for the lands taken from them by the King's patent to the Massachusetts Colony. Said Prof. Diman of Brown University at the dedication of the Roger Williams Monument in Providence: "John Eliot has won the name of the Indian Apostle; but ten years before Eliot preached, Roger Williams had consecrated himself to this missionary work; not sent out by a powerful and wealthy Board and followed with the prayers of thousands, but driven forth in exile and selling his house, even, 'that he might do the natives good.'" The authorities in Boston summoned him to appear before them and answer to charges which had been formulated against him. He answered the summons, and at the trial exhibited a meek and conciliatory spirit, and while he would not retract his opinions, as they were a matter of conscience with him, he was ready to burn the book which had proved so offensive to them. In July, 1635, the authorities found new grievances against him. He became bolder in his opposition to the right of the King to appropriate and grant the land of the Indians without purchase, and the right of the civil power to impose faith and worship. He denied the right of the magistrate to intermeddle, even to restrain a church from heresy and apostasy. Such opinions were regarded as monstrous by the Puritans, and unless Williams would recant and take back what he had said, he must be banished from the Colony as speedily as possible. He maintained with great strength his opinion "that there was an absolute and eternal distinction between the spheres of the Civil Government and the Church." He wrote a long letter to his own congregation in favor of the rigid separation of Church and State." The court found that Mr. Williams deserved to be banished from the Colony for holding such doctrine." The sentence of banishment was passed September 3, 1635, and read as follows: "Whereas Mr. Roger Williams, one of the Elders of the Church of Salem hath broached and divulged divers newe and dangerous opinions against the authority of magistrates, as also with others of defamation both of

the magistrates and churches here, and that before any conviction, and yet maintaineth the same, without any retraction, it is therefore ordered that the said Mr. Williams shall depart out of this jurisdiction within six weeks now next ensuing, which, if he neglects to perform, it shall be lawful for the Governor and two of the magistrates to send him to some place out of their jurisdiction, not to return any more without license from this court."

The friends of Roger Williams were stirred to deepest indignation at this cruel sentence to be executed at such an inclement season of the year. Edward Winslow, ex-Governor of the Plymouth Colony, deeply sympathized with Williams, for he was a kind-hearted, broad-minded Christian man. Twenty leading men of the two colonies determined to go into exile with Williams and share his fate. In deference to the sentiments which had been expressed by the people in favor of Williams, the time of his departure from Massachusetts Bay was deferred until the following spring. Williams, regarding this as a concession, promulgated his doctrine with greater force. He proclaimed himself an Anabaptist, one who denies the validity of infant baptism, a Baptist of today. This was more than the Puritans could stand and the authorities decided to send the "troubler" back to England. Williams refused to appear before the magistrates and Captain Underhill was sent to Salem in a pinnace in pursuit of Williams with orders to arrest him and put him on board of a vessel bound for England. But Williams had been advised of this order. Governor Winthrop had kindly, but secretly advised him, "to steer his course to the Narragansett Bay and the Indians," and when Captain Underhill went to the house to arrest him, he found only his sorrowing wife and two babes. Williams had been gone three days. Lossing, the historian, gives a vivid picture of Williams' departure. He says: "On a cold winter's night, the moon on the wane, and snow on the ground, he had kissed his wife and children, and departed in the gloom to seek a refuge with the dark pagans, who were more tolerant than his pale-faced Christian brethren. He went forth alone with a long staff and a scrip thrown over his shoulders. Wild beasts were in his path. Behind him were the treasures of wife and children. Before him, as radiant and as enticing as the Star in the East, gleamed the brilliant luminary of Chris-

tian ethics which was his pole star and guide." Williams made his way to the house of Massasoit, the venerable Sachem of the Wampanoags, where he was warmly welcomed.

In his old age Roger Williams refers to this experience in his life. "For fourteen weeks he was sorely tost in a bitter season, now knowing what bread or bed did mean. Often in the stormy night he had neither fire or food, nor company; often he wandered without a guide, and had no house but a hollow tree. But he was not without friends. When he came to the cabin of the Chief of Pokanoket, he was welcomed by Massasoit; and "the barbarous heart of Canonicus, the Chief of the Narragansetts, loved him as his son to the last gasp." "The ravens," he relates, with gratitude, "fed me in the wilderness." "And in requital for their hospitality, he was ever, through his long life, their friend and benefactor; the apostle of Christianity to them, without hire, without weariness, and without impatience at their idolatry; the guardian of their rights; the pacificator, when their rude passions were inflamed; and their unflinching advocate and protector, whenever Europeans attempted an invasion of their soil."

Just as the little colony had begun to build and plant, near the present Martin's Cove, a friendly letter came from Governor Winslow, saying that they were within the jurisdiction of the Plymouth Colony, and as he did not wish to offend the Bay, and desired the undisturbed repose of the exiles, he advised Williams and his little party to pass to the other side of the Seekonk river, where they would have a large country before them and beyond the jurisdiction of both colonies on the coast, and this kind and wise advice was heeded by the settlers. They landed at the mouth of the Moshemic river, and here they founded Providence, so-called in commemoration of God's manifest providence to him in his distress and he dedicated it as a shelter for all those distressed for conscience. The new settlement was at the head of Narragansett Bay, a beautiful green slope with a spring of sparkling water near by. Many leading men of the Bay and Plymouth Colonies flocked to Providence with their families. Williams purchased his land of the aged Canonicus. In 1638 others came from the Massachusetts Bay Colony, and from the Chief Miantonomoh they purchased the island of Aquiday,

which was the Indian name for the region and meant "Peacable Isle." "With the way nicely cleared, Williams and his little band of followers then made ready to establish an anomaly in the history of the race—a state that should absolutely ignore any power in the body politic to interfere with the matters that solely concern the individual man and his Maker." Rhode Island, under Williams' leadership, established a purely democratic form of government. The Christian and forgiving spirit of Roger Williams shone out most clearly several years after his banishment. It was at the time of the great uprising of the Pequot tribe of Indians in New England. The tribe was ruled by a famous Sachem and Chief named Sassacus. "He was cool, calculating, treacherous, haughty, fierce and malignant, and was the terror of the neighboring tribes. He ruled over twenty-six sagamores, or inferior princes, and his dominion extended from Narragansett Bay to the Hudson river and over Long Island. His bravery won the unbounded admiration of the warriors, of whom almost two thousand were always ready to follow him wherever he might lead. He saw the English growing in power and influence and he determined to exterminate the intruders. By persuasion and menace he tried to induce the Mohegans and Narragansetts to become his allies. The three tribes united could put four thousand men on the war path at one time. The allies of the Pequots captured a Massachusetts trading vessel on Block Island, killing the captain and plundering the vessel. The authorities in Boston determined to punish the Pequots and awe them into quietude." This expedition of the Bay Colonists, although weak in numbers, and badly conducted, did considerable damage to the property of the Indians, and Sassacus swore vengeance on the pale faces and sent ambassadors to the monarch of the Narragansetts, urging him to join in a war of extermination, declaring as a powerful plea, that the two races could not live together in the same land and that the Indians who would soon be the weaker party would be scattered and destroyed like leaves in autumn." A deliverer of the colonists appeared in Roger Williams. He heard of the proposed alliance and perceived the danger. Unmindful of the cruel wrongs he had suffered at the hands of the Puritan leaders of Boston, he determined to save them if possible. He hastened on a stormy day, in an

open boat, across Narragansett Bay, to the dwelling of Miantonomoh, near the site of Newport, Rhode Island. He was the acting Sachem of the Narragansetts (for his uncle Canonicus, the Chief, was very old and was revered by them all.) There Williams found fierce ambassadors from Sassacus urging their suit, and at the peril of his life, he opposed them with argument. Finally, Williams prevailed. He not only prevented the alliance of the Narragansetts and Pequots, but induced the Narragansett Chiefs to go to Boston, where they concluded a treaty of peace and alliance with the colonists, so the Pequots were not only compelled to carry on the war alone, but to fight the Narragansetts also. This one act stamps Roger Williams as a man of sublime courage and of the highest Christian character. "Integrity, undaunted courage, and prompt decision marked all his conduct. Every man of whatever clime, or color, or condition, he regarded as a brother. His opponents confessed that both at Plymouth and at Salem he was respected and beloved as a pious man and an able minister. In all the relations of domestic life, his conduct was most exemplary; and over his whole course, his piety shed a hallowed lustre." George Bancroft, in his History of the United States, pays this high and truthful tribute to Roger Williams. "At a time when Germany was the battlefield of all Europe in the implacable wars of religion; when France was still to go through the fearful struggle with bigotry; when England was gasping under the despotism of intolerance, Roger Williams asserted the great doctrine of intellectual liberty. It became his glory to found a state upon that principle and to stamp himself upon its rising institutions, in characters so deep that the impress has remained to this day. He was the first person in modern Christendom to assert in its plentitude the doctrine of the liberty of conscience. Let there be for the name of Roger Williams, at least some humble place among those who have advanced moral science and made themselves the benefactors of mankind."

From an article published in the "Boston American" and written by the Rev. Thomas B. Gregory, concerning Roger Williams, we quote: "When Williams returned from England with his charter, he wrote the Constitution that has the distinction of being the first Legal Declaration of Liberty of Conscience ever adopted in America, Europe, or in

the world. Such is the honor belonging to "little Rhody," —an honor that the proudest empires in the earth might well afford to cherish with deepest satisfaction. The Rev. John Cotton of Boston, pastor of the First Church, who died in 1652, the greatest and most influential personage in his day in Massachusetts, in his discussion with Roger Williams, gave utterance to this statement, "It is wicked for Falsehood to persecute Truth, but it is the sacred duty of Truth to persecute Falsehood." Where is the infallible and unerring wisdom, which shall be able to tell us what is truth and what is falsehood? Roger Williams knew history and knew that the slogan of infallibility is either the cry of fools or the subterfuge of hypocrites, and like the honest man that he was he came back at John Cotton with these words of wisdom: "We have no law among us whereby to punish any one, for only declaring by words their minds and understandings concerning the things and ways of God."

"That answer settled John Cotton and all the other Cottons it is to be hoped for all time as far as this country is concerned. Among the men who have made America, an illustrious place must be given to the great-hearted Welshman, for there could have been no United States of America as we know it today, without the great principle of religious freedom and that principle was planted here by Roger Williams."

Some Items of Historical Interest

First Things

"Boston always exercised great influence with the Colonies. Under the sagacious direction of Winthrop she originated the Colonial Confederation of 1643; she suggested the Congress of the Colonies which adopted the Confederation of 1775; during all the War of the Revolution she held a controlling position; her voice was everywhere heard, her influence everywhere felt. Animated by her patriotic spirit, New England furnished more than one-half of that patriotic army which achieved independence, of which Massachusetts, alone, contributed nearly one-third.

The first threat of armed resistance was here uttered; the first act of resistance was here done; the first recommendation that Independence be declared was here made; the first blood in the cause was here shed; and the steady valor of our "Minute Men" in what may be called the first battle of the Revolution, the Battle of Bunker Hill, first assured Washington that the cause of American Independence was safe.

Boston established the first church, the first free school and the first college. She also built the first vessel, the first printing press, the first hotel and the first railroad. She started the first temperance movement when Governor Winthrop broke up the custom for everybody to be drinking his neighbor's health. She organized the first abolition movement. She originated stump speaking, when the Rev. John Wilson, during the canvas for Governor, addressed the people from a tree in behalf of Winthrop who was elected. She created the first public park, our Boston Common, which we owe to the forecast and wisdom of Governor Winthrop, and this, alone, should make his name dear to every Bostonian." (Mayor Frederick O. Prince, at the 250th Anniversary of Boston, September 17, 1880.)

The first General Court of Massachusetts met in 1780 and John Hancock was elected Governor. The first newspaper in America was published in Boston, April 24, 1704, and was called "The News Letter." Then followed "The Boston

Gazette" in 1709. "The New England Courant," 1721. "The New England Weekly Journal," in 1726. "The Boston Post Boy," in 1734. "The Columbian Sentinel," in 1788.

The "Advertiser" was the first daily paper and its first issue was December 16th, 1797.

The first Almanac was published by John Foster in 1679. Potatoes were introduced into Boston by the Scotch in 1720. The first steam locomotive engine was placed on the Worcester railroad in 1834. Gas light was first exhibited in the Boylston Museum November 26, 1815. Beacon Street was first known as "the road which led to the Alms House," that institution, in 1682, being located near the corner of Park and Beacon Streets. It is related that John Hancock, in 1790, while Governor of the State, gave a grand dinner to the children living at the Alms House.

The California Mining Fever reached Boston September 18, 1848, and a company of 100 men was formed who took passage in the ship "Saltello" December 27, 1848, for the voyage around Cape Horn to San Francisco. This ship was followed by the Barque "Elvira" January 1, 1849, and the ship "Edward Everett," in which 150 men took passage, sailing January 9, 1849. The first gold from California was brought to Boston by Adams Express Company May 10, 1849. In 1850 a lump of gold from California weighing 15 pounds was on exhibition in a window on Washington Street.

September 28, 1850, Jenny Lind, the Swedish Nightingale, sang for the first time in America in Tremont Temple. Dodge, the Hatter, of Boston, paid $625 for first choice of seats. Jenny Lind's successful tour of America was under the management of Phineas T. Barnum, the great American Showman.

The Federal Constitution was adopted by the State of Massachusetts at the Federal Street Church, on the corner of Federal and Franklin Streets in 1788. The site of the church was directly opposite the present First National Bank Building.

The public spirited citizens of Boston have placed Memorial Tablets in different sections of the city to mark the historical spots, which can be seen in an hour's walk around the town.

On the south-east corner of State and Washington Streets is this tablet.

On this Site
Stood the House of
Capt. Robert Keane.

He was the
Founder and First Commander
of the Ancient and Honorable
Artillery Company—1638.

One hundred years later this was the site of the book store of Daniel Henchman, where General Henry Knox of Revolutionary fame served his apprenticeship.

At No. 2 State Street a tablet announces an interesting fact.

First Store in Boston.
On this site stood the house of
John Coggan, who here opened
The First Shop for the Sale of
Merchandise in Boston.

Like all the leading merchants of Colonial days, Mr. Coggan lived over his store.

Above No. 28 State Street was the modest home of Rev. John Wilson, marked by this tablet:

Near this Site Stood the Home
of Rev. John Wilson,
Pastor of the First Church,
1632—1657

Before Devonshire Street was opened from State Street to Dock Square, a narrow lane connected the two points and was called Wilson's Lane, in honor of the ancient clergyman.

Passing down State Street a few steps, on the sidewalk in front of the Merchants' Bank Building, an arrow points to a circle in the pavement marking the spot where occurred the Boston Massacre, March 5, 1770.

On 28 State Street where now stands the elegant building of the Merchants' National Bank, is placed this tablet:

On this Site was the Shop of Anthony Stoddard,
Linen Draper in 1644.
Occupied by Henry Shrimpton, Brazier in 1646.
Here in Provincial Days stood the Royal Exchange
Tavern. A popular resort until after 1800.
From here the first stage coach from
Boston to New York was started by Nicholas
Brown, Sepember 7, 1772. "To go once every
fourteen days."

We cross Washington Street and walk up Court Street and stop before the building of the Old Colony Trust Company, on which is this interesting tablet:

> Franklin Printing Office. The Long Room Club. On this site stood the printing office of James Franklin, publisher of the "New England Courant," where his brother, Benjamin, served as an apprentice. Here from 1769 to 1776 Edes and Gill published the Boston Gazette. In a room over the printing office the Long Room Club held their meetings. Its members were most active patriots. Here the leaders planned resistance to British authority from the time of the Stamp Act to the outbreak of the Revolution.

Crossing Court Street to the corner of Tremont Street one sees this tablet:

> Wendell Powell House.
> On this site stood the Wendell Powell House, occupied as a Royal Custom House in 1759. Washington lodged here on his visit in 1789.

Wendell Powell House

Corner of Court and Tremont Streets in 1840. Here Washington was entertained in 1789 when he visited Boston. It was a famous boarding house and kept by Mr. Joseph Ingersoll. Some have wondered why Washington should have stayed at a boarding house, but it was a good public house, and far better than any of the taverns of those days.

John Hancock, the Governor of Massachusetts at that time, had an exalted idea of his position, and felt that it was the duty of the President of the United States to call upon him. "He made a great dinner and invited the President to it, excusing himself from first calling to pay his respects on the ground that he was ill at home. Washington declined the invitation, and intimated that a man who was well enough to give a dinner party was well enough to call on his guest. So Hancock, who saw his mistake, sent word that he should call the next day at any hazard."

Where the Hotel Bellevue now stands was once the home of Governor Bowdoin, marked by this tablet:

Governor Bowdoin House.
On this site stood the Mansion
House of James Bowdoin,
Governor of Massachusetts
1785-1787

Going down Beacon Street and crossing Tremont Street, we find some interesting tablets on School Street. Over the entrance of the Parker House, this tablet:

On this site stood
The Mansion House of
Jacob Wendell, Colonel of
The Boston Regiment
in 1745. Afterwards it
was the residence of
Lieut. Gov. Moses Gill.

Directly across the way on the City Hall Site another interesting memorial attracts our attention:

Here Stood the House
Occupied in 1774-1775 by
General Frederick Haldiman,
To whom the Boston Latin School boys
made protest against the destruction
of their coast.
He ordered the coast restored and reported
the affair to General Gage who observed
that it was impossible to beat the notion of
Liberty out of the people as it was rooted in
them from their childhood.

Across the street at No. 20, this tablet:

On this site stood the
Church of the French Huguenots
1716-1741; used as a Congregational
Church 1743-1785. Occupied by
Roman Catholics 1788-1803.
First Mass Celebrated November 2, 1788.

On the north corner of School and Washington Streets a tablet marks a spot known far and wide throughout the land:

Erected
A. D. 1712
Old Corner
Bookstore
Building

Passing down Washington Street on our way to the North End we pass some historical spots. At No. 239, the site of the first tavern, is marked:

First Tavern in Boston.
Site of Samuel Cole's Inn. The first Tavern in Boston, 1634. Later kept by James Penn. Afterward by William Phillips, and known as the Ship Tavern. It was owned by Major Thomas Savage.

At No. 209.

On this site stood the Second
Meeting House of the First Church
Built of wood, Dedicated 1640.
Burned 1711. Rebuilt 1712 of Brick.
Called the "Old Brick." Removed 1807.

At No. 173.

Paul Revere's Shop
on this site, 1789, stood
The Shop of Paul Revere

At No. 298:

On this site stood the
Home of Rev. John Mayo
Minister of the Second Church

from 1653 to 1677, and of Rev.
Cotton Mather, Minister
from 1685 to 1728

On the corner of Clark and Hanover Streets:

On this Site
the New North Meeting House
was erected
1714

At 37 Sheafe Street is a fitting tribute to the author of our National Hymn.

Birthplace of
Rev. S. F. Smith, D. D.
Author of "America"
1808—1885
Erected by the
Old South Chapter
Daughters of the American Revolution
1887

Near the foot of Hanover Street is Constitution Wharf.

Here was built the Frigate
Constitution
"Old Ironsides"

Battery Wharf, 379 Commercial Street, bears this tablet:

North Battery
Battery Wharf

On this site at Merry's Point, the North Battery was erected in 1644 and works were maintained here until after the close of the Revolution.

A very old tavern stood on the corner of Battery and Salutation Streets.

Salutation Tavern
On this site stood the Salutation Tavern
Also called the "Two Palaveries"
Here met the Revolutionary Associates composed largely of residents of this part of the town which formed the North End Caucus. Its members were active patriots in the People's Cause.

On North Square and Main Street:

Second Church
On this site stood the Meeting House of the Second or "Old North Church," built 1650, burnt 1676. Rebuilt 1677. Destroyed for Firewood by British Soldiers in 1776 during the Siege.

The Foster Hutchinson House

This fine old mansion on the corner of Garden Court and Fleet Streets was a great resort for the Tories in the days of the Revolution. Here they held their conferences and laid their plans. The Foster Hutchinson house was probably built by John Foster about the year 1686, as in that year he bought the land, which became his estate, from Richard Wharton. John Foster was a prominent Boston merchant who was prominent in official and military life. He died, intestate, in 1711, and his wife surviving him but two months, bequeathed the bulk of the famly estate, including his "dwelling or brick mansion" to her nephew, Thomas Hutchinson. He and his

distinguished son of the same name, who was Governor of Massachusetts Bay from 1771 to 1774, occupied it in turn until 1765 when it was sacked by a mob and partly destroyed, who thus showed their disapproval of Hutchinson's action, while Lieutenant-Governor in the enforcement of the obnoxious Stamp Act. It was a very large brick house, painted stone color, having ample grounds, extending to Fleet Street and back to Hanover Street. Hutchinson wrote his "History of Massachusetts" in this house. "The first volume in manu-

Graveyard, Cambridge

script lay in the rich library, nearly ready for the press. It was thrown out with other precious books and papers and left lying in the street for several hours in a soaking rain. But most fortunately all but a few sheets were carefully collected and saved by the Rev. Andrew Elliott, Minister of the 'New North Church,' living near by on Hanover Street, and the author was thus enabled to transcribe the whole and publish it two years later."

Hutchinson and his family made their hurried escape from the house just before the mob reached it, finding refuge in neighboring dwellings. The estate was later confiscated and sold to William Little, merchant, who for many years, was appraiser at the Custom House, and he occupied it until his death in 1835.

Boston Streets, Old and Present Names, and Some Items of Interest Concerning Them

Of the names first given to Boston's streets, but very few are in use today. Where the same name occurs it is usually in an entirely different section than when first given.

Washington Street, for instance, was given its name in 1789, following the visit of the Father of His Country to Boston. Previous to that time the street from Cornhill to Roxbury had four distinct names. It was called Cornhill from the present Cornhill to Milk Street; then Newbury Street to Summer Street; then Marlboro Street to Essex Street, and from thence Orange Street, through Boston Neck to Roxbury.

Tremont Street opposite the Granary Burial Ground was sometimes called Paddock's Mall on account of the trees planted in front of the Burial Ground in 1762, by Major Paddock, a prominent and well-known citizen in the days preceding the Revolution. Tremont Street, like Washington Street, has had several names. Different sections of it were known as Common, Nassau, Longacre and Holyoke. It was not extended to the Roxbury line until 1831. In 1760 there were only a few streets in the city, the two great thoroughfares being Hanover and Washington Streets, but there were numberless bypaths and alleys. At that time the larger part of the population was in the territory from the shore on the North End to what is now Mason Street, what we call today the "down town" section.

State Street in Revolutionary days was King Street, and the Town House (Old State House) stood at the head of the street. The house of Governor Leverett faced the Town House, King Street, in those early days was the fashionable residential section and was the favorite daily promenade of the social leaders.

Court Street was originally known as Prison Lane, because of the jail which occupied the site of the new City Hall Annex. In Revolutionary days it was Queen Street, but in 1776, when the Americans were again in possession

of the town, the Registry of Deeds, and higher and lower courts were re-established and it was then named Court Street. It has been truly said, "this thoroughfare is rich in memories of great men and great events." On this street were located in the first half of the 19th century the great lights of the legal profession. On the west side of Franklin Avenue was a building owned by Governor Moses Gill. Hon. James Sullivan, a Judge, Representative, Attorney-General and Governor in 1807-1808, and a noted writer, had his office in this building. Next to Gill's Building was the home of Governor Bowdoin, a man of wealth and of high standing. Just beyond was the Adams Building, where Judge George R. Minot had his office. He wrote the History of the State and was the founder of the Massachusetts Historical Society. On the south side of Court Street was the office of Josiah Quincy, a statesman and scholar and one of Boston's great Mayors. It was during his administration of the City Government that the Quincy Market was built, and some of the greatest improvements ever made in the city were carried through. Two other great men of Boston had offices near by, Hon. John Phillips and Harrison Gray Otis, a representative in the State Legislature, United States Senator, and Mayor of Boston, 1829-1832.

School Street received its name from the Boston Latin School which stood in the rear of King's Chapel.

Park Street, leading up to Sentry (Beacon) Hill was first called Sentry Street. Many of the residents on that aristocratic thoroughfare, Beacon Street, may not be aware that that street in the very early days was described "as a way leading to the almshouse," a building erected in 1632, at the corner of Beacon and Park Streets.

Water Street has been known as Blotts, Bannisters and Willis Lane.

Boylston Street was Frog Lane.

Essex Street was "a path leading to the windmill."

Bedford Street was at one time called Pond Street, probably because of a small pond which was then nearly opposite the site of the old English High and Latin School Building. At this pond the teamsters watered their horses.

Batterymarch Street was Gibbs Lane and Crab Lane, Congress Street, was Quaker Lane, Dutton Lane and Atkinson Street.

Change Avenue, from State Street to Faneuil Hall Square, was Royal Exchange Lane.

Doane Street, prior to 1807, was Lobster Alley.

Crab Alley of the olden time still retains its original name. It runs from Batterymarch to Broad Street, but there is no sign on any building to indicate it, neither is the name found in the Boston Directory. Until the great Boston fire of 1760 which burned the Town House, the First Church and 350 buildings, Kilby Street was a narrow lane and known as Cooper's Lane from State to Water Street, and Mackerel Lane from Water to Milk Street.

Milk Street in all probability retains its original name which may have been the name of a London Street. The Records of 1708, speak of it as "running from the South Meeting House down to the sea."

Devonshire Street from State Street to Milk Street received its name in 1784, previous to that time it was known

Franklin Street, 1859

as Pudding Lane, Joylieff's Lane, and Black Jack Lane.

Pearl Street, prior to 1800 was known as Hutchison Lane.

Like Washington Street, Franklin Street, although a short street, was named by sections. There was Vincents Lane,

Franklin Place, Sturgis Street, Baker's Alley and Hamilton Court. In the days just preceding the Revolution there was quite a large pasture between Milk, Hawley, Summer and Federal Streets, known as De Costa's Pasture and Franklin Street was laid out through it. When the street was completed the land was quickly taken up for residential purposes.

In the early part of the 19th century Franklin Street from Washington to Federal, was an aristocratic residential section. As late is 1859 it retained somewhat of its old time grandeur. Here many of Boston's wealthy business and professional men had their large and comfortable residences. Previous to 1793 the lower part of the street was low and marshy, with an unhealthy, stagnant pool, but this was reclaimed by Joseph Burrell, who erected a residence there with a fine garden of fruit trees, plants and flowers. The cut of Franklin Street represents a block of houses on the south side of the street as they appeared in 1859. It was the first block of residences ever erected in Boston and was built in 1793. There were 16 separate residences in the block and in the centre was an arch over a street leading to Summer Street, now known as Arch Street. Over this archway were the rooms of the Massachusetts Historical Society and the Boston Library. In the centre of the street was a pretty little park in which were large and noble trees whose spreading branches lent a grateful shade in the hot summer days.

Federal Street was originally known as Long Lane, but the present name was given to it when the Convention for the adoption of the Federal Constitution was held in 1788.

High Street, leading from Summer Street to the top of Fort Hill, was called Cow Lane, as the slopes of the hill afforded excellent grazing for cattle.

Summer Street was Mylne Street. In 1738 a part of it was called Seven Star Lane.

Hawley Street has been known by many names, among them Bishop's Alley, Board Alley, Richardson's Alley, Gilbert's Alley and Waybourne Lane.

Beach Street is mentioned as "a street running Eastward to the Sea."

Essex Street was called Achamutty Street, receiving its present name in 1808. It was the centre of the Distillery business in the days when the favorite beverage of topers

was "New England Rum." In 1794 there were 30 Distilleries on Essex and South Streets.

Harrison Avenue when first laid out was called Front Street and was described as "a perfectly straight street 70 feet wide." In 1844 it received its present name in honor of President Harrison, in the days of "Tippecanoe and Tyler, too."

Province Street was known as Governor's Alley. When the old Province House was a social and political centre, this narrow street was an alley leading to the stables of the old mansion.

Hancock Street, formerly George Street, received its name in 1800 in honor of Governor John Hancock. Those old Revolutionary patriots did not wait long before renaming streets whose names were suggestive of royalty and Colonial rule and in their places we have the names of Presidents and Governors.

In 1708 Faneuil Hall Square, in parts, had many names, among them, Fish Market, Corn Market and Bread Market.

Elm Street is a very old street and was long known as Hudson's Lane and Wing's Lane.

Merchant's Row, originally known as Roebuck passage, from a notorious tavern which bore an unsavory reputation.

To many Bostonians of the present day Dock Square, so far removed from the water, seems an odd name for a business centre, but in the 17th century the sea flowed up as far as the juncture between Elm Street and the Square. At high tide the water probably covered all the level land now comprised in Dock Square, which was a favorite landing place in 1634.

In 1732 Sudbury Street running from Court Street to Cold Lane (Portland Street) was familiarly known as Tuttle Lane.

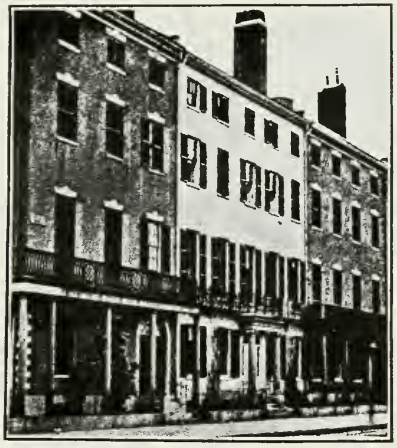
Chardon Street takes its name from the wealthy merchant, Peter Chardon, who had a fine residence at the head of the street, where the Bowdoin Square Church Building now stands.

Bowdoin Square received its name in honor of Governor James Bowdoin. In Revolutionary Days this was a very delightful part of the city. There were fine estates here with broad acres, gardens and noble trees.

Leverett Street perpetuates the name of Governor John Leverett. East of Beacon Hill, between Bowdoin and Somerset Streets, was known as Valley Acre.

At the North End there were many quaint names given to the streets and by-ways such as Swing Bridge Lane, Paddy's Alley, Beer Lane, Elbow Alley, Crooked Alley, Moon Street, Sliding Alley, Salutation Alley, White Bread Alley, Blind Alley and Frog Lane.

During the year 1914, Avery Street, an old thoroughfare in the heart of the shopping district was widened and improved. In the early days of the Colony it was called Coleburn's Lane, after one William Coleburn, a man prominent in town affairs. Early in the 18th century it received the title of Sheafe's Lane, which it maintained for a hundred years.



Colonnade Row, Tremont Street, Corner West Street

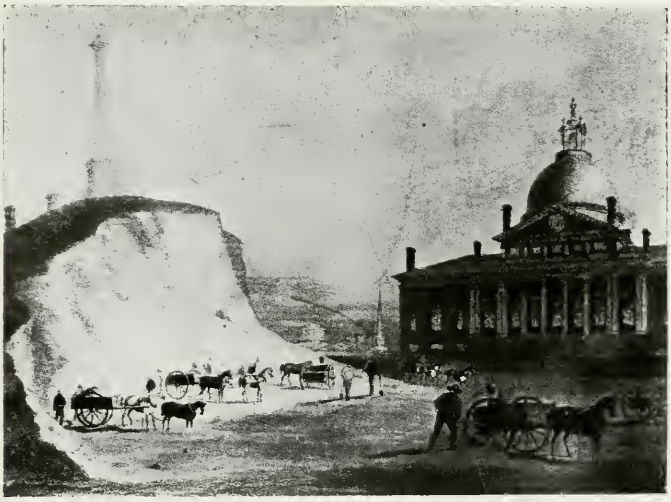
Old Boston: Additions and Improvements

A view of Boston from the harbor, 250 years ago, would have shown three prominent hills, one to the north, fifty feet high, called Copps' Hill, for Warren Copp, a shoemaker, who came from Shakespeare's home, Stratford on Avon, England, and who erected a mill on the summit of the hill; another hill, eighty feet high, adjacent to the shore, near India and Rowes Wharves, known as Corn Hill, and later as Fort Hill, because of a fort built on it in 1632; the third and middle hill, but more distant than the others, one hundred and eighty feet high, called both "Sentry" and Beacon Hill, from the custom of maintaining a sentry and an apparatus for a signal from its summit.

The name of "Trimount" sometimes bestowed on Boston, did not come from the three hills above named, but was derived from three prominences along the top of Beacon Hill, namely, Cotton, or Pemberton Hill, where Pemberton Square now is, Sentry Hill, now the site of the State House, and West Hill, or Mount Vernon, later the site of Louisburg Square.

In 1672, a sea wall was built from the base of Copp's Hill to Fort Hill, making a crescent-shaped bay, known as the Town Cove. It was designed as a protection of the town against hostile fleets, for the wall was mounted with big guns, and at the Fort Hill end, it terminated in a fort called the "Sconce," or South Battery. Rowe's Wharf is today the site of that battery. In 1632, two years after the founding of Boston, a fort was begun on the eminence of Fort Hill, and in 1636, the work was continued. Messrs. Keane, Hutchinson, Coggan, Oliver Hastings and others, loaned five pounds each, to complete it. The "Sconce" was an outwork and was constructed of whole timbers, with earth and stones between and was considered very strong. The sea wall or "Barricado" as it was called, was a prodigious work for those days, the wall being 20 feet thick and 2200 feet long. There were openings in it through which vessels could enter the Town Cove. It marked the first great undertaking in wharf building.

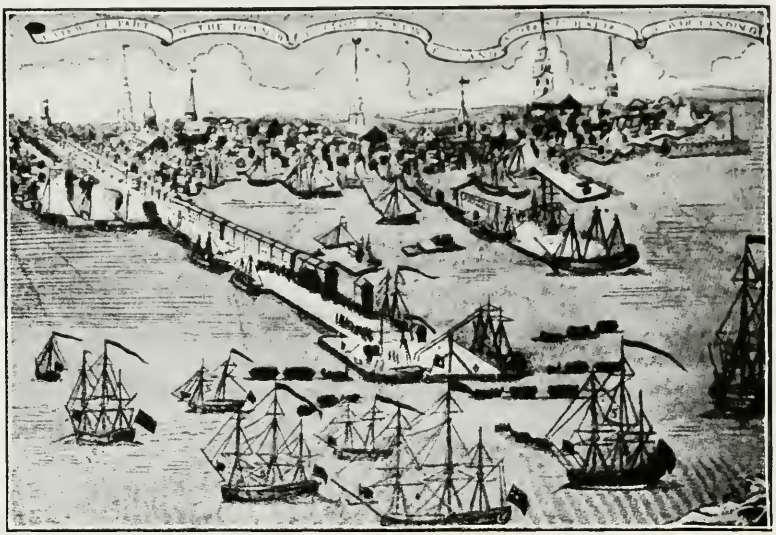
The North Battery was at the extreme end of this great sea wall. Drake says: "It stood at the lower part at the North End of the town, and it was not demolished until after the Revolution. The site was then converted into a wharf for the accommodation of ships and merchandise, and it now bears the name of Battery Wharf. This, in early days, was a very important point, as it commanded a great extent of the harbor, and quite a sum of money was expended to put



Lowering Beacon Hill, rear of State House

it in a condition to be of service in case an enemy should suddenly appear. After a few years the "Barricado" fell into decay, as no hostile fleets came here until after the Revolution, one hundred years later. Portions of the "Barricado" became parts of wharves, that were afterwards built. In 1709 the foreign trade of Boston had so increased that it became necessary to have larger wharf facilities and it was at that time that Long Wharf and Central Wharf were built. Long Wharf was the extension of State Street and it extended far out into the harbor. In historical associations, Long Wharf ranks second to Griffin's Wharf, for it was at Long Wharf that the British troops landed in 1768, the men who were sent over by George the Third to overawe and punish the citizens of Boston and other colonists for daring to resist his tyranny.

In 1679 Boston was the principal seaport in North America. There was no royal custom house and the flags of many nations waved over the vessels in the harbor. The population at that time was 9,000, living in less than two thousand tenements. Some of the houses in the business portion were of brick, with tile or slate roofs, and others were of wood, plastered rough cast on the outside with cement, in which finely powdered glass was mixed. The greater portion of the houses



Landing British Troops in Boston, 1768

were of wood, covered with clapboards and roofed with cedar shingles. The chimneys were large, built on a stack in the centre of the house, and the windows were small. The streets, of different widths, were paved with round beach stones. There were neither street lamps nor side walks, but hitching posts were numerous, and nearly every large house had its horse block in front for convenience in mounting or dismounting. The cows of many of the freeholders were pastured on the Common. The Common from the very beginning was used for pasturage. During the first sixteen years of the settlement every resident of Boston owning a cow had the privilege of driving his cow thither and letting

her feed on the "herbage," as the grass was always called in the Town Records. In 1642 John Ruggles had the supervision of the cows pastured there, and a toll was exacted of a bushel of corn a year for every cow pastured there under his supervision. It was his duty to go forth with the cows to the Common, with the sun an hour high, and to return them to their owners at 6 o'clock in the evening. Over a hundred years later, a vote in town meeting stipulated that only four men should be allowed to have the use of the Common for pasturage. In those early days the Common was a great dumping ground for rubbish and trash of every conceivable sort.

Tradition tells us that the town officials were constantly at strife with William Hawkins, a butcher, who lived and carried on his business on the present site of the Somerset Club on Beacon Street, who persisted in depositing the entrails and other offal from his slaughtering establishment on the Common to get rid of it. There were in those early days in the centre of the town villas, surrounded by gardens, and one which eclipsed all others had just been completed by Peter Sargeant, a wealthy merchant, on land which he purchased of Colonel Shrimpton. This was afterwards known as the Province House, which is elsewhere described. Edward Ward, a Cockney traveler, visited Boston in 1699, and thus describes it: "On the southwest side of Massachusetts Bay is Boston, whose name is taken from a town in Lincolnshire and is the Metropolis of New England. The houses in some parts of the town joyne as in London. The buildings, like their women, being neat and handsome. And their streets, like the hearts of their male inhabitants, are paved with pebble."

Captain Wing, in his "Voyages and Travels," describes Boston as he saw it twenty years later. He says: "The town is near two miles in length, and three-quarters of a mile broad in some places, and contains about 4,000 houses. Most of them are built of brick and there are about 18,000 inhabitants. It is much the largest of any town in America, under the British government; they have built several wharves, one of which goes by the name of Long Wharf, and may well be called so, running about 1800 feet into the harbor. Here large ships, with great ease, may be laden and unladen; on one side of the wharf are warehouses about the whole length of it."

A Royal Officer sent to America by the Government of Charles the Second, said of the Colony of Massachusetts

Bay: "There are many able to bear arms, between thirty and forty thousand, four thousand alone in the town of Boston. Their trained bandsmen are twelve troop of horse, and six thousand foot; each troop consists of sixty horses besides officers; all are well mounted, completely armed with back, breast and head pieces, buff coats, carbines and pistols; each troop distinguished by their coats. The foot are also well armed with swords, muskets and bandoliers. Three miles from Boston is a castle of stone, lately built and in good repair; with four bastions and mounted with 88 guns, 16 whole culvain, commodiously seated upon a rising ground, sixty paces from the water side, under which at high water mark is a stone battery of six guns. There is a small brick fort lately made at the South End of Boston, with two tiers of guns, six in each. One platform on the North side of the town (North Battery) commanding the river to Charlestown, made of loose stones and turf. Here are mounted five demiculverin and two small guns. There are in the public stores, commonly, a thousand pounds of powder, with other ammunition and arms, proportionately.

About seven miles away in Dorchester is a powder mill in good repair and well wrought. There is in the country great quantities of ingredients for powder, especially upon islands, where fowls frequent, and in swamps, where pigeons roost. There is a great plenty of iron ore and as good can be made here as any in Sp in.".

From the foregoing account it can be seen that for over 140 years following the settlement, Boston grew rapidly in wealth and population and was the leading city of North America at the outbreak of the Revolution. The Boston Port Bill which closed the harbor and cut off all foreign trade for many months, was a serious interruption and crushing blow to its commercial supremacy, and it took Boston many years to recover from it.

In 1876, at the celebration of the one hundredth anniversary of the Evacuation of Boston by the British, the orator of the day, the Rev. George E. Ellis, in his address gave quite a vivid word picture of Boston in Revolutionary Days, from which we quote: "Well to do, forehanded, were the local phrases, by which the general condition of the people would have been described. There was a real wealth, too, in the hands of some, with complacency, luxury and display. There were stately and substantial dwellings, with rich and solid

furnishings for parlor, dining room, hall and chamber, with plate and tapestry, brocades and laces. There were portraits by foreign and domestic artists, of those who were ancestors and of those who meant to be ancestors. There were formal costumes and manners for gentry, with parade and etiquette, a self respectful decorum in intercourse with their own and other classes, warm hospitality, good appetites and abundant viands, and liquids and solids for all. The buildings were detached, none of them in blocks. The houses of many of the merchant princes and high magistrates were, relatively, more palatial than are any in the city today. They stood conspicuous and large, surrounded by generous spaces with lawns and trees, with fruit and vegetable gardens, and fields for pasture, and coach and cattle barns. There were fine equipments and black coachmen and footmen. There were still wide unfenced spaces, and declivities and thickets, where the barberry bush, the flag and the mullein stalk grew undisturbed.

"There were many quaint old nooks and corners, taverns and inns, coffee houses, the drinking vessels in which were not especially adapted to that beverage—shops designated by emblems and symbols, loitering places for news and gossip resorts for boys and negroes, for play and roguery and some dark holes in wharf or lane. There were some thousand buildings, four being of stone, of which King's Chapel was one and that alone remains. Between Beacon Street and the foot of Park Street stood the Work House, the Poor House and the Bridewell, all facing the Common. On the site of Park Street Church stood the Granary, and opposite was a large manufacturing building which was used by the British during their occupation of the town. The jail occupied the site of the Old Court House—King and Queen—now State and Court Streets, were the most completely covered and lined with taverns and dockings, marts and offices of exchange. The house provided for the British Governor was opposite the 'Old South,' standing far back, stately and commodious, with trees and lawns, extending to Washington Street. The Old State House, a dignified looking building, held the halls of the Council and the representatives, with royal portraits and adornings. How little is there now which the patriots and citizens of old days would recognize were they to come back!"

In 1784, after the close of the Revolutionary War, a London newspaper noted the arrival of two ships from Boston, both in ballast, being unable to obtain cargoes of any sort. At that time nothing but American products could be carried in American vessels to England. It was about this time that Boston merchants began to look for trade in far distant countries and to increased facilities for handling the trade.

Boston in 1825, as Seen from Dover Street Bridge

The filling in and making of new land began at a very early date and much of it in those days was done by individuals. The town, as one has said, "was pretty near all water front," Those who lived on the water front, filled in to increase their wharfage facilities and those who lived on the hillsides dug into the hills to make their land level. Where Faneuil Hall now stands was once the Town Dock, and as early as 1710 the town filled in this dock, and in 1826 the town pushed still farther into the bay and captured 167,000 feet of land, as we describe in the account of Mayor Quincy's administration.

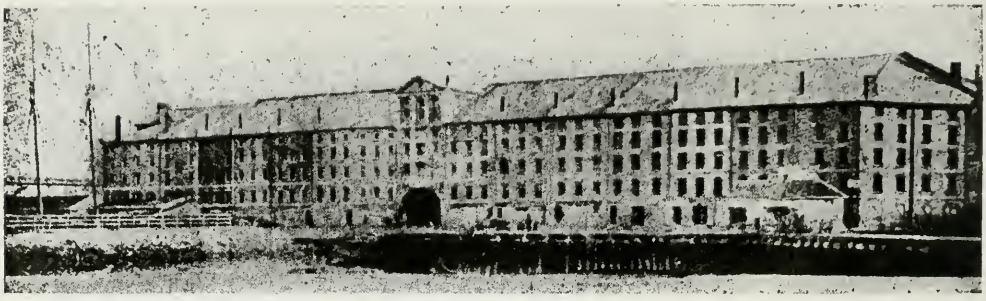
The first great and systematic undertaking for enlarging the area of Boston was begun by a Corporation chartered in 1804 called the Front Street Improvement. Washington Street was the only thoroughfare running from the heart of the city across the Neck to Roxbury. A new street, Harrison

Avenue, was made running nearly parallel with Washington Street. The filling in of the flats thus enclosed added nearly nine acres of valuable building property. In 1805, Uriah Cotting, James Lloyd, Francis Cabot Lowell and Harrison Gray Ottis, formed a corporation called the India Wharf proprietors and built India Wharf, completing it three years later. For fifty years it was the headquarters of the trade with the Orient and many valuable cargoes from Canton, Calcutta, Russia and the Mediterranean ports were discharged there.

The cut shows the long line of warehouses on the wharf as they appeared prior to the building of Atlantic Avenue. The stores were sold to private individuals, save a few, which were reserved for the proprietors themselves. There were 30 stores in the block. Many Bostonians of today can recall the time when several large square riggers were moored at the wharf, unloading their cargoes of tea, coffee, spices and fruit. At the same time this India Wharf improvement was going on private enterprise was at work on the region west of Beacon Hill, and Charles Street was built and from this many years later the Back Bay improvement was to develop. Beacon Hill was being dug down at about the same time and the gravel was used to fill in the Mill Pond. Before it was dug down the hill was as high as the top rail at the base of the State House dome. A large portion of the work was done in the years 1824-1825.

The North Cove land is now occupied by the Boston and Maine Terminals and by officers and ware rooms of the iron and steel industries and other large manufacturing plants and stores. From the foot of the Common to the uplands of Brookline there was a broad expanse of marsh and tidal river. The distance was about two miles and the only means of communication in early days was by a very circuitous route. Uriah Cotting, who was a far sighted and public spirited citizen, originated the plan of using the rise and fall of the tides for industrial labor, which resulted in the formation of the Boston and Roxbury Mill Corporation, which was authorized to build a dam from the end of Beacon Street at Charles Street to Sewall's Point at Brookline, together with a crossdam from a point in Roxbury to the main causeway, each dam was to be used as a highway, on which the company was empowered to collect tolls. Parker Hill Quarry, Roxbury, furnished the stone for this

dam. This enterprise was undertaken and prosecuted against the wishes of many citizens. In July 1821, a State Commission gave the coporation permission to fill in the land for residential purposes. About the middle of the last century the commonwealth came into possession of a large portion of the unfilled territory. In 1864 the land was rapidly filled in, streets were laid out, and as a result we have today the beautiful Back Bay district, a section unsurpassed by any city in the land. Many will recall the old Mill Dam road, especially in the winter season, when the sleighing was good and the road filled with elegant turnouts, in which



Block of Stores, Old India Wharf

were the elite of the city, watching the fast trotters, driven by their wealthy owners. Certainly no auto parade can compare in point of beauty or attractiveness with those old time winter days on the Mill Dam.

The filling in of the Back Bay was followed by the laying out and building of Atlantic Avenue, a broad water front street, extending from Summer Street to Commercial Wharf, absorbing that portion of Broad Street from Summer Street to Rowe's Wharf.

The gravel for this improvement was obtained from Fort Hill which was thus brought down to a level and a large and valuable and much needed area was added to the business district of the city. The South Cove was filled with earth brought from Roxbury and Dorchester. On this land is the South Terminal Station, the headquarters of the New York, New Haven and Hartford Railroad Company. There are also city buildings, a large and fine modern hotel, mills, business blocks and lumber yards. All these improvements

have increased the city's tax lands by millions of dollars, besides adding to the appearance of the city in the eyes of strangers and contributing to the convenience of all her citizens.

The latest reclamation and improvement is the Charles River Embankment and Charles River Basin. Here a broad esplanade, one and a half miles long, borders a permanent basin.

The growth of Boston by reclamation, has been marvelous, showing man's endeavor and ability to overcome natural and formidable obstacles. In former days, Boston was practically an island. She is now inseparably a part of the mainland.

The Old State House

This ancient building, erected in 1748, stands on the site of the earliest market place of the town. The first Town House was built of wood in 1657, from funds bequeathed to the town for that purpose by Capt. Robert Keayne, the first commander of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company. That building went down in the great fire of 1711 which destroyed many other buildings in that vicinity.

In our article on the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company, we give a short sketch of Captain Keayne and of his being summoned before the Magistrates of the town, tried, found guilty, and punished by imprisonment, for making too much money in his business. At his death in 1658, he left three hundred pounds to Boston for the erection of a Town House, which, as one writer has remarked, "was heaping coals of fire upon the heads of his townsmen." He outlined that the Town House should contain a market place, room for the courts, room for the Townsmen, Commissioners, for a library, a gallery for the Elders a room for an armory, and rooms for merchants and masters of vessels. After the matter was duly considered by the selectmen, the town chose a committee to prepare plans for the Town House. This committee was given full power in August, 1658, to erect a building to bind the town for the payment of the contract price. The building was sixty-six feet long, thirty-six feet wide, set upon twenty-one pillars ten feet high. The second story was partitioned off, making the rooms desired. There was a walk on top, fifteen feet wide, with two turrets, and balusters and rails around the walk.

The building cost six hundred and eighty pounds, and the balance required in addition to the legacy of Captain Keayne was contributed by one hundred and four citizens. The fire that burned this Town House in 1711, burned all the houses from School Street to Dock Square, all the upper part of King Street, and the old Meeting House. The "News Letter" ascribed the source of the fire to an old Scotch woman who lived in a tenement at the head of the street. A fire she

was using spread to some chips and other combustibles near by, and thence to the tenement in which she lived. A new Town House was immediately erected, one-half of the expenses being met by the Province, and one-quarter by the

The Old State House

Town of Boston, and one-quarter by the County of Suffolk. The new building was of brick, one hundred and ten feet long, thirty-eight feet wide, and provided accommodations for the Governor, the Courts, the Secretary of the Province, and for the Register of Deeds. This building was partially burned in another great fire in 1747, and the present struc-

ture built in 1748, has an exterior practically the same. Previous to the Revolution this building was the official headquarters of the Royal Governors and the Provincial Council, and the legislature of the Colony held its sessions there.

When the new State House on Beacon Hill was completed in 1798, the Great and General Court moved into it, and all the State Officers were transferred to the new building. Some events of great historical moment have occurred in and around the old building. Here occurred the Revolution of 1689, when the Colony rebelled against the administration of Sir Edmund Andros. Here in 1699 was held the trial of that great and famous pirate, Captain Kidd, who after his conviction was confined until his execution in the damp and gloomy prison on Court Street. That building was the predecessor of the Court House recently demolished to make way for the annex to Boston City Hall.

The Boston Massacre March, 1770, occurred just in front of the balcony of the building, and when Boston was in the wildest excitement over the odious Stamp Act, her citizens burned stamped Clearances in front of its doors. From the balcony looking down State Street was read the news of the death of George the Second, and the accession of George the Third to the throne. In this old State House in the words of Samuel Adams, "Independence was born." In the mind of every American patriot it will ever be associated with Samuel Adams' memorable interview with Governor Hutchinson, after the Boston Massacre, when, representing the outraged citizens assembled at the Old South Meeting House, he demanded the removal of all the British troops in Boston to Castle William in the harbor. In this Old State House in 1778, the Count D'Estaing, Commander of the French fleet, was received by Governor Hancock. In it Generals Howe, Clinton and Gage held a Council of War before the battle of Bunker Hill. On July 18th, 1776, from the famous East window, Colonel Crafts read to the assembled multitude the Declaration of Independence.

General Washington in 1789 as he stood upon the balcony received a great ovation from the citizens, and reviewed a long procession in his honor. Here John Hancock was inaugurated First Governor of the Commonwealth. The plans for the capture of Louisburg—a great event in the provincial history of Massachusetts—were conceived and completed within the walls of the Old State House. In its

Court Room. James Otis made his great plea against the Writs of Assistance, and four years later, in the same Court Room, was held the trial of Captain Preston and his soldiers, who took part in the "Boston Massacre." Governor Gage was sworn into office in the hall of the "Old State House in 1774. From 1692 until 1774-75, when the Province concluded to dispense with its Governors, eleven such Chief Magistrates had received the Royal Commission, and had been proclaimed to the people from the State House."

The Constitution of the State of Massachusetts was planned in this building. Originally the steeple was much higher than at present, and where the clock now is, was once a great sun dial. When the British evacuated Boston, March 17, 1776, they took with them from the Council Chamber of the Old Town House, the "Royal Coat of Arms" to St. John, New Brunswick, and set it up in Trinity Church in that town. It was in this church that the Rev. Mathew Byles, who after his banishment from Boston on account of his pronounced Tory sentiments, served as Rector for twenty-five years, where his remains now repose. When the great fire swept over St. John over thirty years ago, and Trinity Church went down, this Coat of Arms (Lion and Unicorn) was the only relic saved, and is now set up in the new Trinity Church. History has handed down the story of a little event which occurred under the shadow of this old building. It was a Festival to celebrate the triumph of the French Revolution, and was held January 23, 1793. A long table was set out in the middle of State Street, extending from the Old State House to Kilby Street. The feature of the banquet was an ox which weighed 1000 pounds, roasted whole, and drawn in triumphal procession, by 16 horses through the principal streets, before gracing the festal board. Two great hogsheads of punch followed on a second cart, and a third was heaped high with bread. State Street was then a largely residential district, and roofs and balconies were crowded with spectators. They did not remain long, for the diners, prompted perhaps by the liberality of the punch, began to hurl pieces of the ox into the air. It was not a welcome substitute for confetti, and the dinner finally broke up in disorder. A repetition of this out of door feast, in the same location, today would cause more confusion than the greatest financial panic."

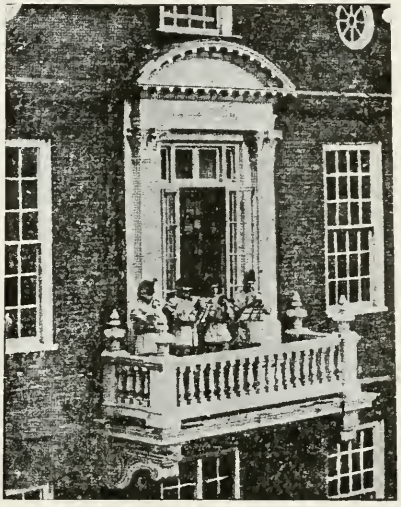
In the 17th century the public whipping post and the

stocks were in the immediate vicinity of the building. Up to within a few years, a large part of the building had been given over to mercantile purposes, yielding a revenue to the city, but it is now renovated and will be preserved and cared for as an historical relic. The upper stories are occupied by the Bostonian Society. This Society was incorporated in 1881, and its object is "promoting the study of the history of Boston, and the preservation of its contiguities, and the collection by gift, loan or purchase, books, manuscripts and pictures of an historical nature." Already the Society has a valuable collection which is open daily to the inspection of the public during the business hours of the day. In the main hall is a very large round table around which Governors of the State and their Councillors have sat, in the last century and discussed many matters affecting the weal or woe of the Commonwealth. It was formerly in the Council Chamber of the present State House, but during Governor Benjamin F. Butler's administration, it was sent to the Old State House, as he believed it came from there and should be carefully preserved as an historical relic. There is also in this hall a table that was used in the Hancock House, and a chair that belonged to Madam Dorothy Hancock. A desk of John Hancock's is still doing good service in the room of the Secretary. Over the registry desk hangs a picture of one of the famous Boston Tea Party. A Lantern which hung on the Liberty Tree at the illumination celebrating the repeal of the Stamp Act hangs in the main hall. One room of the Society's is called the "Commission Room," and here framed and hung upon the walls are Commissions given by Royal and State Government to various persons, for various offices, mostly military.

In the cases around the front hall are many exceedingly interesting relics. Plates and Sugar Bowls used by Governor Hutchinson, a cup and saucer used by the officers of the United States frigate "Constitution." One case is known as the "Hancock Case" and contains many things that once belonged to John Hancock and his family. There is a red velvet coat, blue figured silk waistcoat, and drab trunks, which doubtless were worn by him at social functions or on gala occasions; a long wallet with his name stamped on it; shoe buckles, keys of the rooms of his house, most ponderous affairs; pitcher and punch bowl, books from his church pew, probably Brattle Street Church, his large Family Bible

and a Book of Common Prayer large enough for a pulpit desk; a bill head from his counting house, which is a fine specimen of the engraver's art. There are two pairs of kid slippers that were worn by Dorothy Q.

Around these rooms are many portraits of men who helped build this Nation. There are Samuel Adams, James Otis, Daniel Webster and others. The swing sign, bearing a roughly executed portrait of John Hancock, now quietly reposes in a corner of the Hall. It swung for many years in front of the old Hancock Tavern. If it could only speak, what reminiscences it could relate!



The Trumpeters on the Balcony of the Old State House

The Society in its Library Room has a wealth of papers, manuscripts and books of great interest to the student of local and of national history, and to this the public has free access.

The City Government of Boston is to be congratulated on its action in restoring this building to its old time simple grandeur, and making it, like the Old South and Faneuil Hall, an object lesson to all the citizens, native and foreign born, emphasizing the fact that character towers far above the mere accumulation of riches.

In the building are the following tablets, viz:—

1634
Site of Public Market Place
1657
First Town House
Burnt 1711. Rebuilt 1713
Occupied by
The Great and General Court
and
The Royal Governor Under
George I, II, III.

1780
JOHN HANCOCK
Signer of
The Declaration of Independence
was here inaugurated
First Governor of
The Commonwealth of Massachusetts
1780—1793
Occupied by
The General Court
1830—1839
By the City Governor.

EXTERIOR TABLETS.

At the West End is the following Tablet:

OLD STATE HOUSE.
Site of the Ancient Market House
Site of the First Town House
Erected 1658—Burned 1711.
This Building Erected 1712.
"Here the Child Independence was born."
Sam. Adams.
Washington here received the tribute
of an enfranchised people—1789.
In Use as a City Hall 1830—1839.

At the East End:—

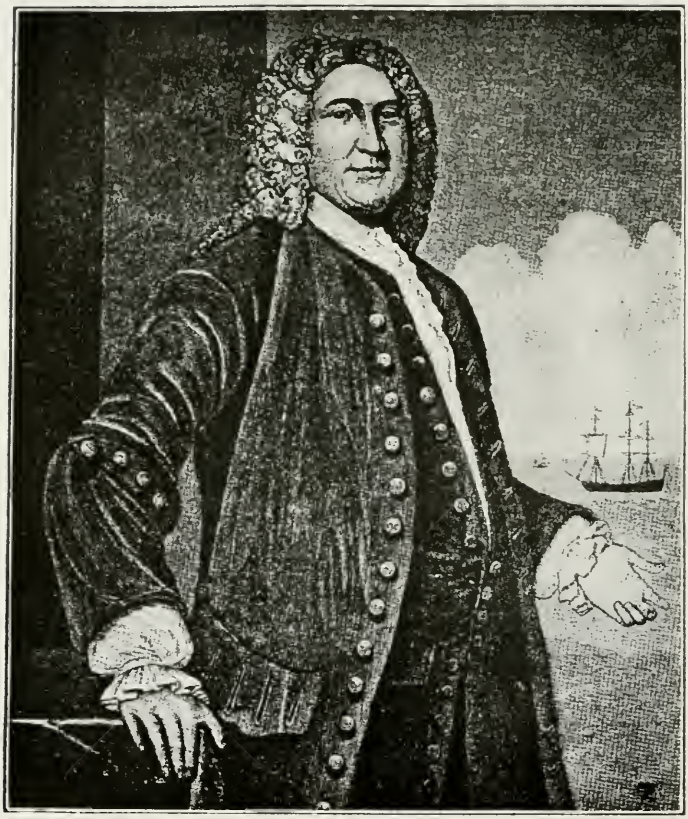
OLD STATE HOUSE.
From the Balcony was proclaimed
The Repeal of the Stamp Act
1766
The Declaration of Independence
1776
Peace with England
1783

On the South side of the Old State House.

OLD STATE HOUSE.
Gov. Andrew's tyranny—here overthrown.
1689
James Otis here made his speech against the
Writs of Assistance.
1766

On the North Side:

OLD STATE HOUSE
Captain Preston and his soldiers
Here tried for killing three citizens in the
Boston Massacre—1770
Demand here made for removal of
British troops from Boston—1778
State Constitution here proclaimed
1780



Peter Faneuil

Faneuil Hall

The Huguenots and the Faneuil Family

There is no hall in America so rich in historical memories and associations as this old Cradle of Liberty. "Its name calls to mind that Boston group of French Huguenots who were such zealous and active patriots in the days of the Revolution; Paul Revere, a leader of the Boston Tea Party, and the hero of the famous midnight ride; Richard Dana, the people's champion in their fight against the Stamp Act; and James Bowdoin, who proved himself a thorn in the flesh of the royal governors." These exiles from France, driven hither by a bitter religious persecution, were, numerically, comparatively insignificant among the founders of the republic, but "they entered with earnestness and vigour into all the hopes and plans of the new nation. They gave property and life in behalf of the principles they had so eagerly championed in France. They faced danger and had their full share of suffering in the struggle for independence." Of these refugees as a whole body, Henry Cabot Lodge speaks as follows: "I believe that in proportion to their numbers, the Huguenots produced and gave to the American Republic more men of ability than any other race." In making this statement he had in mind the long roll of illustrious names—all Huguenots, or of Huguenot descent, in all the walks of life who have adorned the pages of American history.

One of the foremost families of these early settlers from France was that of Faneuil—name indissolubly associated with Boston. In a list of the French nationality admitted into the Bay Colony by the Governor and Council, on February 1, 1691, are the names of Benjamin, John and Andrew Faneuil. Benjamin chose New York as his residence, establishing a home there, and marrying a French lady of that place. His remains are buried in Trinity churchyard. Andrew, brother of Benjamin, was one of the most prominent members of the Huguenot colony in Boston, and a leader in the organization of the French Protestant Church. He escaped from France and lived for a time in Holland.

Andrew's name appears on the tax list of Boston, in 1691, and it is plain that he was a man of affairs in the town at that time. It is evident that he was possessed of quite an estate in France, and was fortunate enough to be able to take a goodly portion with him when he left his native land, and that he did not come empty handed to Boston. He was soon well established in a lucrative business and the owner of large real estate interests. His warehouse was on Butler Square, out of State Street, and his mansion, one of the finest in the town, surrounded by seven acres of admirably kept grounds, was on Tremont Street, opposite King's Chapel Burying Ground.

Andrew Faneuil was a positive, peculiar and interesting character. He had no children, but undertook the care of three of his brother Benjamin's children, two sons, Benjamin and Peter, and Mary Anne, their sister. He chose Benjamin, his nephew, for his heir, on the one condition that the young man should never marry. For a while all went well, but at last the young man surrendered to the charms of Miss Mary Cutler, and sacrificed his brilliant prospects on the altar of matrimony.

Andrew then turned to Benjamin's brother Peter, and he became the heir presumptive and business partner of his uncle. Benjamin prospered in business on his own account, three of his sisters married Boston citizens, a clergyman, a lawyer, and a prosperous merchant, so that the Faneuil family was well established in the business and social life in Boston.

Andrew Faneuil died in February, 1738, and had a very large and imposing funeral. The newspaper of that day said of it, "Last Monday, the corpse of Andrew Faneuil, Esq., whose death we mentioned in our last issue was honorably interred here, above 1100 persons of all ranks, beside the mourners, following the corpse, also a vast number of spectators were gathered on the occasion, at which time the half minute guns from on board several vessels were discharged. And 'tis supposed that as the gentleman's fortune was the greatest of any among us, so his funeral was the most generous and expensive of any that has been known here. By his will he left the warehouse in trust for the support of the ministers and elders of the French church, in Boston, which he staunchly supported." It was never known how much property he left, but he was considered the richest merchant

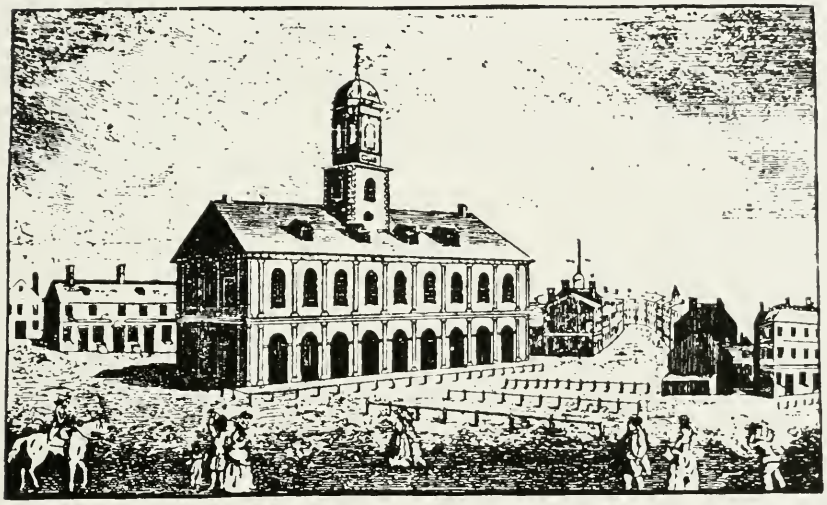
in the province, and Peter succeeded to the business and estate. He was at this time 38 years old, a large and corpulent man, of a genial disposition, fond of display and of good living and dispensed an open handed hospitality. As the French church waned, Peter Faneuil became worshipper at Trinity Church, where his brother-in-law, the Rev. Addington Davenport, was rector. In his circle of intimates he became known as the "Jolly Bachelor," which name he gave to one of his ships. His sister, Mary Anne, presided with grace over his fine establishment. While doing a very extensive business which demanded most of his time, still he took a great interest in the welfare of his neighbors, and in the future good of Boston. He saw that one of the great needs of the town was a local market, and to test the public sentiment in this respect he sent to the Board of Selectmen a petition signed by three hundred and forty prominent citizens. The petition stated that "Peter Faneuil, Esq. hath been generously pleased to offer at his own cost and charge to erect and build a noble and complete structure or edifice to be improved for a market for the sole use, benefit and advantage of the town provided that the town of Boston would pass a vote for that purpose and lay the same under such regulations as shall be thought necessary, and constantly support it for the said use." So the warrant for the town meeting was posted and the matter was discussed, pro and con, for there was great division of opinion. There were 727 ballots cast, and the yeas won by only seven votes. Thus near did Boston come to losing Faneuil Hall. But Peter Faneuil's plan included a public meeting hall, in addition to a market, and it was due to him that the people had a forum. In August, 1742, after two years spent upon the work, the Selectmen were informed that the market was finshed, and on Sept. 10th, the keys were delivered to the town authorities. There had been a great change in public opinion, and the citizens unanimously voted to "accept this most noble and generous benefaction for the use and intention they are designed for." It was given upon the motion of Thomas Hutchinson, later royal governor, "that in testimony of the town's gratitude to the said Peter Faneuil, Esq., and to perpetuate his memory, the hall over the market place be named Faneuil Hall." In response Mr. Faneuil said: "I hope what I have done will be for the service of the whole country." He little thought that those simple words were truly prophetic. By

vote, a full length portrait was painted of him, at the expense of the town, and placed in the hall, and the Faneuil coat of arms, so much prized by the merchant, was carved and gilded by Moses Deshon, bought by the town and likewise set up in the hall. The selectmen immediately began to meet in the new and more comfortable quarters provided for them, and selected one of their number "to purchase two pairs of brass candlesticks, with steel snuffers, and a poker for the town's use." The building given by Peter Faneuil was regarded as the greatest munificence the town of Boston had received. It was built of brick, two stories high, and in comparison with other buildings in the vicinity of Dock Square, presented a commanding appearance.

With the exception of the Old State House, all the buildings that surrounded Faneuil Hall have been replaced. But Faneuil Hall stands and will remain, as long as the power of patriotic citizens can retain it. The force of sentiment is seen in its preservation; and many generations yet unborn will early learn to cherish this New England forum. The original building was burned in the destructive fire of January 12th, 1761, and was rebuilt by money secured by a lottery, the tickets being signed by John Hancock. It was enlarged and much altered in appearance in 1805-6 under direction of Charles Bulfinch, who designed the State House on Beacon Hill, and in 1898 was practically rebuilt with steel walls, though the Bulfinch appearance was retained outside and within.

While only a small portion of the original hall given by Peter Faneuil remains, it is still Faneuil Hall with all its sacred associations. Peter Faneuil died the next year after his market and hall had been given to Boston, March 3, 1743. The market bell was tolled from one o'clock until the funeral was over, by town order, and every honor was paid to his memory. His obituary on the News Letter said: "He was a most generous spirit, whose hospitality to all and secret unbounded charity to the poor, made his life a public blessing, and his death a general loss to, and universally regretted by the inhabitants. The most public spirited man in all regards that ever yet appeared on the Northern continent of America." There was a public Memorial Service. John Lovell, master of the Boston Latin School, delivered the funeral oration in Faneuil Hall, and this was the beginning of such services there. From this common testimony to

his charity, he must have been entitled to large praise as a benefactor to the needy. He failed to make a will, and the estate which his uncle expressly withheld from his brother Benjamin now came into the custody of that individual, and a good share of it into his possession. The estate was soon scattered. The Faneuils during the Revolutionary days were among the Tories and fled either to England or Nova Scotia. The Faneuil family tomb is in the westerly corner of the Granary Burying Ground. Andrew and Peter Faneuil will



Faneuil Hall in 1791

ever be among the noted names of the Huguenot settlers in the new world. They represented in many respects the best traits of the Huguenots' character, and show what splendid material France lost through her misguided policy.

Whenever any great political or moral question has agitated the minds and hearts of the people, there has been a gathering at Faneuil Hall for a full and free discussion. In those stormy years preceding the Revolution, the patriots assembled within its walls and denounced British tyranny or promulgated resolutions and petitions to King George and his ministers. In 1776, during their occupation of Boston, the British held theatrical performances there. In January, 1776, a large audience had gathered to witness a farce

enacted by British soldiers and officers. It was entitled "The Blockade of Boston," probably written by some talented British officer and full of sarcasm on Washington and his Continentals, who had kept them closely penned up in the little town for several months. This evening, General Burgoyne, the loyalists' beau ideal of a soldier, had a leading part. The audience were greatly enjoying the play, when, right in the midst of their hilarity a British soldier rushed into the room and shouted "The Yankees are attacking our works on Bunker Hill." General Howe and his subordinates rushed from the hall and sped to Charlestown. The Continentals had burned several houses and captured five redcoats.

In the years preceding the Revolution, when it could not contain the crowds who sought admittance, the meeting frequently adjourned to the Old South Meeting House. It has been impartial in its hospitality. Anti-Slavery agitators and pro-slavery defenders have presented their arguments and aired their eloquence to the people assembled them. Here Robert Toombs, of Georgia, an Extremist on the slavery question, spoke a few years before the civil war, and was listened to with respect if not with approbation. He is said to have made the statement, that he "would call the roll of his slaves under the shadow of Bunker Hill." We do not believe he said that in Faneuil Hall. Previous to that visit a little incident occurred there which is worthy of record. In the early days of the Anti-Slavery excitement, a meeting of the citizens was called for the purpose of passing a series of resolutions on that subject. The object was to say something which would appease the South. Of the audience about two-thirds appeared to be on the side of the South, while the other third were in perfect earnest on the other side. Mr. Phillips took the stand and for some time kept his opponents at bay. In the course of his speech he made the declaration "that we now had more cause for alarm than our forefathers had at the time of the Revolution." This roused the majority, and they cried "No! No! No!" with all the lungs which they possessed and with a long continued shout. During this outburst Mr. Phillips stood as motionless as a statue, with no trace of excitement. When the fury of the majority had spent itself, or their strength was exhausted, Mr. Phillips treated them to these remarkable words: "James Otis thundered in this hall, when the King dared touch the pockets of the people. How much more terrible would have been that

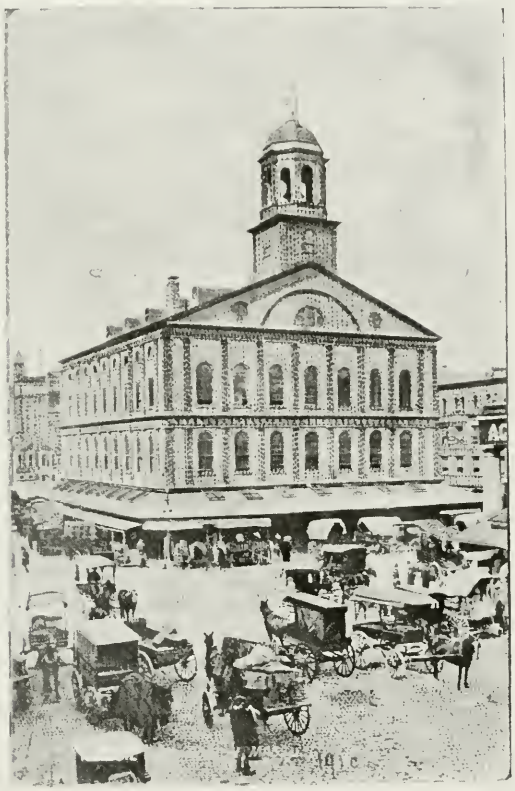
thunder if he had dared to put a padlock on their lips!" The storm was now transferred to the other branch of the audience, which was in no wise slow to enjoy the privilege. The speaker triumphed and finished his address undisturbed. Nearly every prominent man in the Nation has spoken from its platform and felt the inspiration of the place. The "Great expounder of the Constitution, Daniel Webster, the polished orator, Edward Everett, and the silver tongued statesman, James G. Blaine, have held great crowds spell bound by their eloquence. Its doors have always swung open to lovers of freedom, who have been exiled from their native lands. Here Louis Kossuth lectured and sold Hungarian bonds. The unfortunate have found a refuge within its walls, the crew and passengers of a vessel wrecked in Boston harbor, were quartered in Faneuil Hall until other provision could be made for them. The courtesies and welcome of Boston to distinguished foreigners, have been extended in this old Hall. Here the Marquis de Lafayette, loved and revered by all patriotic Americans, was received on the occasion of his visit in 1824, also the polished Count D'Estang. Daniel Webster had two great receptions in Faneuil Hall—one in 1838, a few years after his celebrated reply to Haynes—and again in 1852, a few months before his death at Marshfield.

In 1858, Jefferson Davis was the guest of the City of Boston and stood in the old hall. Three years later, he was the President of the Southern Confederacy. It has been the scene of banquets of fraternal and patriotic societies, where wit and music had full sway. But not all occasions have been festive and joyous. When the great men of the State or Nation have passed away, the citizens have assembled at Faneuil Hall, to do honor to their memory and to eulogize their worth. In the white heat of political campaigns, it has been the great rallying point for all parties, and its walls have resounded with cheers and applause. Its broad, free atmosphere takes no cognizance of the differences of religious or political creeds. It is the great Forum of Boston and Massachusetts, always open to the people, where they may meet and discuss any topics of vital interest. During the civil war many Union regiments were quartered here, and they started for the scene of conflict from under the shadow. To many of those noble fellows it was their last view of this Temple of Freedom.

In July, 1863, when the Draft Riot broke out in Boston,

the Forty-Fifth Massachusetts Regiment, which had recently returned from its service in the field, were quartered in the Hall, and did Provost Duty in its immediate vicinity and in other parts of the city.

The Annual Banquets of the City of Boston to its Medal



Faneuil Hall, 1916

Scholars were given in Faneuil Hall. The writer recalls the one given in July, 1855. In the North gallery were the girls dressed in white wearing their medals, and opposite in the South gallery were the boys wearing their Franklin Medals. On the platform were the Mayor and members of the city government, and the school committee and the orator of the

day. That year, the orator was the Honorable Edward Everett; the Mayor was Hon. Jerome V. C. Smith. The orchestra was in the gallery in rear of the clock. The exercises consisted of singing by the boys and girls, selections by the orchestra, an opening address by the mayor and an oration by the Hon. Edward Everett. Afterwards we filed past the mayor on the platform, who took us by the hand, gave us a pleasant greeting, and presented each with a small bunch of flowers, and we then took our seats at the banquet table, and with keen appetites we did full justice to the repast. In this pleasant and agreeable way, did the good old city express its approval of our conduct, and the whole scene was indelibly impressed upon our memories.

Faneuil Hall is 74 feet 3 inches long by 75 ft. 3 in. wide. It has no seats on the main floor and only a few in the gallery. Back of the platform is a large painting 16 by 30 feet, by Healy, "Webster replying to Haynes in the United States Senate, January 26th and 29th, 1830.

The speech delivered in 1830 was Webster's greatest. Below the painting there stands out bold and clear in gilt letters—his great peroration, "Liberty and Union, now and forever." In the half century following the hanging of the painting, these words have been the text of many eloquent speeches delivered in the hall. The painter was P. S. A. Healy, who took seven years to finish the task to his satisfaction. The painting is 16 by 30 feet. It contains the portraits of 130 senators and men of distinction. The scene is the old Senate Chamber, now used by the United States Supreme Court. In the Universal Exhibition, in 1855, the painting was awarded a Gold Medal. He offered the painting to the Federal Government for $50,000, and it was to be hung in the Old Senate Chamber. The Government being unwilling to pay him that sum, Boston secured it for $40,000.00.

There are numerous portraits of many noted Americans, painted by many artists. The hall is granted for such meetings as the city approves, and, although no rent is charged, the expenses amounting to $20 a day and $25 a night, are paid by those using the hall. Above the main hall is the Armory of the Ancient & Honorable Artillery Company.

Opposite the platform is a Clock which has marked the minutes of many an able speech by noted orators. It was presented to the city December 14th, 1856. The exercises in-

cident to the presentation took place in the hall at 7.30 in the evening. A large audience, of which the major portion was composed of the young contributors, was present, and Mayor John P. Bigelow presided over the ceremonies. The formal speech which conveyed the timepiece to the city was made by Josiah Quincy, the second of the name in local history, and Mayor Bigelow accepted the gift in behalf of the city.

Current account states that the names of each one of the contributors, together with the names of their respective parents, were all inclosed in a tin box which was deposited within the clock. This box, it was further stated, was to be opened 100 years from the date of the gift. Alderman Grant read the following verses by George W. Bungay. Mr. Grant said he did not write poetry, as he knew he could have furnished a better production.

TICKINGS FROM THE CLOCK.

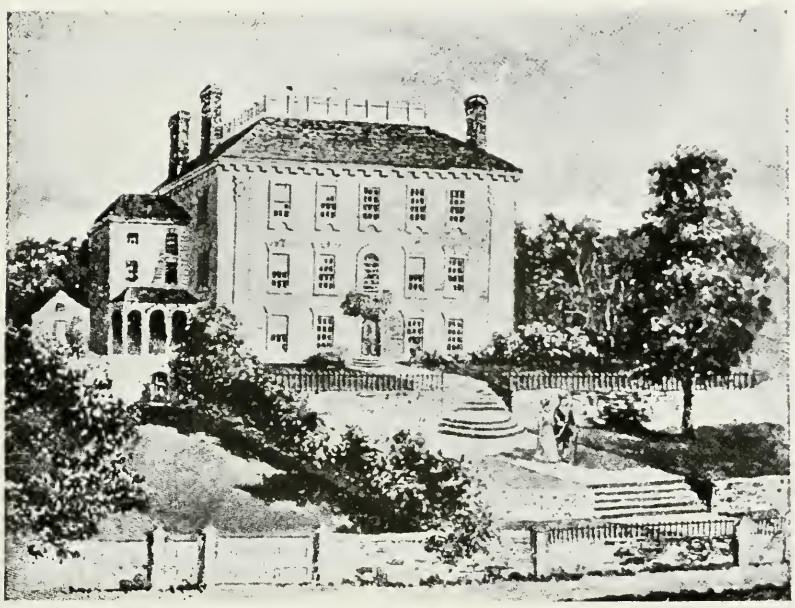
"Although my hands are on my face,
And all the time I go on tick,
There's nothing wicked in my case,
I never did a shabby trick.

A man wound up is sure to stop,
But wind me up and I will go,
But if you let me take a drop,
My honest face will fib I know.

When Spouters on the platform stand,
And kill too many of my hours,
I'll gently move my warning hands
And strike from them their borrowed flowers.

The eagle which is seen over the clock once adorned the walls of the local United States Bank, which was located at No. 32 State Street. When the bank was abolished in the time of Andrew Jackson this particular "national bird" also found its way to the historic interior of Faneuil Hall. The old Grasshopper Weather Vane, which swirls above the cupola of Faneuil Hall, has had quite a varied history. It was made and put in place November 1, 1742 by Shem Brown, a well-known brass worker in those days. It was

thrown off by an earthquake which took place November 19th, 1755. It was again thrown down at a fire January 13th, 1761, and replaced June 28th, 1763, having been repaired by a lottery fund. After having swung there until 1862, nearly 100 years, it was taken down, repaired and replaced. It has been a weather index to many generations of



The Faneuil Home, Tremont Street, Opposite King's Chapel Burying Ground

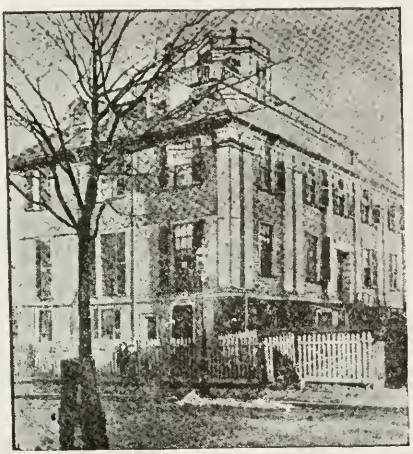
Bostonians. May it long swing there in sunshine and in storm—a memento of the "good old Colony days."

We cannot close this article more appropriately than in the words of Lafayette, which were uttered on his visit in 1825 to Boston and to Faneuil Hall.

"The City of Boston, the Cradle of Liberty; may Faneuil Hall ever stand a monument to teach the world that resistance to oppression is a duty, and will, under true republican institutions become a blessing."

THE SHIRLEY EUSTIS HOUSE

This famous Colonial Mansion is now No. 31 Shirley Street and not far from the Hugh O'Brien Schoolhouse, Dudley Street. It is the only Colonial Executive Mansion now in existence. In its day it was the most palatial house in Roxbury. It was built by Governor Shirley and here he, and Governor Eustis, who occupied it later, ever dispensed a most generous hospitality. William Shirley was the son of a London merchant and a graduate of Cambridge University, England. His superior talents and address, attracted great notice in England, and through the influece of Sir Robert



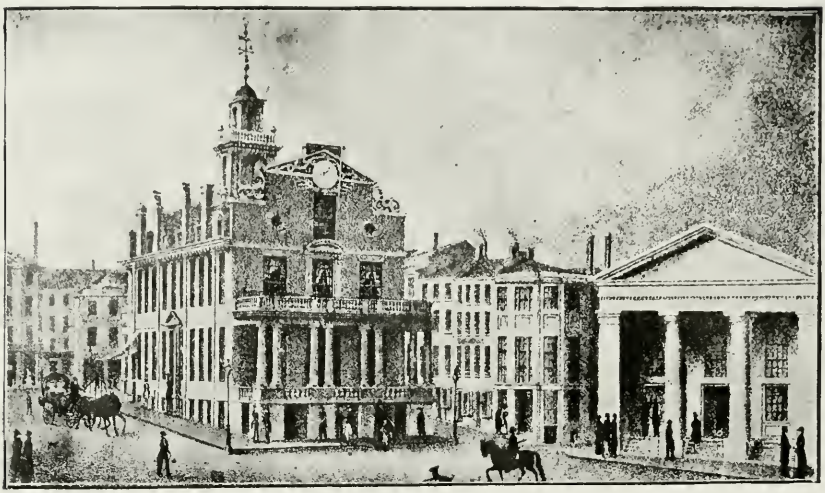
The Shirley Eustis House, Roxbury

Walpole, and of the Duke of Newcastle, he secured the position of Governor of Massachusetts Bay Colony, and served in that capacity from 1741 to 1758. In 1754, when Franklin was in Boston, he had several interviews with Governor Shirley, who communicated to him the "profound secret," the "grand design" of taxing the Colonies by act of Parliament. Shirley was a staunch Loyalist, and in 1756 advised the Ministry to impose a "Stamp Act in America." After the defeat of General Braddock by the French and Indians in 1756, at the battle of Monongahela, Washington, then 24 years of age, was a guest at this mansion. He came

as the bearer of sad news, to inform the Governor of the death of his son, who was slain in the battle. Washington was much noticed and kindly received by the Governor, with whom he remained ten days, mixing constantly in society, visiting Castle William and other objects worthy of notice in the vicinity, little dreaming that it would some day become the theatre of his first great military achievement. In writing to his friend, Fairfax, Washington says: "I have had the honor of being introduced to several Governors, especially Mr. Shirley, whose character and appearance have perfectly charmed me. His every word and action discover in him the gentleman and the politician." In 1756, grave charges were preferred against the Governor, while holding command as a Major General. He was triumphantly vindicated and in 1758 was appointed Governor of the Bahama Islands. In 1769 he returned to Boston from the Bahama Islands, and for the remainder of his life resided in his former mansion in Roxbury. He died in 1771, a poor man, and was interred in the King's Chapel Burying Ground, of which edifice he had laid the foundation stone.

Francis Drake, the historian, thus describes this fine old mansion: "On Shirley Street, some 25 rods north of Eustis Street, is the house built by Governor Shirley, about 1750. Its oaken frame, and other materials, even the brick, which were of three different sizes, were said to have been brought from England at great expense. The Governor called it 'Shirley Place.' It was a large, square, two-story, hip-roof structure, with a stone basement, having a piazza at each end, and was surmounted by an obsrvatory inclosed with a railing. It had a double front, each front being approached by a flight of stone steps, having an iron railing of an antique pattern. As you enter the north front, you find yourself in a spacious hall of grand proportion. To the right a broad staircase leads to a balcony extending around to the left, where two doors open into a guest chamber, in which Washington, Franklin, Lafayette, Daniel Webster and many other celebrated men have, from time to time, been accommodated. From this balcony the musicians entertained the company seated at the table in the hall. To the right and left of the hall are doors leading into the reception room, parlor, etc. The small west room, which was Madame Eustis' room, when Governor Eustis took possession of the house, contained a secretary which was the gift of Dr. Joseph

Warren, when her husband studied medicine with him. On the Dudley Street front is a small hall paved with marble. Upon great occasions, the two halls were thrown into one, by opening folding doors between." The fireplaces were ornamented with Dutch tiles, but when the house was sold in 1867, it was completely denuded of these, by those modern Goths and Vandals, curiosity and relic hunters. Speaking of this fine mansion, Lafayette wrote to a friend: "One



Old State House, 1830

could drive a coach and six up its hospitable stairs." The house was made a barrack for our soldiers in 1775 and greatly injured thereby. Colonel Asa Whitcomb's regiment marched from there to Dorchester Heights, March 4, 1776. The house passed through various hands before it became the property of another chief executive of the Commonwealth, Governor William Eustis, who lived in it during his term of office. Governor Eustis was a graduate of Harvard College and studied medicine under Dr. Joseph Warren. He was professionally engaged with the patriots at the battle of Lexington, and served as surgeon throughout the Revolutionary War. In 1798 he was elected to the Massachusetts Legislature, and thenceforth devoted himself to politics. He became a member of Congress, Secretary of War, Minister

to Holland and Governor of Massachusetts from 1823 to 1825, dying while in office, at the age of 71. One of his distinguished visitors at this old mansion, was General Lafayette, in 1824, who was then in America as the guest of the nation. They were old companions in the army, and the occasion was one of great joy and enthusiasm to these old veterans. The Governor gave a grand banquet in honor of Lafayette. There were between 30 and 40 guests, the Governor taking his position at the head of the table, with General Lafayette on his right and General Dearborn on his left, Ex-Governor Brooks, second on his right and the Lieutenant Governor and the Council, the Military Staff and other guests on either side.

After Governor Eustis's death, his wife, a most elegant and accomplished woman, who survived him many years, would suffer none of his things to be moved from their accustomed places. His cane and tobacco box occupied their usual corner of the hall, just as they were wont to do forty years before, and as though the arrival of the master of the house was momentarily expected. In 1867, soon after the death of Mrs. Eustis, the famous old estate was cut up into house lots and the old mansion was moved 29 or 30 feet from its original foundations. The Shirley-Eustis house and grounds now include 12,000 square feet of land.

The Old Province House

This famous old building stood nearly opposite the Old South Church. In its day it was the most elegant and costly house erected in Boston since the founding of the town by John Winthrop. It was built by Peter Sargeant in 1679 for his residence. He came from London and became a very wealthy man. After his death it was occupied by his widow until 1715. The next year the Provincial Legislature voted to purchase the mansion and the heirs of Mr. Sargent passed the deed to the Treasurer of the Province, the Treasurer of the County of Suffolk and the Treasurer of the Town of Boston. At this time it was a most magnificent building. No pains or expense was spared to make it not only elegant but spacious and convenient.

It stood somewhat back on its ample lot, and had the most pleasant and agreeable surroundings of any house in the town. This stately building fronted on that part of Washington Street (formerly known as Marlborough Street) opposite the head of Milk Street, with a handsome lawn in front, ornamented with large trees which shaded the house and added much to its imposing appearance. The house was built of brick, three stories in height, with a high roof and lofty cupola, the whole being surmounted by the figure of an Indian Chief, with a drawn bow and arrow, the handiwork of Deacon Shem Drowne of the North End, who made the grasshopper vane for the cupola of Faneuil Hall. The house was approached over a stone pavement and a high flight of massive stone steps and through a magnificent doorway which would compare favorably with those of the palaces of Europe. From the balcony over the generous entrance, the viceroys of the Province were accustomed to harangue the people or read proclamations. During the time of the Provincial Government, after its purchase, it was used by the Governors, but after the expulsion of the British from Boston in 1776, it was converted into accommodations for officers in the transaction of public business. Much has been written of the days when it was the residence of the Royal Governors. It was the social centre of the town, where routs and balls were held, where often gathered gay cavaliers in satin and velvet, and fair women resplendent in brocade and damask. One writer says: "The wise, the witty, gay and learned, the leaders in authority, in thought and in fashion, the flower of the old Provincial life, trouped in full tide through the wainscotted and tapes-

tried rooms, and up the grand old winding staircase, with its carved balustrade and square landing places, to do honor to the hospitality of the martial Shute, the courtly Burnet, the gallant Pownal or the haughty Bernard. When Pownal arrived in 1757, as Royal Governor of the Province, opposition to the British Crown had divided the citizens into rival factions and the loyalists flocked to the Province House, where they held a miniature Court."

The same writer whom we have already quoted says: "The supporters of the Governor in gold lace, scarlet coats and powdered wigs loitered on the level lawn in front of the Governor's residence and smiled contemptuously on the soberly clad patriots, who muttered maledictions upon Pownal and lavish expenditures as they passed by."

Bernard succeeded Pownal and had a stormy administration of nine years, for they were the days of the "Writs of Assistance," the "Stamp Act" and the introduction of British redcoats to overawe the Colonists.

In 1775, Sir William Howe occupied the Province House, and once again it was the scene of social splendor. Minuets were danced there during the winter of 1775-1776, and many fair Tory maidens of Boston felt highly honored to be partners of Earl Percy, General Burgoyne, Sir Henry Clinton and the noble host, Sir William Howe. The young bloods made a brilliant appearance with their white, blue and scarlet coats, lavishly trimmed with gold and silver lace, embroidered waistcoats, with gold kneebands, white silk stockings and high heeled shoes with great gold buckles.

Sir William Howe gave a grand ball a few weeks before he and his army sailed away from Boston. It was a masquerade ball and was attended by officers of the British army and the leading Royalists of Boston. There was distress in Boston among the poor at this time owing to the siege, and a general gloom was over the town, for the lines of Washington were tightly drawn. Sir William Howe thought he could hide this condition of things by a grand festivity. Hawthorne in his "Tales of the Province House" gives us quite a full description of this affair. The Americans were to be held up to ridicule by one group, who were dressed up in old regimental costumes, which looked as if they might have been worn in the old wars, they were so weather worn and shabby. The American Generals, George Washington, Gates, Lee, Putnam and other officers of the patriot

army, were absurdly represented. As one said, "they looked more like scarecrows than anything else." An interview between these warriors and the elegantly attired and pompous British commander caused great merriment. While this burlesque was in progress a parade of citizens passed by the house with muffled drums and wailing trumpets, which so annoyed Sir William Howe that he went out and ordered it to disperse. Another feature of this last British ball in Boston was the representation of the Puritan Governors, Winthrop, Endicott, Vane, Dudley, Haynes, Bellingham and Leverett, coming down the grand staircase. Some thought it was a plot, but it was only a part of a very stupid play. Other Governors also appeared and the later ultra Royal Governors, and last the figure of General Howe, about to leave the Province. Howe, in a state of great excitement, clenching his hands, stamping his feet and cursing as he passed out. In less than one month from that time he really passed out of that house, never to return, and, probably in the same frame of mind as had been depicted in caricature. When the Governor left the house that morning in March, the key of the house was given to Esther Dudley, the housekeeper, who remained there several years and faithful in her adherence to the King. She always thought the British would return and recapture the Colony, and it is said she often climbed to the cupola, searching for a British fleet coming up the harbor or for an army of Redcoats. But the people of the town felt differently and their by-word was, "When the golden Indian on the Province House shall shoot his arrow, then look for the Royal Governor again." That Indian figure which stood on the cupola is now in the possession of the Massachusetts Historical Society.

When the British troops and their Tory supporters sailed away from Boston the great social glory of the Old Province House forever departed. The State of Massachusetts used the building until the completion of the new State House on Beacon Hill.

In 1796, the Province House was sold to John Peck, but the bargain fell through on account of the inability of the purchaser to make payments and in 1799 the whole estate was reconveyed to the State and subsequently was granted by the State to the Massachusetts General Hospital, whose Trustees, in 1817, leased it to David Greenough, Esq., for

the term of ninety-nine years. Subsequent to this last date this aristocratic and splendid old mansion was put to nearly all sorts of purposes. Its stately trees were cut down soon after the property was leased to Mr. Greenough. Then a row of brick houses and stores was built upon the line of the street, excluding the house from view until approached through a narrow archway leading to the front door, and to the houses which had been erected in the rear of the Estate.

In 1851 the whole building was changed in appearance: the interior having been remodelled for the purpose of accommodating a company of vocalists, and it was at this time that the outside was covered with a coat of yellow mastice. At half-past five o'clock one October morning, the Province House was destroyed by fire, leaving only the walls standing. A part of the old wall forms one side of the present Old South Theatre Building. The fire, which originated in the upper story, was supposed to be the work of an incendiary. For some years prior to its destruction it was used as a place of entertainment.

There may be some old Bostonians living today who will remember the old Minstrel Company, known as "Morris Brothers Pell and Trowbridge," and the crowded audiences in the little hall of the Old Province House. Extensive and complete repairs were made and the Boston Tavern is on the old site. Province Street and Court from School Street to Bromfield Street were originally avenues leading to the stables of the Old Province House.

THE OLD FEATHER STORE

To many old citizens of Boston, this old building, built in 1680, was a familiar landmark. It stood in Dock Square, on the corner of North Street and Market Square, and was built by Thomas Stanbury to replace a building destroyed by fire in 1679. For those days, that fire was as great as that of 1872. The fire started on North Street and raged

The Feather Store, Corner North Street

for 12 hours and levelled every building from Blackstone Street to Liberty Square and caused a loss of $1,000,000.

This old building, because of its many gables and the projecting upper stories and its almost triangular shape, conforming to the lot of land on which it stood was often called the "Cocked Hat." Simpson Brothers did an extensive business in feathers there, hence the name of "Feather Store." The old building was demolished in 1860.

"From Historic Prints—published by the State Street Trust Company."

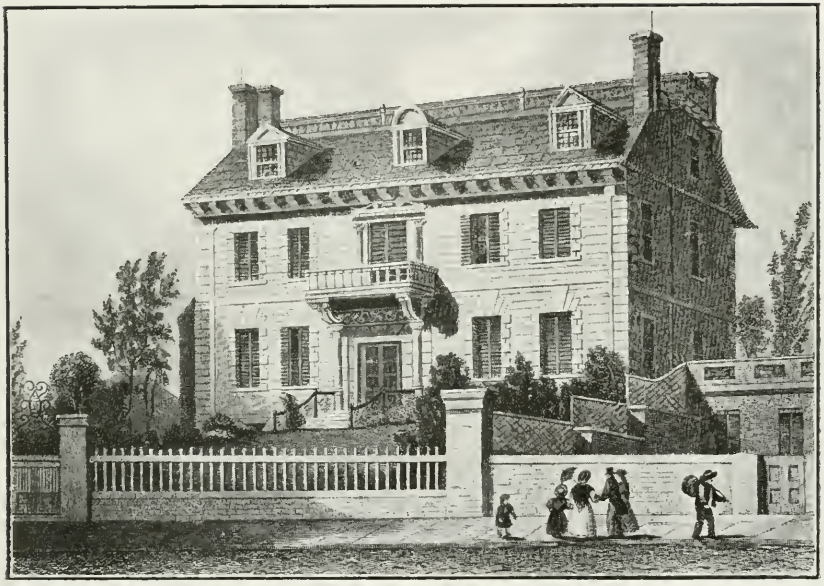
Bowdoin Square was at one time a very aristocratic section of the city. The cut represents the Bulfinch House, and dates back to 1715. It was built by Dr. Thomas Bulfinch, on land given to him by his wife's father, John Coleman, a

Bulfinch House, Bowdoin Square

well-known and wealthy Boston Merchant. Charles Bulfinch, the architect of the State House and many other notable buildings in the town, was a grandson of Dr. Bulfinch and was born in this house in 1763. A granite structure, known as the Coolidge Building, now occupies the site of the old house.

On a bronze tablet on the front of a brown stone building on Beacon Street, near the State House, may be read the following words:

Here stood the residence of John Hancock
A prominent and patriotic merchant of Boston
The first signer of the
Declaration of Independence
and First Governor of Massachusetts
under the State Constitution



John Hancock House

This splendid old mansion, which many of the older Bostonians will remember, was a rare specimen of colonial architecture, and well fitted of itself, and by its situation, to be the official dwelling of the Governors of this Commonwealth, as was proposed a few years previous to its demolition. Up to the middle of the last century, it stood practically as left by Hancock, and many of the furnishings and appointments were of his time. The house was built in 1737 by Thomas Hancock, a wealthy Boston bookseller,

and occupied by him until his death in 1764. It was considered the finest house of the colonial period in Boston. It was built of stone, and the original indenture "or specification for the work, is still in existence.

Hancock imported from London, the window glass and wall paper for his new house, and trees and shrubs for his new gardens which would surround the house. All the seeds that were purchased, however, save the asparrow grass, refused to thrive in America. The Hancock House was located, approximately, in the centre of a square, bounded by Beacon Street in front, Derne Street in the rear, Joy Street on the right, and Bowdoin Street on the left."

John Hancock

Dorothy Quincy Hancock

Hancock's cows once browsed happily, where now rises the State House, with its glittering dome. "When Thomas Hancock conceived the idea of building a home for himself in the outskirts of the town, the good people of Salem marveled at the man's desire to get so far out in the fields." The house overlooked the Common, "the cow pasture." The main part of the house had a frontage of 58 feet. There was an east wing, presumably of wood, which was used by John Hancock as a ball room. This wing was

removed to Allen Street in 1818. The principal features of the facade, were the broad front door at the head of a flight of stone steps, garnished with pillars, and an ornamental door head, and the ornamental central window over it.

The high gambrel roof with dormer windows showed a carved balcony railing, enclosing its upper portion. The interior comprised a nobly paneled hall, having a broad staircase, with carved and twisted balusters, which divided the house in the middle, and extended through on both stories, from front to rear.

On the landing, part way up the staircase, was a circular headed window looking out upon the garden, with a broad and capacious window seat. On the entrance floor at the right of the hall, was the great dining room, sixteen by twenty-five feet, elaborately paneled from floor to ceiling. Until the widening of Beacon Street, the house stood well back from the street, on ground elevated above it. At that time the mansion had two large wings, the one on the east, containing, as we have already said, a large and spacious ball room.

The west wing was appropriated to the kitchen and other domestic purposes. Beyond the west wing was the coach house and the stables. The gardens and fruit tree nurseries were still further in the rear, extending up the side of the then existing Beacon Hill, now covered by the annex to the State House. John Hancock seems to have been a great favorite with his wealthy uncle, who bequeathed to him the handsome sum of fifty thousand pounds sterling, and upon the death of Lydia Hancock, the widow of Thomas, this elegant and stately mansion became the property of John Hancock.

Hancock was a most active and prominent figure in the Revolutionary period and notwithstanding his great wealth he threw himself heart and soul into that great struggle for freedom, and in those days this old mansion witnessed many scenes of turmoil and festivity. During the occupation of Boston by the British in 1775-1776, some of the British soldiers considered the property of so famous a rebel, as common spoil, and they broke into the house and stole many articles of value. It should be said to the credit of General Gage, the British Commander, that as soon as he heard of this wanton act he sent a guard to protect the

property and prevent further depredations. It was well known that at this time there was no love lost between Gage and Hancock. It is possible that when General Gage first came to the Province he had been entertained by Hancock in this almost royal mansion. If so, he must have retained a pleasant and most agreeable memory of Madame Dorothy Quincy Hancock, the bright and charming hostess. The house was occupied during the greater part of the siege of Boston by Lord Percy of the British Regulars. General Clinton also occupied the house a portion of the time during the siege, and after the battle of Bunker Hill it was used as a hospital for the redcoats wounded in that fight. When the siege was raised and Hancock returned to his home he was still the lavish and generous entertainer and nearly all of the great men of that day sat around his board and partook of his hospitality.

Count D'Estaing, the French Naval Commander, and his officers, made a call upon the Hancocks, which was in the nature of a "surprise party," but Dorothy Q. was equal to the occasion. There is no doubt but that "the new Hancocks were a gay set and they gave receptions and balls without number to the aristocracy of the town, and many a noted Bostonian passed back and forth through the doorway of this old and stately mansion. Here the genial and noble Lafayette was entertained. After the war when John Hancock became the Governor of the State, the official ceremonies at 'Uncle Tom's House' were more numerous and courtly than anything of this kind since that time. Here Washington, the first President of the United States, paid that solemn 'return call' to the first Governor of Massachusetts in 1789."

One of the last and hardest fights which Hancock made as Governor was for state sovereignty. In September, 1793, only a month before he died, he said to the Legislature, "I have in this case done no more than my duty, as a servant of the people. I never did and I never will deceive them while I have life and strength in their service."

Three weeks later the city was shocked by the news that "Governor Hancock is dead." A great military parade that was in preparation on the Common immediately broke up. His remains laid in state for one week in the hall of his mansion on Beacon Street. Thousands of people, rich and poor, some from a long distance, gazed upon the face of

the patriot who fought so valiantly for their rights, and braved the wrath of an angry King and Parliament, knowing that if the cause of Liberty failed in America, he and his compatriot, Samuel Adams, would meet the doom of traitors. His funeral took place October 14, 1793, and was a most imposing one, being a mile and a half long, with a large military escort. The procession starting from the Hancock House on Beacon Street, crossed the Common to Boylston Street, down Boylston Street to the Liberty Pole, on the corner of Washington and Essex Streets, thence to the Old State House around which they passed into Court Street, into Tremont Street to the Granary Burying Ground. As the procession moved from Court Street to the Burying Ground, minute guns continued firing. When John Hancock was laid to rest the military fired three volleys over his grave.

Samuel Adams succeeded John Hancock as Governor of the Commonwealth and at the opening of the General Court in January said: "It having pleased the Supreme Being since your last meeting, in His holy Providence to remove from this transitory life, our late excellent Governor Hancock, the multitude of his surviving fellow citizens, who have often given strong testimonials of their approbation of his important services, while they drop a tear, may certainly profit by the reflection of his virtues and patriotic example."

For over sixty years after the death of Hancock it was one of the finest and best preserved relics of Revolutionary times to be found in Boston or elsewhere, and viewed with great interest by the thousands who annually made pilgrimages to this historic town. In 1859 a measure was reported to the Legislature by an influential committee, proposing the purchase of the house by the state, for the Governor's house, but the project failed. About that time there was a scheme to remove and re-erect the house in another location, but that project also failed. There was great regret among all classes of citizens at the destruction of this famous house. Had some of them shown a little more zeal and earnestness it might have been standing today. "The old material was sold to relic hunters and others of a more practical turn of mind, for whatever price could be obtained for it. Among the purchasers was the late Moses Kimball, who secured among other souvenirs,

the front door of the old mansion, pieces of the ornamental balustrade, which surrounded a little portico above the door, and some lantern holders. Years later, these mementoes came into the possession of the Bostonian Society. The door is a massive affair of its kind, built of hard wood and strongly panelled by a workman who knew his craft well. The library lock on the inside indicates that Governor Hancock, as well as his uncle Thomas Hancock, who built the house, were more or less apprehensive of intruders at a time when such visitors would not be welcome." This famous door no longer swings in its honored place but reposes quietly in the basement of the Old State House.

The Stamp Act, 1765-1766

This "Stamp Act" to raise sixty thousand pounds was the prelude to the American Revolution, which cost England one hundred million pounds and the loss of her American Colonies. When young George the Third ascended the English throne in 1760, William Pitt, then at the head of the Ministry, went to St. James Palace and presented a sketch of an address to be made by the Monarch at a meeting of the Privy Council. The minister was politely informed that a speech was already prepared, and that every preliminary was arranged. Pitt then perceived what many had already suspected, that the Earl of Bute, an especial favorite of the young King's mother, was to be the leading spirit of his administration. The pride of the great statesman was touched and he left the royal presence with clouded brow.

Bute came to the English Court as a needy adventurer and was utterly lacking in the qualities which make a statesman, but the young King chose him as his counsellor and guide, instead of the wise and sagacious Pitt, who had done so much for the glory of England during the reign which had just closed. Like Rehoboam, George "forsook the counsel which the old men gave him, and took counsel with the young men that were brought up with him, that stood before him." It was the bad counsel of his advisers that led King George to pursue the arbitrary course towards the American Colonies and that finally led to the dismemberment of the British Empire, and the independence of the Americans. The people at home and in the Colonies had a high regard for Pitt, and the King lost, at the very beginning of his reign, much of their favor by his ill advised course. Bute counselled the King to bring the American Colonies into absolute subjection, by force, if necessary, and also to change or abrogate their Charters. Acting under Bute's advice the King sent agents over the sea to travel in the Colonies, collect information about the character and temper of the people, and bring together other facts and conclusions that would enable the ministry to judge what regulations and alterations might be safely made. Those

agents performed their work in a very superficial manner and their erroneous conclusions led to trouble. The Colonists penetrated through their thin disguise as travelers. They knew that a movement was on foot to annul the Royal Charters, and the determination of King George and his ministers to force upon them an odious system of taxation. Writs of

The Liberty Tree

assistance were granted to officers of customs, giving them power to enter the stores and houses of the people in pursuit of their vocation. The Colonists rose en masse to resist this measure. The cherished theory of English liberties was that "Every man's house was his castle," which the meanest deputy, of a deputy's deputy, might not enter at will. Massachusetts, and especially Boston, was looked upon by the King and his ministers as the head centre of Sedition, so it was here that the infamous units were first issued.

Their legality was questioned, and the matter brought be-

fore a Court held in the Old Town Hall in Boston, in February, 1761. The fiery James Otis denounced these Writs as "the worst instruments of arbitrary power, the most destructive of English liberty and the fundamental law." Referring to the arbitrary power of the writs, he said: "A man's house is his castle, and whilst he is quiet, he is as well guarded as a prince in his palace. This writ, if it should be declared legal, would totally annihilate this privilege. Custom House officers may enter our houses when they please; we are commanded to permit this entry. Their menial servants may enter, may break locks, bars and everything in their way, and whether they break through malice, or revenge, no man, no Court may inquire."

These powerful words of James Otis stirred the hearts of the people throughout the provinces. The speech and the event constitute the opening scene of resistance in America to British oppression. When the orator exclaimed, "To my dying day I will oppose with all the power and faculties God has given me all such instruments of slavery on one hand and of villainy on the other as this writ of assistance," the independence of the Colonies was then proclaimed. When Otis left the Town Hall that day he was greeted with loud huzzas from the populace, who threw up their hats in token of their delight, and from the day of that remarkable event, this unflinching patriot, then thirty-six years of age, led the patriots in the Massachusetts Assembly, and the famous Tory leader, Timothy Ruggles, remarked: "A faction will arise out of this that will shake the province to its foundation."

Governor Bernard of Massachusetts cautioned the new Legislature not to heed "declamatory leading to promote a suspicion of the civil rights of the people being in danger. Such harangues might well suit in the reign of Charles, the First, but in the time of the Georges, they are groundless and unjust." At that very moment, this double dealing, perfidious official, was secretly promoting the scheme of the London Board of Trade for taking away the Colonial Charters. Mr. Otis was not permitted to live to see the formal declaration of independence by the Continental Congress. His career was ended before the tempest of the Revolution burst upon the land, by a blow from a bludgeon, in the hands of a Custom House Officer whom he had offended. The blow caused a concussion of the brain, which clouded his brilliant intellect for the remainder of his days. From this time the

Colonies prepared for the impending conflict with the British ministry, with faith in their ultimate triumph because their cause was just. In March, 1765, Parliament, by a unanimous vote, decided that they had a right to tax America without representation. The Massachusetts Assembly retorted by voting that the imposition of taxes and duties by the Parliament of Great Britain upon a people who are not represented in the House of Commons is absolutely irreconcilable with their rights. That no man can justly take the property of another without his consent. This was the universal sentiment throughout the colonies. "If we are taxed without our consent, if we are not represented in the body taxing us, and we must submit, then we are slaves." The King, his Ministers and Parliament having decided to tax America, the Stamp Act was to be the test. It provided that every skin or piece of vellum, or parchment, or sheet, or piece of paper used for legal purposes, such as bills, bonds, notes, leases, policies of insurance, marriage licenses, and a great many other documents, in order to be valid, in courts of law, was to be stamped, and sold by public officers, appointed for the purpose at prices which levied a stated tax on every such document. The bill made offences against its provisions, cognizable in the Courts of Admiralty. To the odiousness of the tax itself was added the provision for its collection by arbitrary power, under the decrees of British judges. When the Stamp Act, framed to proper order by a Commissioner, came up for debate, Charles Townshend, the most eloquent man in the House of Commons, in the absence of Pitt, made a speech in defence of it, which was concluded in the following words: "And now, those Americans, children planted by our care, nourished by our indulgence until they have grown to a degree of strength and opulence, and protected by our arms, will they grudge to contribute their mite to retrieve us from the heavy weight of that burden which we lie under?" Colonel Barre, who had shared with Wolfe the dangers and fatigues of the campaign against Quebec, and who, having lived in America, knew the people well, instantly sprang to his feet, and with eyes flashing with indignation and with outstretched arm, delivered an unpremeditated phillipic of extraordinary power, in which most wholesome truths were uttered. He exclaimed with scorn, "They planted by your care!" No, your oppression planted them in America! They fled from your

tyranny to a then uncultivated and inhospitable country, where they exposed themselves to almost all the hardships to which human nature is liable, and among others to the cruelties of a savage foe, the most subtle, and I will take it upon me to say, the most formidable of any people on the face of God's earth; yet, actuated by principles of true English liberty, they met all hardships with pleasure, compared with those they suffered in their own country from the hands of those who should have been friends. 'They 'nourished by your indulgence.' They grew up by your neglect of them! As soon as you began to care for them, that care was exercised in sending persons to rule over them in one department and another, who were, perhaps, the deputy of deputies of some member of this House, sent to spy out their liberties, to misrepresent their actions, and prey upon them; men, whose behavior, on many occasions has caused the blood of those Sons of Liberty' to recoil within them; men, promoted to the highest seats of justice; some, who to my knowledge, were glad, by going to a foreign country, to escape being brought to justice in their own. They protected by your arms.' They have nobly taken up arms in your defence, have exerted a valor amid their constant and laborious industry, for the defence of a country, whose frontier was drenched in blood, whilst the interior parts yielded all its little savings to your emoluments. However superior to me in general knowledge and experience, the respectable body of this House may be, I claim to know more of America than most of you, having seen and been conversant in that country. The people, I believe, are as truly loyal as any subject the king has, but a people jealous of their liberties, and who will vindicate them if they should be violated."

There was silence in the House of Commons as Colonel Barre sat down, and amazement depicted on the faces of the members, for several minutes after this bold and impassioned address. But in the opinion of those members the British Government was strong and the Colonies were weak. "Might made right," and the bill passed the House, February 27, 1765, by a vote of 250 yeas to 50 nays. There was practically no opposition in the House of Lords, that aristocratic body had no sympathy with the common people of the American Colonies. On March 25, the King signed the bill and it became a law. A few days afterwards the mon-

arch was crazy. It was the first of four attacks of the dreadful malady of insanity which affected him during his long life and finally deprived him of the power to rule. The night the act was passed, Benjamin Franklin, who was in London, wrote Charles Thompson, afterwards Secretary of the Continental Congress, "The sun of liberty is set; the Americans must light the lamps of industry and economy." The news of the passage of the Act and Colonel Barre's eloquent defence of the Americans, reached the Colonies at the same time. Barre was applauded and his address printed and widely circulated. The Act was everywhere denounced by the people who gathered in excited groups in all the cities and villages. The pulpit thundered condemnation in the name of a righteous God, the newspapers teemed with sedition essays, and the Colonial Assemblies rang with rebellious utterances. The Stamp Act was to go into effect November 1, 1765. The patriots of Boston determined that the Stamp Distributors should not exercise the duties of their office. Andrew Oliver, Secretary of the Province of Massachusetts, was appointed "Stamp Master" of Boston The Sons of Liberty showed their resentment by hanging him in effigy on the Liberty Tree, which stood on what is now the corner of Washington and Essex Streets. There a great multitude gathered in the early twilight. In their presence it was taken down, laid on a bier, and borne by the populace through the streets to the Old State House under the Council Chamber. The crowd shouted, "Death to the man who offers a piece of stamped paper to sell," and rushing towards Oliver's house, they there beheaded the effigy, and doubtless would have killed Oliver could they have found him, but he made his escape. He believed his life was in danger and resigned his office the next morning. The cowardly Governor, Bernard, after issuing a proclamation for the discovery and arrest of the rioters, fled to Castle William. Massachusetts invited all the Colonies to send delegates to a convention to be held in New York and twenty-seven delegates met representing nine Colonies. Timothy Ruggles of Boston, a rank Tory, presided over the Convention, and John Cotton was appointed Secretary. That body continued in session fourteen days and the whole subject of the rights and grievances of the Colonies was fully discussed. John Conger of New York was deputied to write a "Declaration of Rights," Robert R. Livingston of New

York, prepared the "Petition to the King," and James Otis of Massachusetts wrote a "Memorial to Both Houses of Parliament." These were adopted and have ever been regarded as able state papers. They embodied the principles that governed the men of the Revolution, that broke out ten years later. On November 1, 1765, the "Stamp Act" became a law in America. Everyone saw that in the state of the public mind at that time, the enforcement was an impossibility, yet it was in existence, for as a law of the British realm, no legal instrument of writing was valid, without a stamp, but on November 1st, there was no person commissioned to sell a stamp, for all appointed had resigned. The Governors had taken an oath to see that the law was enforced, but what could they do, the people were their masters.

"The first of November was Friday. "It was black Friday in America. The morning was ushered in by the tolling of bells. Minute guns were fired as if a funeral procession was passing. Flags were hoisted at half mast, as if there had been a national bereavement. There were orations and sermons appropriate to the occasion. The press spoke out boldly. As none but stamped paper was legal and the people were determined not to use it, all business was suspended. The courts were closed, marriages ceased, vessels lay idle in the harbor, social and commercial relations were paralyzed. But the Americans held in their hands a powerful retaliatory measure which they did not hesitate to use.

The commerce between England and America had become very important. Some New York merchants proposed to strike a deadly blow at that trade. They entered into an agreement not to import from England certain enumerated articles after the 1st of January next ensuing. The merchants of Boston and Philadelphia entered into a similar agreement, and retail merchants agreed not to buy or sell goods imported after January 1st. In this way England was made to feel some of the miseries she had inflicted upon the Colonies. The patriotic people co-operated with the merchants.

Domestic manufactures were commenced in almost every family. Forty or fifty young ladies, calling themselves "Daughters of Liberty," met at the house of Rev. Dr. Morehead of Boston, with their spinning wheels and spun two hundred and thirty skeins of yarn in a day. There were up-

wards of one hundred spinners in Dr. Morehead's Society.

"Within a month," wrote a gentleman from Newport, Rhode Island, some time afterwards, "four hundred and eighty-seven yards of cloth and thirty-six pairs of stockings have been spun and knit in the family of James Nixon in this town." The wealthiest vied with the middling classes in economy and wore clothing of their own manufacture. That wool might not be scarce the use of sheep flesh for food was discouraged. In these ways was one great source of British prosperity dried up. From this time on when firm but respectful appeals went to the British ministry, they were seconded by the manufacturers and merchants of England, and their potential voices were heeded. The King, at least, became dissatisfied with Greenville's leadership and failure. He retired him and William Pitt was called to the premiership. Before accepting the offer, Pitt wanted to know what line of policy was to be pursued. The King yielded much, consenting very reluctantly to a change in the American Stamp Act. This Act was again brought into the House of Commons and there was an animated discussion over it. Pitt, who was in his place in the House, with his legs swathed in flannels, arose and leaning upon his crutches, made one of the most remarkable speeches ever heard in the House of Commons.

He proposed an absolute, total and immediate repeal of the Stamp Act, while at the same time declaring England's absolute sovereignty over the Colonies. The proposition was warmly seconded by Edmund Burke in a brilliant and eloquent address. A repeal bill was introduced and on the 18th of March, 1766, it passed both Houses of Parliament, notwithstanding a stout opposition to it, in the House of Lords, and the bill was signed by the King. In London the repeal was hailed with great joy and satisfaction as the merchants and manufacturers, now hoped for a revival of their prosperous trade with America.

Pitt became the "lion" of the hour, with the populace, but was caricatured and maligned by the British aristocrats.

When the news of the repeal reached America there was great rejoicing. In Boston the patriots gathered under the "Liberty Tree" and passed laudatory resolutions to all who had participated in bringing about this repeal. "A day was set apart for celebrating the event. It was ushered in with great rejoicing. "At one o'clock in the morning after the

news had come, the bell in the tower of the Hollis Street Church began ringing: then the bells in Christ Church answered and soon every bell in town was ringing. Guns were fired, and drums beat, and bands of music were playing loudly before two o'clock. There wasn't much sleep for anybody that morning. The people hung flags from the steeples and tops of houses. They kept up the excitement all day, and when night came houses were illuminated and fireworks were set off on the Common, more splendid than any one before had known."

Lanterns were hung on the Paddock Elms in front of Major Paddock's house, much to that old Tory's indignation, and he offered a reward for the names of the men who had desecrated his "pets."

At the suggestion of one of Boston's fair ladies, the liberal citizens raised funds and ransomed and set at liberty every prisoner for debt in the jails of the New England metropolis that they might participate in the general joy.

"Rich merchants threw open their doors and the town gave itself up to a general celebration. John Hancock, the ardent patriot, opened a pipe of wine in front of his fine mansion on Beacon Street. The local government dined at the Province House, and toasts were drunk to the health of the King, William Pitt and Parliament. Every year afterward for several years, March 18th, the date of the repeal, was celebrated by the people. The people would meet in Liberty Hall under the tree, show the British flag from the flag staff which ran up through the tree, sing songs, hear speeches, make long processions, and separate more determined than ever to stand up for their liberty.

The Boston Massacre

"Well-fated shades! let no unmanly tear
From pity's eye disdain your honored bier;
Lost to their view, surviving friends may mourn,
Yet o'er thy pile celestial flames shall burn.
Long as in freedom's cause the wise contend,
Dear to your country shall your fame extend;
While to the world the lettered stone shall tell
How Caldwell, Attucks, Gray and Maverick fell."

Fleet's Post, March 12, 1770.

The Stamp Act was repealed, but the Colonists soon perceived that it was only a truce in the war of the British Parliament upon their liberty. A series of obnoxious measures followed which kindled anew their indignation. Although Pitt, the friend of America was again called to the Ministry, in his shattered health, he seemed to have failed in sagacity. He was unable to control the Cabinet, which was made up of discordant material. The majority of them were friends of the King and thoroughly in sympathy with his coercive policy towards America. The British troops sent to the Colonies still remained there and they had power under the law to break into houses and search for deserters. The Royal Governor of New York went so far as to demand of the Assembly an apprehension for the subsistence of the King's instruments of oppression. In the absence of Pitt, Charles Townshend became the ruling spirit of the British Cabinet. He co-operated with Lord Grenville, a bitter enemy of America, in devising new schemes of taxation, and they formed a bill on this basis, which was adopted by Parliament. This bill levied duties on tea, glass, paper, painters' colors and other articles used by the Colonists. Another bill provided for a Board of Revenue Commissioners, with headquarters in Boston, to be independent of Colonial legislation. The New York Assembly was forbidden to perform any legislative act whatever, until they should comply with the mutiny act in regard to the subsistence of troops. These bills were direct

blows against the liberties of the Americans and all the Colonial Assemblies protested against them. Meantime the French Government was keeping a close watch on this struggle between Parliament and the Colonists, ready to give their aid to the Americans at the opportune moment. As an offset to the direct tax bill the Non-Importation Societies, which had been discontinued, were reorganized all over the Colonies, and their powerful machinery, once in operation, almost de-

The Boston Massacre.

stroyed the commerce with England. While the Americans stood in an attitude of firm resolve, not to submit to any schemes for their enslavement, they counselled moderation and condemned any but legal, just and dignified measures. John Dickinson of Pennsylvania, the author of some very brilliant letters to the Colonists, said at this time, "Our cause is a cause of the highest dignity; it is nothing less than to maintain the liberty, which Heaven itself hath made us free. I hope it will not be disgraced in any colony by a single rash step. We have constitutional methods of seeking redress and they are the best methods." Other patriotic leaders gave similar advice. The people were urged to stand on the de-

fence and not to be the aggressors. In short they would make the King, his Ministers and the British Parliament, the real revolutionists. The King was determined that the Colonists should render implicit obedience and to enforce that, a large military force should be sent to America. By letters and petitions to Parliament and to distinguished men in England, the Colonists endeavored to inform and convince the English people of the justice of their cause. Many of these documents were the production of the teeming brain and facile pen of Samuel Adams, one of the soundest, purest, most inflexible and most incorruptible men of his time, poor in purse but rich in principle. Governor Hutchinson said of him: "He is of such an obstinate and inflexible disposition that he could never be conciliated by any office or gift whatever." William Livingston, an eminent lawyer of New York, wrote at this time (1768): "Liberty, Religion and Science are on the wing to these shores. The finger of God points out a mighty empire to your sons. The land we possess is the gift of Heaven to our fathers. The day dawns on which the foundation of this mighty empire is to be laid, by the establishment of a regular American Constitution. Before seven years roll over our heads the first stone must be laid." And so it proved for in 1775, the fulfilment began in earnest. The Revenue Commissioners, and the treacherous Governor Bernard, sent letters to General Gage in New York requesting him to hold a regiment in readiness to send to Boston to assist the Crown Officers in executing the laws. A frigate and a few smaller vessels of war were ordered to Boston harbor for the same purpose. This was regarded by the Americans, as a virtual declaration of war, yet they kept the sword of resistance in the scabbard as long as possible. In June, the sloop "Liberty," belonging to John Hancock, whom the Crown Officers cordially hated, because of his opposition to them, was seized under peculiar circumstances. She had come into the harbor with a cargo of Madeira wine. Hancock had resolved to resist the obnoxious revenue laws, and at about nine o'clock in the evening, his Captain and others in his employ, entered the cabin, confined the tide waiter, who was in charge, and proceeded to land the wine, without entering it at the Custom House.

The next day the vessel was seized by the Custom Officers for violating the Revenue Laws. In defiance of the protests of the citizens, who soon became an infuriated mob, the sloop

"Liberty" was towed under the guns of the British man-of-war Ranney. The mob followed the Custom Officers to their homes, pelted them with stones and other missiles, and broke the windows of their offices. They seized a pleasure boat belonging to the Collector, dragged it through the streets to the Common where they burned it. Then they quietly dispersed. The British Ministry became exasperated when they learned of the formation of the Non-Importation Leagues. The Assembly of Masachusetts passed certain condemnatory resolutions in a circular to the King and his Ministers. Lord Hillsborough demanded that they be rescinded, which the Assembly refused to do, saying, "If the votes of this House are to be controlled by the direction of a minister, we have but a vain semblance of liberty." All over the Colonies this demand of Lord Hillsborough was regarded as a direct attempt to abridge if not absolutely control, free discussion, and so deprive them of their liberties. One after another, the Assemblies of the other Colonies passed Resolutions approving the action of Massachusetts. The Colonies were fast being moulded into one body, one sentiment pervading the whole resistance to British tyranny. Governor Bernard tried to keep the people quiet by mischievous duplicity. He was false to the people he governed and to the masters he pretended to serve. He tried to make Hancock and Adams his friends by offering them bribes. He offered the lucrative office of Advocate General to John Adams, then a rising young lawyer, who instantly rejected it. He cautiously approached that sturdy old Puritan, Samuel Adams, with the offer of a place, but was met with a stinging rebuke. On October 1, 1768, eight British men-of-war anchored off Long Wharf and two regiments of British soldiers from Halifax, were landed under the guns of the war vessels, in spite of the solemn remonstrances of the people. The cowardly Governor, Bernard, went into the country to avoid the storm of popular indignation. The Selectmen of the town refused to provide quarters for the troops. Colonel Dalrymple, an English bully, stormed and threatened, but all in vain, the Selectmen stood firm. He issued to each of his soldiers, sixteen rounds of ammunition, hoping thus to overawe the inhabitants. He marched his troops through the town with fixed bayonets, with a train of artillery following, colors flying, drums beating, as if returning from some great victory. But there was no fear in the hearts of the people. They knew

that at the first act of violence on the part of the British troops, twenty thousand men would spring to arms from the hundred towns of Massachusetts. Dalrymple appeared before the Selectmen with one or two other officers and haughtily demanded food and shelter for his troops.

"You will find both at the Castle" (Castle William) replied the Guardians of the town, with the assurance that the law was upholding them. "And you will find quarters for my soldiers?" asked the Colonel. "We will not," responded the Selectmen. Then Dalrymple hurried away in wrath and encamped one regiment in tents on the Common, and the other was compelled to bivouac as best they could in the chilly air of an October night. The compassion of the inhabitants was excited for the poor soldiers whom they could not blame, and at nine o'clock the Sons of Liberty generously opened Faneuil Hall and allowed the warriors to slumber there. The next day was the Sabbath. The unwise Dalrymple, again paraded his troops through the streets, when the people were engaged in public worship, disturbing them with the noise of the fife and drum. Every strong feeling of the New Englander was thus violated. His Sabbath was desecrated, his worship was disturbed and his liberty was infringed. Natural hatred of the troops, deep and abiding, was soon engendered and the terms "rebel" and "tyrant" were freely bandied between them.

As cold weather came on the commander was compelled to hire houses at exorbitant rates in which to quarter his men and to furnish food at the expense of the town. There was nothing for the troops to do for the people were orderly. The main guard was stationed opposite the State House, (Old State House) with cannon pointing toward the legislative hall. The people understood this covert threat and quietly laughed at it. Governor Bernard himself became convinced at last, that the troops could not repress the rising tide of republicanism, nor overturn the authority of the Government. The Commissioners returned from Castle William, whither they had fled when the storm of popular indignation broke upon them, and were very haughty and overbearing when protected by armed men. They arrested Hancock and Malcolm, the leader of the mob, on false charges, claiming penalties for violation of acts of Parliament, amounting to almost half a million dollars in Hancock's case. Not a charge was established. When the Massachusetts Assembly met in 1769, they

simply organized, and then resolved that it was incompatible with their dignity and freedom to deliberate while confronted by an armed force. They petitioned the Governor to remove the troops from the town but their reasonable request was met by a haughty refusal. When they learned that Governor Bernard proposed to go to England, they forwarded a petition to the King asking for his removal. One of the Governor's political friends sent to England proofs of his duplicity, greed, petty malice, mischievous exaggeration, falsehoods, and continual plottings, for the destruction of the Massachusetts free government and he was immediately removed from the office he had so disgraced. He never recrossed the Atlantic and died in England in 1779. When Parliament saw the strong combination in America they commenced to waver, but old King George was stubborn, it being his inflexible rule never to redress a grievance unless it was prayed for in a spirit of obedience and humility, and Lord North was his willing and most subservient echo. Lord Hillsborough was also another sycophant of the King, and he said: "We can grant nothing to the Americans, except what they ask with halters around their necks."

Such was the loss and suffering caused by the loss of the American trade, that the English people were on the point of rebellion and King George had all he could do to repress a riot in the City of London, when the houses of the Crown Officers were attacked, and the King's palace at Whitehall was menaced by an immense crowd of people. It is said that the interference of the Royal Guards alone saved the life of the King. The attempt to coerce America was proving an expensive and losing game. The exports to America from England in 1768 amounted to $12,000,000. In 1769 they amounted to only a little over $8,000,000. The total produce of the taxes the first year was less than $80,000 and the expense of the new Custom House reduced the profits to $1475 and the extra military expenses in America amounted for the same time to $850,000!

Samuel Adams was right when he declared after the repeal of the Stamp Act, "The conduct of England is permitted and ordained by the unsearchable wisdom of the Almighty for hastening the independence of the Colonies." When Lord North came into power in 1770 he found a bold, bitter and defiant opposition in Parliament, for many of the thinking and well-to-do middle class of the English were beginning to feel

a sympathy for the Colonists. Sir George Saville, in debate, charged the House of Commons "with an invasion of the rights of the people," when a ministerial member said, "In times of less licentiousness, members have been sent to the tower for words of less offence." Saville replied, "the main consideration of my own safety shall never be put in the balance against my duty to my constituents. I will own no superior but the laws; nor bend the knee to any one but to Him who made me."

A number of the patriotic merchants went to the Governor's house to protest. He would not allow them to enter. They held a meeting to protest and the Governor sent a sheriff to disperse them. The troops were ordered to be in readiness and furnished with ball cartridges, and the haughty Colonel Dalrymple would have been only too glad of the opportunity to fire upon the citizens at the least provocation.

John Hancock wrote a respectful letter to the Governor, stating that their meeting was a lawful one and they would not disperse. Governor Hutchinson knew the determination and disposition of Bostonians and acted wisely in not pressing the matter. John Gray of Boston had an extensive rope walk, which employed a large number of patriotic men, who, as they passed daily by the barracks of the troops to and from their work, bandied coarse taunts with the soldiers. On the 2d of March 1770, a soldier who applied for work at the rope walk was rudely turned away. He challenged the men to a boxing match and was severely beaten. Full of wrath he hastened to the barracks and returned with several companions when they beat the ropemakers and chased them through the streets. This was the prelude to what is known in American history as the

BOSTON MASSACRE

The citizens espoused the cause of the rope makers and a large crowd assembled in the afternoon to punish the soldiers, but Mr. Gray and the military authorities interfered and prevented further disturbances for the time being. The citizens dispersed, but resolved to renew the contest, and the soldiers in the barracks prepared bludgeons and gave warning to their particular friends not to be abroad on Monday night. Fresh wet snow had fallen. Monday evening, the 5th of March, frost had covered the streets of Boston with a coat of ice.

The moon was in the first quarter, and shed a pale light over the town; when at twilight, both citizens and soldiers began to assemble in the streets. By seven o'clock full seven hundred people, armed with clubs and other weapons, were on King (State) Street, and, provoked by the insolence and brutality of the lawless soldiers, shouted, "Let us drive out these rascals, they have no business here! drive them out!" At the same time parties of soldiers, whom Dalrymple had doubtless released from the barracks, for the purpose of provoking the people to commit some act of violence, and so give him an excuse for letting "loose the dogs of war," were going about the street, boasting of their valor, insulting citizens with coarse words, and striking many of them with sticks and sheathed swords. Meanwhile the people in the streets were increasing in numbers every minute, and at about nine o'clock in the evening they attacked some soldiers in Dock Square and shouted: "Town born, turn out! Down with the bloody backs!" They tore up the stalls of a market and used the timber for bludgeons. The soldiers scattered and ran about the streets, knocking people down and raising the fearful cry of fire. At the barracks on Brattle street, a subaltern at the gate cried out as the populace gathered there: "Turn out! I will stand by you. Knock them down! Kill them! Run your bayonets through them!" The soldiers rushed out, and leveling their muskets, threatened to make a lane paved with dead men through the crowd. Just then an officer was crossing the street, when a barber's boy called out, "There goes a mean fellow who will not pay my master for shaving him." A sentry stationed near the Custom House (on State Street near the Union Bank Building) ran out and knocked the boy down with his gun. The cry of fire and the riotous behavior of the soldiers caused an alarm bell to be rung, and the whole town was aroused. While all this excitement was in progress in the streets between the British soldiers and the citizens of Boston, Captain Preston, commanding the company, was enjoying an entertainment at Concert Hall, on the corner of Hanover and Court Streets. He was called out by an excited messenger, who told him that a fracas had started between his troops and a crowd of Bostonians and his presence was needed at once. He rushed out and down to the scene of action. Some of the leading citizens tried to persuade the crowd to disperse and had almost gained their respectful

attention, when a tall man, covered with a long scarlet cloak and wearing a white wig, suddenly appeared among them and began a violent harangue against the Government officers and the troops, concluding his inflammatory speech by boldly saying: "To the main guard! To the main guard! There is the best!" The populace immediately echoed the words, "to the main guard," with vehemence, and separating into three ranks, took different routes towards the quarters of the main guard. While one division was passing the Custom House, the barber's boy called out: "There is the scoundrel who knocked me down." The crowd instantly began pelting him with snow balls, and bits of ice and pressed towards him. He raised his musket and pulled the trigger. Fortunately for him, it missed fire when the crowd tried to seize him. As he ran, calling for help, Captain Preston, the officer of the day, sent eight men with unloaded muskets, but with ammunition in their cartridge boxes to help their comrade. Henry Knox, afterwards General in the Continental Army, was standing nearby, and seizing Preston, begged him to recall his men. "If they fire," said Knox, "your life must answer for the consequences." Preston answered, "I know what I am about," and followed his men. The crowd pelted this detachment with snowballs and ice, and Crispus Attucks, a brawny negro from Nantucket, gave a loud war whoop and shouted: "Let us fall upon the rest! the main guard! the main guard!" The soldiers instantly loaded their guns. The crowd pressed on them, struck their muskets and cried out, "You are cowardly rascals for bringing arms against naked men."

Attucks shouted, "You dare not fire," and called on the crowd behind him to come on. Just then Captain Preston came up, and tried to appease the multitude, and parried a blow with his arm, which Attucks had aimed at his head. It struck the musket of a soldier and knocked it to the ground and a struggle ensued between Attucks and the soldier for its possession. Captain Preston called out, "Why don't you fire? Why don't you fire?" The struggling soldier hearing the word "fire" just as he gained possession of his musket, drew his piece and shot Attucks dead. Five other soldiers fired at short intervals without any restraint by Preston. The killed were Samuel Gray, Samuel Maverick, James Caldwell, Crispus Attucks and Patrick Carr. Six were wounded, two of them mortally, Christopher Mack and John Clark. Five of

the populace were killed, six were wounded (two mortally) and four were slightly hurt. Of the eleven, only one (Attucks) had actually taken part in the disturbance. The crowd dispersed and when citizens came to pick up the dead the infuriated soldiers would have shot them, had not Captain Preston restrained them.

The news of the tragedy, which occurred near midnight, went like wild fire over the town. Alarm bells rang, drums beat, and the cry went forth, "the soldiers are murdering the people! to arms! to arms!" Colonel Dalrymple and the Lieut. Governor were soon on the spot, and promised the orderly citizens that justice should be vindicated in the morning. Meanwhile Preston had been arrested and put into prison, and the next morning the eight soldiers were committed, all charged with the crime of murder.

Such is the story of the Boston Massacre gleaned from the evidence of witnesses at the trial of Preston and his men. The killing of citizens was undoubtedly a massacre as the outrageous conduct of the soldiers created the mob, which was approved by Dalrymple, their Commander. At such a time of popular excitement it was his duty to keep his soldiers in their barracks. There is not the least doubt but that he hoped for an excuse "to begin work in Boston."

The day following, Lieutenant-Governor Hutchinson convened his Council and the citizens of Boston held a great Town Meeting in the Old South Meeting House, then the largest audience room in the city. Here the people unanimously resolved "that nothing could be expected to restore peace and prevent carnage but an immediate removal of the troops. On the following day the lion hearted Samuel Adams and fourteen other patriots waited upon the Lieutenant-Governor and Colonel Dalrymple and presented the Resolution passed at the mass meeting of citizens. After quite a discussion the Governor agreed to send one regiment to Castle William. This failed to prove satisfactory when reported at the adjourned meeting, who resolved "that nothing alse would satisfy them but a total and immediate removal of all the troops."

Samuel Adams, John Hancock, William Molineux, William Phillips, Joseph Warren, Joshua Henshaw and Samuel Pemberton were appointed to convey the Resolutions to the Civil and Military authorities. Adams presented the Resolutions. Hutchinson said he had no power to remove the troops.

Adams proved that he had by the provisions of the Charter. The Crown Officers hesitated. Adams, firm as a rock, resolved that there should be no more temporizing. Stretching forth his hand and turning toward the Governor, he said, in a clear, ringing voice, "If you have power to remove one regiment you have power to remove both. It is at your peril if you do not. The meeting is composed of three thousand people. They are becoming very impatient. A thousand men have already arrived from the neighborhood and the country is in general motion. Night is approaching, an immediate answer is expected."

Hutchinson grew pale, his knees trembled, and Adams enjoyed the sight and as a result the Crown Officers issued the order for the removal of the troops to Castle William. The people triumphed and the Old South Meeting House rang with shouts and exclamations of joy.

John Adams, late in life, depicted the dramatic scene in the Council Chamber, when the demand of the citizens assembled at the Old South was carried to Governor Hutchinson at the Old State House.

He says: The day was waning, and the room was lighted only by the blaze from the open fireplace. From the walls looked down the portraits of dead Kings of England and Governors of the Province. At the head of the Council Board sat Governor Hutchinson, a good and able man, but sorely tried and perplexed. At his right hand sat Colonel Dalrymple, and about the board were the Councillors in their scarlet coats and large white wigs. Before them all stood Samuel Adams, clad in his plain red cloak, spokesman for the Committee and through them for the citizens of Boston. His hand trembled as he spoke, but his eyes flashed fire, and his voice was firm and unbroken, meeting the Governor's evasions and subterfuges with the terse demand, "Both regiments, or none." The Governor still resisted however, while the hours passed and the shadows deepened in the chamber. One by one the Councillors and Colonels yielded, and still the Governor stood out alone, until at last, Andrew Oliver, his Secretary and chief reliance counselled that further resistance was useless. Then the Governor gave Colonel Dalrymple the formal recommendation and the Committee returned to their fellow townsmen at the Old South with the glad news of success. The troops were removed and in derision were called "Sam Adams' Regiments."

The troops had been sent to overawe the people but the people had overawed the troops. The funeral of the victims of the Massacre occurred on the 8th of March and was a great popular demonstration. "Four hearses bore the bodies of Crispus Attucks, Samuel Maverick, Samuel Gray and James Caldwell, who were murdered, met at the spot in King Street where the tragedy was enacted. Thence they moved to the Middle Burying Ground, followed by an immense concourse of people and the bodies were placed in one vault."

John Adams wrote long afterwards, "Not the battle of Lexington, or Bunker Hill, not the surrender of Burgoyne or Cornwallis, were more important events than the battle of King Street, on the fifth of March, 1770." In the autumn of 1770, after the excitement over the event had somewhat subsided, Captain Preston and his men were tried for murder, in a court in Boston. Josiah Quincy, Jr. and John Adams were counsel for the prisoners. They were severely criticised by their compatriots, but they entered upon their duties with humane motives and discharged them with fidelity to their clients, the law and the testimony. Robert Treat Paine, afterwards one of the signers of the Declaration of Independence, was the counsel for the Crown. Preston and six of his soldiers were declared "not guilty" by a Boston jury. The other two, the soldier who killed Attucks, and the other who shot Maverick, were convicted of manslaughter, only and for that offence they were each branded on the hand, in open court and discharged. The place of the massacre on State Street is indicated by a stone block, with paving stones radiating therefrom, about twelve feet south of the southeast corner of State and Exchange Streets. On the west corner of Exchange Street is this tablet:

Opposite this Spot
Was shed the first Blood
of the
AMERICAN REVOLUTION
March 5, 1770

The citizens of Boston could not forget this massacre of her citizens in her streets and the 5th of March was a memorable day in the calendar for many years. At a town meeting held March 5, 1778, the following vote was passed: "Resolved That the Hon. Samuel Adams, Nathaniel Barber, Esq., William

Cooper, Esq., John Pitts, Esq., John Scollay, Esq., William Austin, Esq., and Percy Morton, Esq., be and hereby are appointed a Committee to apply to a proper gentleman to deliver an oration on the 5th of March next to perpetuate the memory of the horrid massacre perpetrated on the evening of the 5th of March, 1770, by a party of soldiers of the 9th Regiment under the command of Captain Thomas Preston, and to impress on our minds the ruinous tendency of standing armies being placed in free and populous cities in a time of peace; and the necessity of such noble exertion in all future times as the inhabitants of the town then made whereby the designs of the conspirators against the public peace may still be frustrated."

"This Committee made choice of Colonel William Tudor, and we may be sure he did justice to the subject. The oration was delivered at 1 o'clock, noon, in the Old South Meeting House, Old Faneuil Hall not being capacious enough to receive the inhabitants that attended upon the occasion. The several bells in the town were tolled for half an hour, beginning at one quarter of an hour after 9 o'clock. The oration was delivered to a large and crowded audience and received by them with great applause." The observance of the anniversary of this massacre was discontinued in 1783 by a motion which stated "that it was the opinion of many of the inhabitants that it would be for the public benefit to exchange the present institution for another of the same general nature, such, for instance, as an anniversary for celebrating the glorious and happy Declaration of Independence of the United States of America, in which the orator might consider the steps that led to this great Revolution.

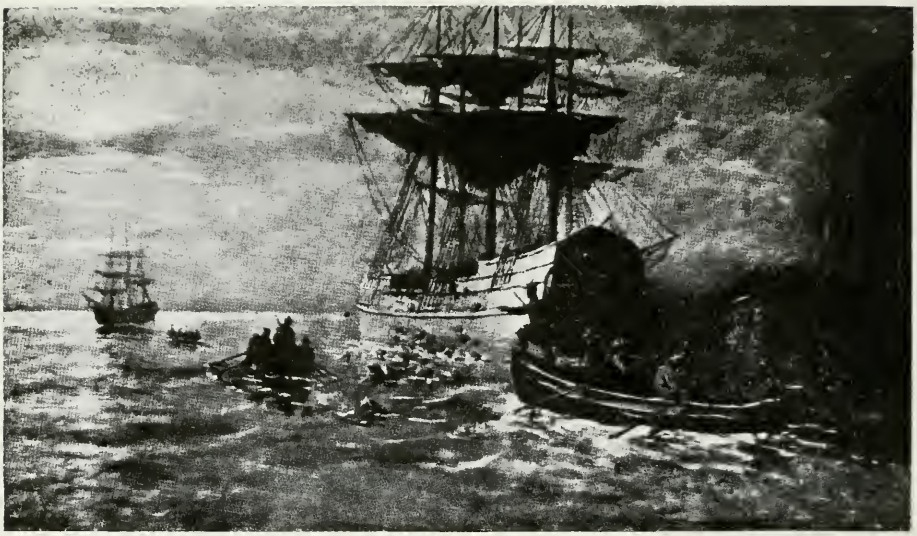
The Boston Tea Party
December 16, 1773

"The waves that wrought a country's wreck,
Have rolled o'er Whig and Tory,
The Mohawks on the Dartmouth's deck,
Shall live in Song and Story.
The waters in the rebel bay,
Have kept the tea leaf savor,
Our old North Enders in their spray
Still taste a Hyson flavor;
And Freedom's teacup still o'erflows,
With ever fresh libations,
To cheat of slumber all her foes
And cheer the wakening nations."

Oliver Wendell Holmes.

Bancroft, the historian, says: "The destruction in Boston Harbor in December, 1773, of the cargoes of tea sent to that port by the East India Company, was, by far, the most momentous in the annals of the town." It is generally conceded to have been the most prominent cause which led to the American Revolution. The arbitrary course of the British Government for ten years previous had caused great agitation in the Colonies and had educated the people to a clear perception of their rights. If they were to be taxed to support the British Government, they contended that they should be represented in the British Parliament. The watchword with the patriots was:—"Taxation without representation is tyranny." In that long controversy preceding the resort to arms, the people of Great Britain seem to have entirely forgotten their own history and how long and tenaciously their ancestors fought for their rights, wresting, as at Runnymede, concessions from despotic monarchs. Only one explanation can be given of their course, and that is well stated by a writer on this subject, "Their difficulty seems to have been that they looked upon Americans, not as their equals, but as inferiors, as their subjects, and as having no rights that the

Englishman was bound to respect." The celebrated moralist, Dr. Johnson, probably represented quite a class, when he said of the Americans, "They are a race of convicts and ought to be thankful for anything we allow them short of hanging." England at that period had been engaged in a series of long and costly wars and was deeply in debt. She looked across the sea and saw the American Colonies growing rapidly in wealth and population. Here



The Boston Tea Party, December 16, 1773

was a gold mine, which, if properly worked, would help very materially to replenish the King's coffers. "Might makes Right" was the motto of the corrupt British ministry of those days and without asking the advice or approval of the Colonists the odious Stamp Act was passed in 1765. The fate of that obnoxious measure is well known. Then came the tax on tea. The East India Company had seventeen million pounds of tea in warehouses, and a larger importation than usual coming in from India.

With the temper prevailing in America, on the question of taxation, the company saw that the profitable market of America would be cut off, and they were in dire financial

straits. They could not pay the debts of the company, to say nothing of dividends. In their extremity the East India Company offered to pay the British Government an export duty of six pence per pound on the tea, if they would take off the three pence per pound import duty in America. But, determined to pursue a coercive policy with the Americans, the British Government refused to entertain the proposition. By an Act of Parliament, passed May 10, 1773, the East India Company, in exportation of its teas to America, were allowed a drawback of the full amount of English duties, binding itself only to pay three pence per pound on its being landed in the English Colonies and the company given a license to export six hundred thousand pounds, which were to be sent to Boston, New York, Philadelphia and Charleston, S. C., the principal American ports. The East India Company looked on this matter in purely a commercial light, but to the Colonists it was a question of abstract principle, and the new Tea Act did not deceive them as to the purpose of the British Government. This last Act solidified the Colonists, they felt that right and justice was on their side. "It was not that they were poor and unable to pay, but because they would not submit to wrong. They were prosperous and happy. It was upon a community at the very height of its prosperity that this insidious scheme suddenly fell, and it immediately roused a more general opposition than had been created by the Stamp Act." Benjamin Franklin said at this time: "The Ministry believe that three pence a pound on tea, of which one does not, perhaps, drink, ten pounds a year, is sufficient to overcome the patriotism of an American."

An extract from a letter written by Abraham Lott, dated November 15, 1773, gave the British public fair warning of what was to come. He says: "If the tea arrives subject to duty, there will be no such thing as selling it, as the people would rather buy so much poison, for they say it is calculated to enslave them and their posterity, and are determined not to take what they call the nauseous draught." A paper called "The Alarm" published at this time by the patriots in New York, was determined in its opposition to this measure and one article exhorted the Americans, to "open their eyes, and then like sons of liberty, throw off all connection with the tyrant, the mother country." A British officer wrote to a friend in London: "All America

is in a flame on account of the tea importation. The New Yorkers as well as the Bostonians and Philadelphians, are determined that no tea shall be landed. They have raised a company of artillery and almost every day are practising at a target. Their independent companies are out and exercise every day. The minds of the towns-people are influenced by these principles. They swear they will burn every tea ship that comes in." A New York paper said: "Are the Americans such blockheads as to care whether it be a 'red hot poker,' or a 'hot red poker,' which they are to swallow, provided Lord North forces them to swallow one of the two?" A handbill was circulated in Philadelphia with the heading, "By Uniting We Stand, by Dividing We Fall." In it the factors of the East India Company were characterized as "political bombardiers to demolish the fair structure of Liberty." In Philadelphia the consignees of the tea, Messrs. Wharton, were waitted upon by a committee, who requested them out of regard to their own characters, and the public peace and good order of the city, to resign their appointment, and the consignees gave a satisfactory reply to this appeal. In Boston, the leading patriots saw that they must organize if they would make their work effective, and what was known as the "North End Caucus" was organized by Dr. Joseph Warren, who, with one other person, drew up its regulations; and meetings were held in the house of William Campbell, near the North Battery and sometimes in the "Green Dragon Tavern," also known as the Freemason's Arms. This Tavern stood near the northerly corner of Union and Hanover Streets. The members of the North End Caucus were mostly mechanics, many of them shipcaulkers. Hence the name "Caucus" now generally used, for preliminary political meetings. At this North End Caucus, committees for public service were appointed and measures of defence, and resolves for the destruction of the tea, discussed. Paul Revere, John Hancock and Samuel Adams were regular attendants at these gatherings. Speaking of these meetings, Paul Revere said: "We were so careful that our meetings should be kept secret that every time we met, every person swore upon the Bible not to discover any of our transactions, but to Hancock, Adams or Church, and one or two other leaders." It was at one of these meetings, when the best method of expelling the British regulars from Boston, was under

discussion, that John Hancock exclaimed: "Burn Boston and make John Hancock a beggar if the public good requires it." The "North End Caucus" was included in the later organization of "The Sons of Liberty."

In the year 1755 Benjamin Edes, already referred to, began with John Gill, the publication of the "Boston Gazette and Country Journal;" it was a newspaper of deserved popularity, and unsurpassed in its public zeal for liberty. It was the chosen mouthpiece of the Whigs. The Adamses, Quincy and Warren were frequent contributors to its columns. Their printing office was on the corner of Court Street and Franklin Avenue where the building of the Old Colony Trust Company now stands. During the siege of Boston the "Gazette" was issued at Watertown. It was discontinued September 17, 1798. It was in the back room of this printing office that some of the Tea Party Indian braves, arrayed themselves on that memorable December night. A long room over the printing office was the favorite meeting place of these most ardent patriots, and it became known as the "Long Room Club" and it is said that the destruction of the tea was planned by this Club. There gathered in council in this room such famous and sterling men as Samuel Adams, John Hancock, James Otis, Dr. Joseph Warren, Benjamin Church, Samuel Dexter, Paul Revere, Dr. Samuel Cooper, William Cooper, Thomas Dawes, Samuel Phillips, Royal Tyler, Thomas Fleet, William Molineux and Thomas Melville. They were a Good Government Committee, the like of which Boston has never seen. When the names of the consignees of the tea became known, the patriots at once began operations. They were summoned on the 2d of November to appear at the Liberty Tree, three days later and in the presence of a gathering of citizens to resign their commissions. A hand bill was circulated among the citizens notifying them of the meeting and its object. A large flag was hung out on Liberty Tree. The town crier announced the meeting at the top of his voice and the church bells rang for an hour. At noon five hundred persons assembled. Samuel Adams, John Hancock and William Phillips, representatives of Boston, were present, with William Cooper, the patriotic Town Clerk, and the Board of Selectmen. The consignees failing to appear, a committee consisting of William Molineux, William Dennie, Dr. Joseph Warren, Dr. Ben-

jamin Church, Henderson Inches, Edward Proctor, Nathaniel Barber, Gabriel Johonnot and Ezekiel Cheever, waited on them at Clark's warehouse, foot of King (State) Street.

Governor Hutchinson saw them as they passed the Old State House and admitted that many of the better class of citizens were in the company. William Molineux was the spokesman of the committee. "From whom are you a committee?" asked Clark. "From the whole people," was the reply. "Who are the committee?" "I am one," said Molineux and then he named the other members. "What is your request?" "That you give us your word to sell none of the teas in your charge, but to return them to London in the same bottoms in which they were shipped. Will you comply?" "I shall have nothing to do with you," was the rough and peremptory reply and the other consignees who were present concurred. Molineux then read the Resolutions passed at the Liberty Tree, that those who refused to comply wth the request of the people "were enemies to their country and should be dealt with accordingly." When the waiting crowd outside the warehouse learned the result of the interview the cry was raised: "Out with them! Out with them!" Quite an excitement followed and the consignees narrowly escaped mob violence. In their correspondence regarding the affair, the consignees attempted to make it appear that "the crowd was composed of people of the lowest class." But the political assemblies of those days fairly represented the body of the people. The town meeting held on the 5th of November was presided over by John Hancock and was a famous meeting—and others followed full of excitement and patriotic fervor. Another committee, including the Selectmen, visited the consignees and requested them out of regard to their own character, and the peace and good of the town and province to immediately resign their appointment.

At an adjourned meeting in the afternoon the committee appointed to interview the consignees reported that they had seen Mr. Clark and Mr. Faneuil, two of the consignees, who would not give a definite answer until they had seen the other consignees and postponed their reply to the following Monday. This answer was unsatisfactory. At a crowded meeting in Faneuil Hall on Saturday, the com-

mittee reported that Elisha Hutchinson, one of the consignees, was either in Milton or Boston. Thomas Hutchinson, Jr., in a letter, informed the citizens that "when the tea arrived they would then be sufficiently informed to answer the request of the inhabitants." This reply stirred up some of the hot blood in the assembly, and there was a cry of "To arms!" But discretion prevailed. Meanwhile the tea ships were nearing Boston Harbor. The leaders on both sides saw that a crisis was at hand. Governor Hutchinson clearly saw that this would prove a more difficult affair to handle than any which had yet confronted him. When the patriotic Thomas Mifflin of Philadelphia visited Boston, he said to some of the patriots: "Will you engage that the tea shall not be landed? If so, I will answer for Philadelphia." And they pledged their honor that the tea should not be landed. November 17 the news came from London that three ships having the East India Company's tea on board had sailed for Boston. The next day a Town Meeting was held with John Hancock, Moderator, and this was the last time in which public sentiment was brought to bear upon the consignees. The meeting was quiet and orderly and its business quickly despatched. The final answer of the consignees in writing was received in which they say "that our friends in England have entered into general engagements in our behalf, merely of a commercial nature, which puts it out of our power to comply with the request of the town." After reading the letter the meeting dissolved without comment. Hutchinson, one of the consignees, says: "This sudden dissolution struck more terror into the consignees than the most violent resolves." John Scollay, Chairman of the Board of Selectmen, told the consignees plainly that nothing less than sending the tea back to England would satisfy the people. On Sunday, November 28, 1773, the ship "Dartmouth," Captain Hall, owned by Francis Rotch, the Quaker, arrived in Boston with 114 chests of tea on board, and anchored below the Castle. There was intense excitement when the fact became known. Despite the rigid observance of the New England Sabbath, the Selectmen held a meeting immediately, and remained in session until nine o'clock in the evening, in expectation of receiving the proposal of the consignees. These gentlemen could not be found. The next day, bidding a temporary farewell to

Boston, they took up their quarters at the Castle under the protection of British soldiers. Samuel Adams sent a summons to the committee and the towns people to a mass meeting to be held in Faneuil Hall, the next day, Monday. A hand bill was distributed throughout the city which read as follows: "Friends, Brothers, Countrymen! That worst of plagues, the detested tea shipped for this port by the East India Company, is now arrived in this harbor: the hour of destruction, or manly opposition to the machinations of tyranny stares you in the face; every friend of his country, to himself, and posterity, is now called upon to meet at Faneuil Hall at nine o'clock this day, at which time the bells ring, to make a united and successful resistance to this last and most destructive measure of administration." At nine o'clock November 29, 1773, nearly five thousand people thronged in and around Faneuil Hall. At that time, the hall was only about half as large as it is now, and it was entirely inadequate to hold the vast concourse that had come together. Jonathan Williams, a wealthy and influential citizen, was chosen Moderator. The Selectmen were John Scollay, John Hancock, Timothy Newell, Thomas Newhall, Samuel Austin, Oliver Wendell and John Pitts. The patriotic and efficient Town Clerk, William Cooper was also present. Samuel Adams, Dr. Joseph Warren, John Hancock, Dr. Young and William Molineux, all took part in the animated discussion. Samuel Adams offered the following resolution which was unanimously adopted: "Resolved, that the tea should not be landed, that it should be sent back in the same bottoms to the place whence it came, at all events, and that no duty shall be paid on it." To better accommodate the vast crowd the meeting adjourned to the "Old South." It is greatly to be regretted that we have no record of the speeches delivered at that adjourned meeting. Governor Hutchinson writing concerning this meeting said: "That nothing could be more inflammatory than the speeches. Adams was never in greater glory," and of consignees, he said: "They apprehended that they would be seized, and may be tarred and feathered, and carted,—an American torture, in order to compel them to a compliance." Dr. Young held that the only way to get rid of the tea was to "throw it overboard," and this appears to be the first suggestion of what actually happened. The citizens at the meeting sent word

to the owner of the vessel, and to the captain, "that the entry of the tea, or the landing of it, would be at their peril."

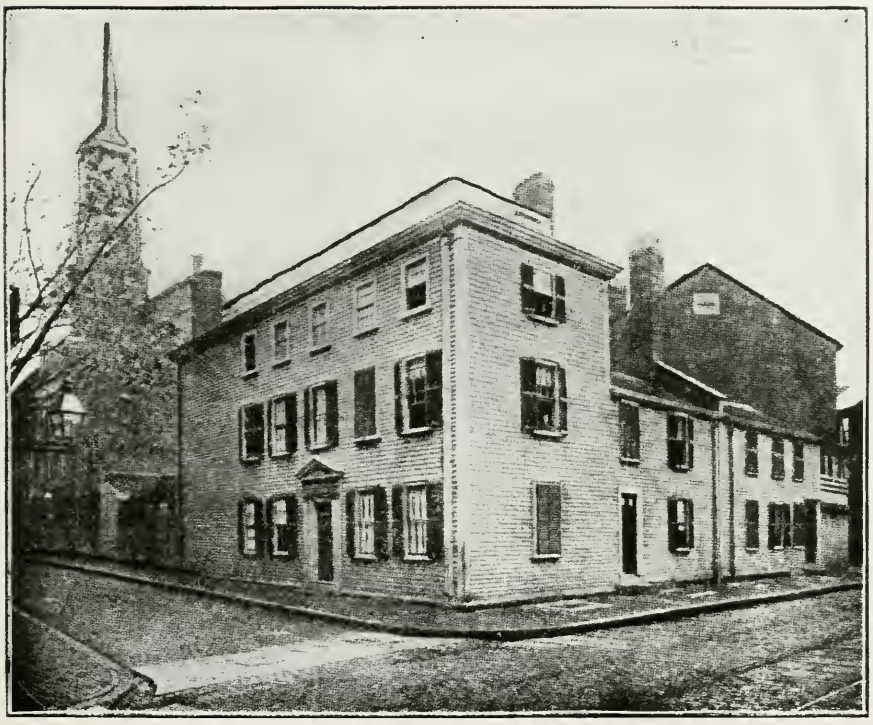
The ship was ordered to be moored at Griffin's Wharf, and a watch of twenty-five men were appointed for the security of vessel and cargo, and Captain Edward Proctor was Captain of the guard that night. This guarding of the ship was kept up until December 16, and the service was performed with military precision. Every half hour during the night the words, "all's well," passed from Sentry to Sentry. Some of the "Solid men" were members of this guard, and among them were Paul Revere, Benjamin Edes, John Hancock and Henry Knox. The Oliver Wendell whom we have mentioned as one of the Selectmen of Boston, and a prominent patriot, was a judge. His daughter, Sarah, married the Rev. Abiel Holmes, the father of our well beloved poet, Oliver Wendell Holmes. The papers of these days were filled with items concerning this tea question. In fact but little else was talked about; it was the all engrossing topic. On Tuesday, December 14, Mr. Rotch, the owner of the Ship "Dartmouth," accompanied by Samuel Adams, Benjamin Kent and eight others, applied to the Collector of the Port for a clearance. The Collector promised to give an answer the next day, after he had consulted with the Comptroller. The next day Mr. Rotch, with the Committee, again went to the Custom House, and the Collector and Comptroller were both present. Mr. Rotch stated that he was compelled by the meeting to demand a clearance for his vessel for London. This, the Collector emphatically refused to do until the tea was discharged. The next day, December 16, 1773, will forever be memorable in the Annals of Boston. The twenty days for a clearance expired that night. On the morrow the tea would be landed under the protection of British soldiers and under the guns of a British-man-of-war. Again, several thousand of the people rallied in and around the "Old South Meeting House." It was an assembly of quiet, thoughtful, but very determined men, who, with anxious faces, awaited the outcome of the meeting. The Committee reported the decision of the Collector. Mr. Rotch was directed to enter a protest at the Custom House, and to apply to the Governor for a pass to proceed at once with his vessel on its voyage to London. The meeting waited to learn the result of Rotch's conference with the Governor. The Governor tried to compromise with Rotch,

but without avail, for Mr. Rotch did not wish to incur the ill will of the people. He was a young man only twenty-three years of age, and it must be admitted he was placed in a very hard position. He was American born and came of an excellent Quaker family. He pleaded that the compromise proposed would ruin him, and as he could not obtain either a clearance from the Collector or a pass from the Governor for his ships, they would either be sunk by the British batteries or captured and confiscated under the revenue laws. Eventually, as affairs turned out, he escaped loss, as the East India Company paid him the freight due on the cargoes of tea transported in his ships. After the Revolutionary War, his ship, the "Bradford," was the first to display the American flag on the river Thames. Governor Hutchinson sternly refused to give him a pass and thus the last door of conciliation was closed.

When Mr. Rotch returned to the meeting and told the result of his interview with the Governor, it was nearly six o'clock. "Darkness had set in, and the 'Old South,' dimly lighted with candles, was still filled with an anxious and impatient audience." "Who knows," said John Rowe, "how tea will mingle with salt water?" There was a cry and a hurrah, and some tumult among the people, but the leaders soon restored good order. Dr. Young addressed the meeting, after the decision of the Governor was announced, and said, "that Mr. Rotch was a good man and had done all in his power to gratify the people, and charged them to do no hurt to his person or his property." Samuel Adams then arose and uttered these memorable words: "This meeting can do nothing more to save the country." This was a signal for action and there was a "war whoop" from the men at the church doors. From the gallery came a voice: "Boston harbor a tea-pot tonight. Hurrah for Griffin's Wharf!" The Mohawks with their hatchets were on hand ready to cut the Gordian knot."

When order was restored the people, having manifested great patience and caution, and having endeavored to preserve the property of the East India Company, and return it safe to its owners, then dispersed, giving three cheers as they left the Old South Meeting House. John Rowe, who gave the vast audience a hint of what might be expected, was a leading merchant and patriotic citizen of Boston. He was for many years a Selectman, Overseer of the Poor, and representative to the General Court and later, in January 1779, was chosen

Chairman of the Committee to fix the price of merchandise and bring to punishment all offenders against the Act, forbidding monopoly and forestalling. He was a member of the First Lodge of Freemasons in Boston and Master of the Lodge in 1749 and Provincial Grand Master in 1762. Rowe's



Old Daggett House, Corner Tremont and Howes Streets

Wharf is named in honor of this true friend of his country.

The Rowe Estate was sold in 1817 by the heirs, to Judge William Prescott, and he lived there until his death in 1844, as did also his son, Wm. H. Prescott, the historian. The house was taken down in 1845, and the site is now covered by the Bedford Street store of the Jordan, Marsh Company.

We have already alluded to the Green Dragon Tavern near the northerly corner of Hanover and Union Streets, as a favorite meeting place of the patriots. The St. Andrews Lodge of Freemasons also met there and many of its leading members were active "Sons of Liberty" and members also of the famous Tea Party. We have mentioned two points where the "Merchants" met and arranged themselves for their descent upon the tea ships. There was another important rendezvous where the South End Mohawks gathered, on the corner of Hollis and Tremont Streets, and put on their feathers and war paint. In this vicinity lived John Crane, Joseph Lovering and the Bradlees, also Captain Thomas Bolter and Samuel Fenno. Young Lovering afterwards used to tell how he held the light for Crane and other neighbors, as they disguised themselves in Crane's shop.

Griffin's Wharf, the point aimed at, was directly opposite Hutchinson Street, now Pearl Street. Flounder Lane, a little foot path, under Fort Hill, wound around the margin of the water and entered Hutchinson Street near the wharf. This lane was afterwards widened and was called Broad Street, but is now a part of Atlantic Avenue. The laying out of Broad Street and consequent filling in nearly obliterated Griffin's Wharf. Its legitimate successor was Liverpool Wharf. One of the best, and probably most accurate accounts of the Boston Tea Party is that published in the Massachusetts Gazette, under date of December 23, 1773:

"Just before the dissolution of the meeting in the Old South Meeting House, a number of brave and resolute men, dressed in the Indian manner, approached near the door of the Assembly, and gave a whar whoop which rang through the house, and was answered by some in the galleries, but silence was commanded, and a peaceable deportment enjoined until the dissolution. The Indians, as they were then called, repaired to the wharf where the ships lay that had the tea on board' and were followed by hundreds of people to see the event of the transactions of those who made so grotesque an appearance. The Indians immediately repaired on board Captain Hall's ship, when they hoisted out the chests of tea, and when on deck stove them in with their hatchets and emptied the tea overboard. Having cleared this ship, they proceeded to Capt. Bruce's, and then to Captain Coffin's. They applied themselves so dexterously to the destruction of this commodity, that in the space of three hours they broke up three

hundred and forty-two chests, which was the whole number in those vessels, and discharged their contents into the docks. When the tide rose it floated the broken chests and the tea; insomuch that the surface of the water was filled therewith, a considerable way from the South part of the Town to Dorchester Neck and lodged on its shores."

There was the greatest care taken to prevent the tea being purloined by the populace; one or two being detected in endeavoring to pocket a small quantity were stripped of their acquisitions and roughly handled.

Horace E. Scudder in his most interesting book for boys, entitled, "Boston Town," in writing of the Tea Party says:

"There was one man in the crowd who thought it would be a fine thing to carry off some of the tea, so he went on board with the rest and slyly stuffed all he could into his coat pockets and inside the lining. He was a Captain O'Connor of Charlestown. One of the men who was at work destroying the tea saw him do this, and as the Captain was leaving the ship he sprang forward and caught him. O'Connor made a jump and left his coat tails behind him. Mr. Hewes cried out and let the people know what he had done, and as the Captain tried to get away from the wharf, everybody in his neighborhood helped him on with a kick, and the next day Captain O'Connor's coat toils were nailed to the whipping post in Charlestown."

It is worthy of remark that although a considerable quantity of goods were still remaining on board the vessels, no injury was sustained. Such attention to private property was observed that a small padlock belonging to the captain of one of the ships being broken another was procured and sent to him. The town was very quiet during the whole evening, and the night following. Those who were from the country went home with a merry heart, and the next day joy appeared on almost every countenance, some on account of the destruction of the tea, others on account of the quietness with which it was effected. One of the Monday's papers says: "The masters and owners are well pleased that the ships were thus released." The value of the tea was £18,000 ($90,000). The night was clear; the moon shone brilliantly.

"It was not the deed of a lawless mob, but the well considered act of intelligent and determined men. One of the participants, G. R. T. Hewes, whose portrait is in the Old State House over the Registry Desk, published a little volume in

1835 in which he gives a number of incidents connected with the event. He says: "The disguise of the Indians was hastily prepared. Many arrayed themselves in a store on Fort Hill. The original number was fifteen or twenty. Many others disguised themselves as best they could and joined the party. While the crowd was rushing down Milk Street to Griffin's Wharf, Hewes himself made his way to a blacksmith's shop on Boylston Wharf where he hastily begrimed his face with suitable preparation, thence to the house of an acquaintance near Griffin's Wharf, where he got a blanket to wrap around his person." Hewes' whistling talent, for which he was somewhat famous among his acquaintances, procured him the position of boatswain in the party under Captain Lendall Pitts, which boarded the brig.

The British Squadron lay in the stream less than a quarter of a mile distant and its officers witnessed the whole proceedings. "Admiral Montague was on shore at the time in the house of a Tory named Coffin, on Atkinson (Congress) Street. As the party returning passed Coffin's house, the Admiral saw them, and opening the window said, "Well, boys, you have had a fine, pleasant evening for your Indian caper, haven't you? But, mind, you have got to pay the fiddler yet." "O, never mind," shouted Lendall Pitts, "never mind, Squire. Just come out here, if you please, and we will settle the bill in two minutes." This caused a shout, the fife struck up a lively tune, the Admiral shut the window in a hurry, and the company marched on."

Early on the morning of the 17th, there was a long winrow of the tea extending from the wharves down to the castle. With a British squadron less than a quarter of a mile away, it seems strange that the party was not interrupted. Very serious trouble was doubtless expected. It may be that the authorities, the owners of the vessels, and the consignees were glad to be extricated in this way from a serious dilemma. A fourth tea ship was wrecked on Cape Cod. A few chests of tea saved from the wreck were stored at the Castle, by order of Governor Hutchinson. Paul Revere carried the account of this destruction of the tea to New York and Philadelphia and the Bostonians were highly extolled.

John Scollay, Chairman of the Board of Selectmen of Boston, wrote: "We do console ourselves that we have acted constitutionally." "The most magnificent movement

of all," wrote John Adams in his diary. There is a dignity, a majesty, a solemnity of this last effort of the patriots that I greatly admire. The destruction of the tea is so bold, so daring, so firm, so intrepid and inflexible that it must have important consequences, and so lasting that I cannot but consider it an epoch in history. The question is whether the destruction of the tea was necessary? I apprehend that it was absolutely and indispensably so. To let it be landed would be giving up the principle of taxation by Parliamentary authority against which the continent has struggled for ten years."

The historian Ramsay says: "If the American position was right in relation to taxation, the destruction of the tea was warranted by the great law of self-preservation. For it was not possible for them by any other means within the compass of probability to discharge the duty they owed to their country."

"It became," said Robert C. Winthrop, "a simple question which should go under—British tea or American liberty? That volunteer band of liberty boys performed their work better than they knew, averting contingencies which must have caused immediate bloodshed, and accomplishing results of the greatest importance to the American cause." When the news reached England there was astonishment and indignation. In the heated debates in Parliament one member said: "The town of Boston ought to be knocked about their heads and destroyed." Edmund Burke made one of the greatest efforts of his life for the repeal of the tea tax.

Colonel Barre told the House of Commons that if they would keep their hands out of the pockets of the Americans they would be obedient subjects. Johnston who had been Governor of Florida, predicted that the exporting of tea by the East India Company was absurd and would end in loss, and that if the proposed Boston Port Bill was passed, the result would be a general confederacy to resist the power of Britain and end in general revolt."

THE DAGGETT HOUSE.

This house stood on the corner of Tremont and Hollis Streets. On the 17th of March, 1901, "The Boston Tea Party Chapter of the Daughters of the American Revolution" placed a bronze tablet on the building on the corner

of Tremont and Hollis Streets, bearing the following inscription, viz:

> On this spot stood the house in which Nathaniel, David, Thomas and Josiah Bradley, with James Fulton, assisted by Sarah Bradley Fulton, disguised themselves as Mohawk Indians, and took part in throwing the tea into Boston Harbor, December 16, 1773.
>
> Hurrah for Griffins Wharf—
> The Mohawks are coming.

The members of the Boston Tea Party were no ordinary men. The profound secrecy in which they held their names, and the total abstinence from plunder, show clearly the character of the men. We have already seen that John Hancock and Paul Revere were among the number. Two other great leaders of the people, William Molineux and Dr. Young, were also members of that band. Many of them were mechanics and apprentices, but they were mechanics of the Stamp of Howard, Wheeler, Crane and Peck, who could restrain in due subordination the more fiery and dangerous element, always present in popular demonstrations.

There were professional men like Dr. Story, and merchants, such as Proctor, Melville, Palmer, May, Pitts and Davis; men of high character and standing so that all classes were fairly represented. They were largely men of family and position in Boston. Two lists of the members of that party have been given to the world. The first was published in 1835 by an aged Bostonian who was well informed on the subject. The second list is derived principally from family traditions. We find the average age of 66 members to be 27 years, and 32 of the 36 are known to have served in the Revolutonary Army.

Did space permit, a little sketch of many of the members of the party would be interesting reading. There was John Crane, Colonel of the Massachusetts Regiment of Artillery in the Continental Army, a most able officer. Seth Ingersoll Brown of Cambridge, who afterwards fought at Bunker Hill and who never forgot the cry that went up from his comrades in that fight of "No ammunition—no ammunition." He was a tavern keeper after the war and was landlord of a Tavern in Wings' Lane, Elm Street. He was

a good singer, one of his favorite songs was regarding the Battle of Bunker Hill.

"We marched down to Charlestown ferry
And there we had a battle;
The shot it flew, like pepper and salt,
And made the old town rattle."

The Bradlees, David, Thomas and Nathan, lived on the southerly corner of Hollis and Tremont Streets. Their sister, Mrs. Fulton, helped to disguise them, and followed them to the wharf. They were in the fight at Bunker Hill. Samuel Fenno, a South End boy, patriotic and courageous, who made a vow never to drink tea, which he kept to the day of his death. Samuel Gove, his father, was a Tory, who sailed away with the British, March 17, 1776. Samuel was one of the youngest members of that party, being but 15 years of age. He was one of the Boston school boys who, at noonday and under the eyes of the British guard, carried off and secreted the cannon from the gun house on the corner of Tremont and West Streets. Thomas Mackin, a native of Staffordshire, England. He was wounded at Bunker Hill while serving as Lieutenant of Artillery. He was a fine engineer and assisted in laying out the works of the American Army at Yorktown.

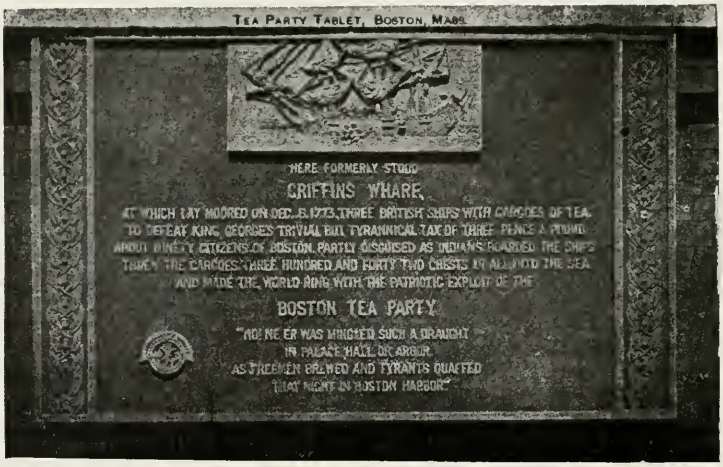
Major Thomas Melville was a member of the "Long Room Club." He was at Bunker Hill and was selected by Gen. Warren as one of his aids. He had command of a battery at Nantasket at the time the British evacuated Boston, and discharged the first gun at the hostile ships as they were sailing away. After the war he was Naval Officer of the Port of Boston. William Molineux was a distinguished and patriotic merchant of Boston, and like Revere and Johonnot, he was of Huguenot descent. He died in 1774 and it was a great loss to the patriot cause. Jonathan Parker was a Roxbury farmer and a high Son of Liberty. He brought safely through the British lines the two cannon taken by Samuel Gove and his companions. Parker brought a load of hay to town and took home a load of manure, which he piled on top of the guns in the bottom of the wagon. Lendall Pitts.—He commanded the division that boarded the brig Beaver. The Pitts mansion, where the old patriots loved to gather, stood on the site of the

Howard Atheneum. Pitts Street perpetuates the name of this noted family. Four members of this family are prominently associated with the Boston Tea Party. It was Captain Pitts who had the colloquy with the British admiral as his division was returning from their service. No one of their descendants bearing the name is surviving in Boston. Capt. Henry Prentiss was born in Medfield and was the son of Rev. Joshua Prentiss who, for forty-five years, was pastor of the Holliston Church. Capt. Prentiss served in the Revolutionary Army at Cambridge, Long Island, and at Trenton. He and his brother, Appleton, were the first to introduce into New England the art of printing calico. He lived in a stone house at the head of Hanover Street. Colonel Edward Proctor was a prominent citizen and military officer of Boston. He commanded the guard on the "Dartmouth" on the night of November 29, 1773. He was an importer of West India goods at the sign of the "Schooner" on Fish Street at the North End. He served in the Revolutionary War and was a member of the Committee of Correspondence and Safety. Colonel Henry Purkett was 18 years of age at the time of his service in the Boston Tea Party. Enlisting as a soldier in the Revolutionary Army, he served the full term, was at Trenton and Brandywine and was a Sergeant in Count Pulaskki s Cavalry. After the war he conducted a very successful business as a cooper on South Street, joining a company of cavalry after the war he went through all the grades to Colonel. A member of St. Andrews Royal Arch Chapter, this encomium was passed upon him at his death by his brother Masons: "Uprightness and exactness were prominent traits of his character, and universal love and charity for all mankind were sincerely exhibited in all his social intercourse. He had troops of friends, but it is not known that he ever had an enemy."

William Russell, on returning to his home on Temple street after the tea party, took off his shoes and carefully dusted them over the fire, in order that no tea should remain, and saw every particle consumed. He served as Sergeant-Major and Adjutant in Craft's Artillery Regiment in the Rhode Island campaign. Afterwards he joined a privateer, was captured, and kept in Mills Prison, Plymouth, England, for nearly three years. He served later in another privateer, was again taken prisoner and confined

in that horrible prison ship the "Jersey," at New York. His privations and sufferings caused his early death. Joseph Shed was a carpenter by trade and worked upon Faneuil Hall during its rebuilding and enlargement. He was intimately associated with Samuel Adams and other leading patriots, before and during the Revolutionary War. His residence was on Milk Street, where the Equitable Life Insurance Company's Building now stands. In his house a number of persons belonging to the Tea Party arrayed themselves, December 16, 1773. Samuel Adams was a frequent visitor at his house and Shed's grandson has the china punch bowl out of which the old patriot drank when Independence was declared. Samuel Sprague, the father of the banker poet, Charles Sprague, was born in Hingham and was 20 years of age when he assisted in throwing the tea overboard. To disguise himself he climbed the roof of a low building, which had a stove pipe for a chimney, where he obtained a lot of soot and blacked his face. He lived in a two-story wooden house, No. 38 Orange (now Washington) Street, directly opposite Pine Street. General Ebenezer Stevens was a distinguished artillery officer in the Continental Army. When the Boston Port Bill went into operation he removed to Providence and he and John Crane were partners in the business of carpentering. He was made First Lieutenant of Crane's Artillery Train and served through the Siege of Boston, was made Captain in Knox's Artillery Regiment and took part in the Expedition to Canada. On the surrender of Burgoyne he was appointed Lieutenant-Colonel, and was assigned to Colonel Lamb's Regiment, taking part in Lafayette's operations in Virginia, and at Yorktown he commanded the artillery, alternating with Lamb and Carrington. After the war he became one of the leading merchants of New York. Dr. Elisha Story during the Revolutionary War, was Surgeon in Colonel Little's Essex Regiment. He fought as a Volunteer at Lexington and also at Bunker Hill until obliged to remove a wounded friend to Winter Hill, where he spent the night caring for the wounded. He was with Washington at Long Island, White Plains and Trenton. His oldest son, Joseph, became Associate Justice of the Supreme Court of the United States." Dr. Story was a "skillful physician and a man of great benevolence of heart." Captain Josiah Wheeler lived in half a double house No

38 Orange Street, by the side of Samuel Sprague. He commanded a company of "Minute Men" at the opening of the Revolution, most of whom were skilled carpenters and joiners, and by Washington's order, he superintended the erection of the forts on Dorchester Heights. He was employed in building the present State House on Beacon Hill. Dr. Thomas Young was a most conspicuous figure in the early Revolutionary moveemnts in Boston. "He was the first President of the North End Caucus." March 5, 1771, he delivered the first oration commemorative of the Boston Massacre, at the Manufacturing House in Hamilton Place. He was an army surgeon in 1776, and was afterwards a resident of Philadelphia. Of the Tea Party, about 25 were Free Masons, and a large number were members of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company.



Tea Party Tablet.

The Boston Port Bill, 1774

The general opposition of the Colonies to the principle of "taxation without representation" had proved of great annoyance to the British Government. The tax on tea and the arbitrary measures to enforce it had brought matters to a crisis in America. One sentiment and one determination pervaded the Colonies. Taxation was to receive its decisive blow. "Whoever submitted to it was an enemy to his country." We have already noted the bold action of the patriots in the Boston Tea Party. It was done so orderly and so systematically that His Majesty's ministers and the British Parliament saw that it was not the rash and intemperate proceeding of a mob, but the resolute, well considered act of sober reflecting citizens, for those engaged in the work dispersed quietly to their homes without tumult. When the news of the Boston Tea Party reached England, early in 1774, King George sent a message to Parliament asking that body to devise means for the immediate suppression of tumultuous proceedings in the Colonies. The House of Commons replied that he should be sustained in efforts to maintain order in America. Angry debates followed. Burke says: "That the House of Commons became as hot as Faneuil Hall or the Old South Meeting House." The Ministerial Party said: "There is open rebellion in America and it must be punished." The opposition replied: "Repeal your unjust laws and deal righteously with the Americans and there will be peace and loyalty there." But the House adopted the Resolutions pledging its support to the King and his ministers by an overwhelming vote. With such an endorsement both the King and his subservient tool, Lord North, determined to severely punish Boston, and the Boston Port Bill was submitted and passed. It provided for the removal of the Custom House, Courts of Justice and Government officers of all kinds from Boston to Salem; all lading and unlading of goods, wares and merchandise were to cease in the town and harbor of Boston, on and after the 4th of June. It also provided that when the rebellious town should fully and humbly submit to royal authority the King should

have the power to open the port and restore the Government business. "North justified the measure by asserting that Boston was the ringleader in every riot and always set the example which others followed." "He believed severe punishment would strike terror throughout the Colonies and so bring the Americans in subjection to the Crown." Another member of the House said: "Bostonians ought to have their town knocked about their ears and they ought to be destroyed." Burke boldly told them: "The bill is unjust since it bears upon the city of Boston, while it is notorious that all America is in flames. You are contending for a matter which the Bostonians will not give up quietly." But all the persuasions and warnings fell on deaf and prejudiced ears for the Boston Port Bill became a law. The King signed it on the 31st of March 1774. One historian says: "It was the fatal knife of vivisection that severed the American people from their unnatural mother. The wound was made non-healable from the searing given it by the unrighteous acts which followed." The success attending his efforts in Parliament with the Boston Port Bill, emboldened Lord North to introduce other oppressive measures and soon followed a bill for better regulating the government of Massachusetts Bay, which, in all its provisions was an attempt to subvert the Charter of Massachusetts, and a declaration of war upon the rights of the people of the province. This bill also passed both Houses of Parliament. Full of arrogance and hatred, he gave a third turn to his engine of oppression, and this was a bill providing for a trial in England of all persons charged in the Colonies with murders committed in support of government. It was intended as a guaranty of comparative safety to those who might shoot or bayonet "rebels" in the name of the King; Colonel Barre denounced it "as the most extraordinary resolution ever heard in the Parliament of England. It offers new encouragement to military insolence already so insupportable. Americans are deprived of a right which belongs to every human creature, that of demanding justice before a tribunal of impartial judges." King George knew that such arbitrary measures would have to be enforced by the military arm, so a fourth bill was passed providing for the quartering of troops in America. The Boston Port Bill reached Boston early in May 1774. Just a few days previous, Governor Hutchinson was superseded by General Gage, as Governor of Massachusetts. The Sons of Liberty

in New York sent their sympathy to Boston and entreated her patriots to stand firm in their support of these opposition measures. All the Colonies saw, in the Boston Port Bill, the dangers foreshadowed to their liberties. New York suggested a General Congress of the Colonies, and it was approved by all. So originated the famous First Continental Congress, which convened in 1774. General Gage on his arrival in Boston, was most courteously received by the citizens of Boston, and a militia company, commanded by John Hancock escorted him to the State House. General Gage thought that reconciliation was near at hand, and the people were ready to submit. But his hopes must have been dispelled the next morning when he learned that during the night an effigy of Hutchinson had been hung in front of Hancock's house. The next day after the arrival of the Act, a town meeting of the citizens was called for a conference of citizens and of the Committees of nine towns on "the critical state of public affairs," and Samuel Adams presided at the meeting. The cause of Boston became the cause of all the colonies. From the forum and the pulpit and in the columns of the newspapers, the Port Bill was denounced. At meridian on June 14, 1774, the port was closed. The church bells in Philadelphia and elsewhere were muffled and tolled a funeral knell. "The law was rigidly enforced. Not a vessel of any kind was allowed to be used in the harbor. Not a pound of hay, not a sheep or a calf could be brought in from the islands; not a stick of timber or package of merchandise could be taken by water from wharf to wharf. Not a parcel of goods could be ferried across the Charles. Business of all kinds was immediately and completely paralyzed. A cordon of war vessels enclosed the town and the arrival of several regiments made Boston an immense garrison." The British ministry authorized Gage to order his soldiers to shoot down citizens who should not be docile, and all officers and soldiers guilty of homicide in America were to be taken to England for trial as by the law to which we have already referred. General Gage had orders to arrest when he should deem prudent to do so, Samuel Adams, John Hancock, and Dr. Joseph Warren and send them to England to be tried for treason. Adams knew this and with the halter about his neck he said of his beloved and stricken Boston: "She suffers with dignity, and rather than submit to the humiliating terms of an edict,

barbarous beyond precedent under the most absolute monarchy she will put the malice of tyranny to the severest test. An empire is rising in America and Britain by her multiplied oppressions, is achieving that independency which she dreads. We have a post to maintain to desert which would entail upon us the curses of posterity." The utter prostration of business in Boston produced widespread suffering and it affected all classes, but they had faith that deliverance would come and they endured the severe chastisement with equanimity. "The wharves of Boston were deserted, her warehouses closed and grass was growing in her streets. Her once wealthy citizens were reduced to poverty, and there was no employment for the poor, but the spirit of her people was undaunted. They were cool, shrewd and sensible, equal to the emergency, and in the game of diplomacy were more than a match for General Gage, the British Commander. They kept the town meetings alive indefinitely, meeting in Faneuil Hall, and from thence adjourning to the Old South Meeting House. There were soldiers at every turn, and cannon so placed as to menace their lives and property. No rash or foolish acts marred the dignity of their fortitude." Food was sent from the outside to the suffering poor.

The generous citizens of the South sent them rice, with words of cheer and encouragement. The Northern Colonies sent them grain and sheep and beeves and money. Even the City of London, in its corporate capacity, sent them three-quarters of a million of dollars for the relief of the poor of Boston. The people of Marblehead and Salem offered the free use of their wharves and stores to the merchants of Boston, for they scorned to profit by the misfortunes of their neighbors. General Gage, although backed by British bayonets, did not dare to make use of them except in an extremity. The flaming proclamations which he issued from time to time excited the ridicule of the patriots. He was more puzzled by the forbearance of the people than by their defiance. The air was full of the spirit of insurrection, yet no one committed overt acts of treason. There were handbills and newspapers of an inflamamtory nature, but all within the confines of the law. Several times he was on the point of arresting Hancock and Adams, but such an act might have cost him his life. Late in the summer he erected fortifications across Roxbury Neck. This

aroused the indignation of the people, who foresaw their absolute enslavement. "The Boston carpenters, although suffering from enforced idleness would not work on these fortifications at any price. He heard that there was gun-powder at Charlestown and Cambridge, belonging to the province and sent out troops to seize it, and the indignation of the people rose to fever heat."

A few days later a rumor went through the Province that war had begun in Boston, and that the King's troops were murdering the citizens. In thirty-six hours the whole country of two hundred miles had the news, and the Minute Men seized their arms and started for Boston. If General Gage had been a wise man, he would have paused, and heeded such an object lesson. But he broke up the eight military companies in the town, composed of patriots, and dismissed John Hancock from the command of the Independent Corps of Cadets. That body, indignant at the treatment of their beloved Commander, sent a committee to General Gage at Salem, surrendered the flag which he had presented to the Corps, and notified him that they had disbanded themselves. Gage, who was never diplomatic or conciliatory when facing the irritated citizens, completely lost his temper and berated the committee soundly.

On the 6th of October the Continental Congress passed the following resolution:—

"Resolved, That this Congress approve the opposition of the inhabitants of Massachusetts Bay to the Execution of the late Acts of Parliament, and if the same shall be attempted to be carried into execution by force in such case, all America ought to support them in their opposition."

"That resolution was like the luminous writing on the wall warning Belshazzar of impending danger." But stubborn and vindictive King George was blind and deaf and this Resolution goaded him to an insane frenzy, and he proclaimed his American subjects, "rebels." King George expressed his ultimatum with bitter emphasis and scorn, in these words: "The New England governments are now in a state of

rebellion. Blows must decide whether they are to be subject to this country or to be independent."

At a session of Parliament held January 20, 1775, Benjamin Franklin was present by invitation of Lord Chatham, who, taking him by the arm, introduced him to the doorkeepers, saying as he did so, "This is Dr. Franklin, whom I would have admitted to the house." During the session, Lord Chatham, leaning upon his crutch, in a clear voice proposed an address to the King, asking him to immediately despatch to General Gage an order to remove his forces from Boston as soon as the rigors of the season would permit. "I wish, my lords," said Chatham, "not to lose a day in this urgent crisis. An hour now lost may produce years of calamity. I contend not for indulgence, but justice to America. The spirit which now resists your taxation in America is the same which formerly opposed wars, benevolence and ship money in England; the same which established the essential maxim of your liberties, that no subject of England shall be taxed but by his own consent."

In concluding his great speech, this noble plea for justice in dealing with America, he paid a high compliment to the wisdom and discretion of the Continental Congress, which is a complete refutation of some of these latter day "loyalists" who have tried to smirch the character of the leading patriots of Boston, and to belittle the intelligence of the American people. He said: "When your lordships look at the papers transmitted to us from America, when you consider the decency, firmness and wisdom, you cannot but respect their course and wish to make it your own. For myself, I must avow, that in all my reading,—and I have read Eucydides, and have studied and admired the master States of the world—for solidity of reasons, force of sagacity and wisdom of conclusion, under a complication of different circumstances, no nation, or body of men, can stand in preference to the General Congress at Philadelphia.

"The histories of Greece and Rome give nothing equal to it; and all attempts to impose servitude upon such a mighty continental nation must be vain—must be fatal. We shall be forced, ultimately, to retreat; let us retreat while we can: not when we must. These violent acts

must be repealed; you will repeal them. I pledge myself for it. I stake my reputation on it. You will in the end repeal them. Avoid, then, this humiliating necessity.

"With a dignity becoming your exalted station, make the first advance to concord, peace and happiness, for that is your true dignity. Concession comes with better grace from superior power, and establishes solid confidence in the foundations of affection and gratitude. Be the first to spare; throw down the weapons in your hands.

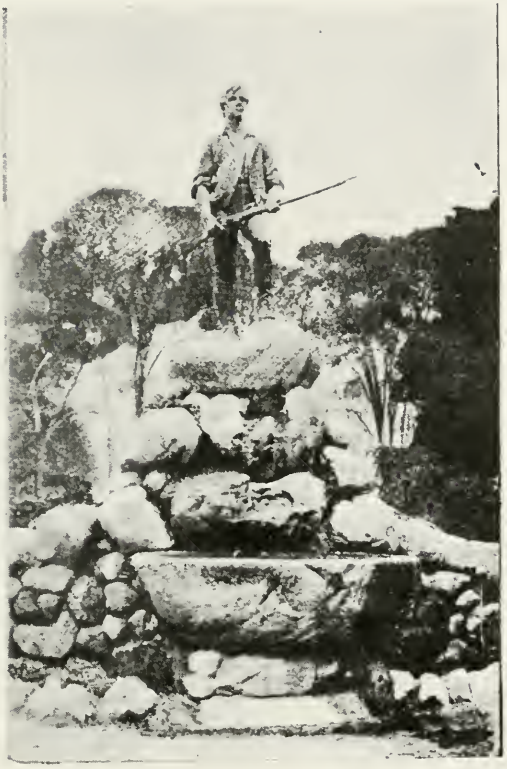
In conclusion, my lords, if the ministers thus persevere in misadvising and misleading the King, I will not say they can alienate the affections of his subjects from his crown; but I will affirm, they will make the crown not worth his wearing. I will not say that the King is betrayed, but I will pronounce that the Kingdom is undone." This bold speech aroused the King to great anger and expressed his desire for the arrival of the day "when decrepitude, or old age should put an end to Chatham, as a trumpet of sedition."

"All through March and April, 1775, Boston was a cauldron of intense feeling. Gage had been irresolute and timid, but now he resolved to nip rebellion in the bud, and proposed to seize John Hancock and Samuel Adams, as arch traitors, and send them to England, for trial on a charge of treason, also to send out troops to Concord and other places and seize all the munitions of war which the people had gathered and he fixed upon the night of April 18th as the time for carrying his plans into execution." The secret leaked out and when the 18th of April came, the patriots watched every movement of the British troops with the keenest interest. Lord Percy, who was one of Gage's confidants, heard a group of citizens conversing as he was crossing the Common and one of them said, "the British will miss their mark." "What mark?" said Percy. "The cannon at Concord," was the reply. Percy at once informed General Gage, who immediately issued orders to his guards not to allow any one to leave the city that night. It was too late. William Dawes had gone over the Neck to Roxbury with a message from Warren to Hancock and Adams, and Warren and Revere were at Charlestown awaiting the development of events. Revere had engaged

his friend Newman, sexton of the North (Christ) Church to give him a timely signal. He said to his friend:—

"If the British march
By land, or sea, from the town tonight,
Hang a lantern aloft in the belfry arch
Of the North Church tower, as a signal light.
One, if by land, and two, if by sea,
And I, on the opposite shore will be
Ready to ride and spread the alarm,
Through every Middlesex village and farm,
For the country folk to be up and to arm!"

And thus was ushered in that "glorious morn at Lexington."



The Minute Man Statue on Lexington Common

"By the rude bridge that arched the flood.
Their flag to April's breeze unfurled.
Here once the embattled farmers stood
And fired the shot heard 'round the world.'"

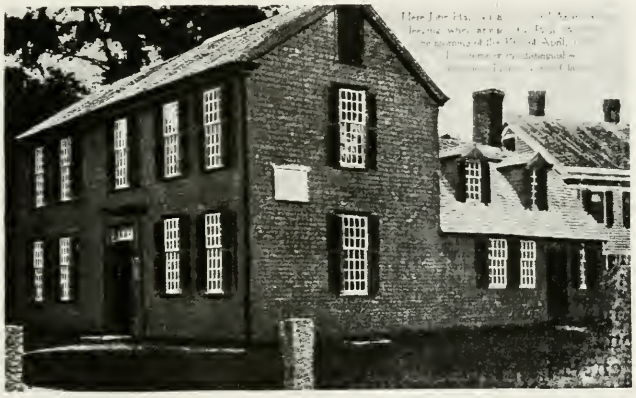
Ralph Waldo Emerson.

Lexington and Concord
April 19, 1775

Previous to the battle of Lexington the Patriots saw that it was their paramount duty to provide an organized military force in defence of their rights and property. Two months previous to the battle, there was a thorough military organization of the Province. The company of "Minute Men" in each town was made up of volunteers from its able bodied men, and these companies were well drilled. Massachusetts had 15,000 men ready for the onset. Dr. Warren saw that a conflict was inevitable in the immediate future and he advised Samuel Adams and John Hancock not to return to Boston, but to remain in Lexington. General Gage had received imperative orders from England to seize the two men and hold them as traitors.

The object of the expedition to Concord was not only to destroy supplies belonging to the Patriots, but to take these two men, but the midnight ride of Paul Revere thwarted the plan of the British General. A large amount of military supplies had been accumulating in Concord. There were 21,549 firearms, 17441 pounds of powder, 22191 pounds of musket balls, and 144,699 flints, 15,000 canteens, 1100 tents, 1000 iron soup pots. A large supply of wheelbarrows, pick axes, axes, spades, etc. Of commissary supplies they had a large amount of flour, rice, salt beef, salt fish and molasses, and many cannon of various sizes. As can readily be seen the destruction of these supplies would have been a serious loss to the patriots. There was also quite an accumulation of stores at Worcester. General Gage had his spies out in various directions to ascertain the amount and location of supplies and to report as to the best method of seizing them. One of them, a British soldier 22 years of age said: "The General asked what I thought of destroying the stores at Concord, only 18 miles. I stated that I thought 500 mounted men might go to Concord in the night and destroy the stores and return safe, but to go with 1000 foot to destroy the stores the country would be alarmed, and the

greater part of them would be killed or taken." The result proved the soundness of his judgment. The night of April 18th was clear and just as the moon was rising the British troops bound for Lexington were landing at Lechmere Point, Cambridge. But Revere was ahead of them and on a swift and powerful horse was speeding towards Lexington. At Charlestown Neck, he was almost captured by British officers, but escaped by turning back towards Charlestown, and taking the Medford road. He reached Clark's house in Lexington, a little after midnight, and hurriedly inquired



Hancock Clark House, Lexington

for Mr. Hancock of Sergeant Munroe, who with eight men were guarding the house. "Don't make so much noise," said the Sergeant, "the family have just retired, and I am directed not to allow them to be disturbed by any noise." "Noise," exclaimed Revere, "you will have noise enough before long. The Regulars are coming out." He knocked on the door, and Mr. Clark, the owner of the house inquired, "Who is there?" Revere answered, "I want to see Mr. Hancock." Hancock, who was in bed, but not asleep, recognized the voice of the messenger, and called out, "Come in, Revere, we are not afraid of you." When they heard the story of the impending danger the whole house was astir. Mr. Dawes, another messenger of the Committee of Safety, who took the route to Lexington, via Roxbury, arrived and confirmed Revere's statement. After a light refreshment,

Revere and Dawes started for Concord, warning the inhabitants by the way, as Revere had done between Medford and Lexington. They were overtaken by Dr. Samuel Prescott, who had been wooing a young lady in Lexington, and he joined them in their patriotic errand. They had gone but a short distance when Revere and Dawes were surrounded by some British officers, and captured. Prescott dashed over a stone wall on his active horse, thus eluding capture, and pushed on to Concord, where he gave the alarm at two o'clock on the morning of April 19. The British officers questioned Revere and Dawes, but received only evasive answers. While they were threatening the prisoners, a church bell was heard to ring and then another, and one of the prisoners said to them: "The bells are ringing, the town is alarmed—you are dead men." The officers took fright, left their prisoners and fled post haste to Boston.

The alarm aroused the "Minute Men" who seized their guns and at two o'clock in the morning they assembled in front of the meetinghouse, where they loaded their guns with powder and ball. The roll was called by brave Captain John Parker and seventy-five patriots responded "Here." As the air was chilly, and the invaders had not yet appeared, the men adjourned to the shelter of the meetinghouse. Colonel Smith, the commander of the British force was a prudent man, and noting the uprising of the people, and listening to the alarm bells, he despatched a messenger to Boston for reinforcements. Major Pitcairn was ordered to push rapidly on through Lexington, and seize the bridge at Concord. He seized and held every man whom he met on his route. Just at dawn, he and his redcoats came in sight of the patriots drawn up on Lexington Common. They halted and loaded their muskets. Captain Parker had instructed his men not to fire unless fired upon, but he said "if they want to have a war, let it begin here." There was no wavering in that little patriot band, as they were to meet the veterans of many battlefields. "Pitcairn and ome of his officers galloped forward, waving their swords over their heads, the troops rushing after them on the "double quick." "Disperse, you villains! Lay down your arms. Why don't you disperse, you rebels! Disperse!" said the Major.

The "Minute Men" made no reply and held their ground. Pitcairn, wheeling his horse, and waving his sword, shouted to his men, "Press forward! Surround the rascals." Some of the

British soldiers fired off random shots, over the heads of the Americans, but without effect. The "Minute Men" had scruples about firing until their own blood had been spilled. "Pitcairn was irritated by their stubborn obstinacy, and drawing his pistol, discharged it, and at the same moment shouted to his soldiers, "Fire!" A volley from the front ranks followed the order with fatal effect, some Americans fell dead, or were mortally wounded, and others were badly hurt. There was no further hesitation on the part of the "Minute Men." "The conditions of their restraint, were fulfilled. The blood of their comrades had been shed, and as the shrill fife of young Jonathan Harrington set the drum to beating, they returned the fire with spirit but not with fatal effect. The blood of American citizens stained the green grass on Lexington Common, but no British soldier lost his life in that memorable conflict. Captain Parker realizing that his little band was in danger of being overpowered and perhaps massacred by a greatly superior force, ordered his men to disperse. As they did so the British continued to fire, the Americans returned the shot with spirit, and sought safety behind stone walls and buildings. Four of the "Minute Men" were slain by the first fire and four afterwards and ten were wounded. Only three of the British were wounded, with Pitcairn's horse. "The bells that rang out on that warm April morning, the mercury marking 85 degrees in the shade, at noon, tolled the knell of British domination in the thirteen colonies!" Colonel Smith came up with his detachment of troops and joined Pitcairn, and after having given three cheers in token of their victory, they started off for Concord, in high spirits and confident of success. The news of the conflict on Lexington spread with almost lightning speed through the town with the cry, "To arms! To arms! the war has begun!" At Worcester the men left their farming implements in the fields, the citizens left their homes, and the Minute Men were soon on the march, and what happened at Worcester was repeated at other towns. It showed the spirit and determination of the people. Dr. Prescott reached Concord, twenty minutes after he left Revere and Dawes. He met Amos Melvin, the sentinel at the Court House and told him the regulars were coming, who seized the bell rope and rang out such a vehement alarm, that the whole town was aroused and the villagers were soon on the streets. The first to appear, with a gun, was the Rev. William Emerson, the

beloved pastor of the town, and the Minute Men rallied around him on the village green. They heard the boom of the guns at Lexington, and they made their preparations to repel the invaders. Men, women, and children worked vigorously to remove the cannon and stores to a place of safety. The Venerable James Barrett, in 1848, then 86 years of age, gave a vivid account of that day. He said: "I was a lad, fourteen years old. I could not carry a musket, but I could drive oxen. Stout

Kitchen HANCOCK-CLARKE *House*

men and women could load carts with stores and then boys and girls of my age would go, one on each side of the oxen with goads, and whip them into a trot, and so we carried away the stores, and hid them under pine boughs, before the British regulars appeared." The Minute Men formed a battle line, being veterans of the French and Indian wars. They fell back to a spot on the Common under command of Col. James Barrett, on a hill, about eighty rods from the centre of the village, which was hardly accomplished when the redcoats and flashing bayonets of the regulars were seen a quarter of a mile down the road. Some proposed to begin the fight where they stood, but cooler and wiser heads, seeing the odds against them, advised falling back a little distance, where they would be much

stronger by reason of the militia that was coming in to their aid. They took post on rising ground just beyond the North Bridge about a mile from Concord Common. "The British entered Concord in two divisions. Smith and Pitcairn remained in the town, and sent six companies to secure the bridges, prevent the militia from crossing them, and to discover and destroy the secreted stores, the hiding place of which had been revealed by the Tories. A party went to the house of Colonel Barrett, expecting to find stores there, but were disappointed.

The marauders could find but little for which they came. The people did their work well that morning. They demanded refreshments of Mrs. Barrett and offered to pay for them. She refused the money, saying: "We are commanded to feed our enemy if he hungers." In the village they broke open sixty barrels of flour, one half of which was afterwards saved. They broke the trunions of several cannon, burned sixteen cannon wheels, a few barrels of wooden trenchers and spoons, cut down the Liberty Pole and set the Court House on fire. The Committee of Safety did their work well in the hiding of stores and supplies. This British raid, so meagre in results, was about as poorly planned as it possibly could be. By ten o'clock the little force of Continentals had increased to four hundred for the Minute Men from Carlisle, Chelmsford, Weston, Littleton and Acton, came flocking in, and they numbered about half as many as the Regulars. Major Buttrick, of Concord, took command. They saw the smoke rising from the village. They were a little band standing for the defence of their homes and the question arose in their minds, "What shall we do? Would it be treason to attack British troops who were destroying their property and trampling on their rights?" They took counsel of their duty and acted promptly. They pressed forward in double file, with trailed arms to drive the British from the North Bridge, which the British were trying to destroy. As Major Buttrick and his men rushed forward to save it, the Regulars opened fire on them. Captain Davis, of Acton, and one of his company were killed, when Buttrick shouted, "Fire, fellow soldiers, for God's sake, fire!"

The Minute Men delivered a full volley which killed three of the British and wounded several others. Several other shots were fired, when the British retreated and the Minute Men took possession of the bridge. At noon the whole invading force was in full retreat toward Lexington. The whole country was in arms, as a British officer expressed it, "the Ameri-

Battle of Lexington April 19, 1775

cans seemed to drop from the clouds." By the middle of the forenoon, the British sent to Boston for re-inforcements and at 2 o'clock Earl Percy came into Lexington at the head of 1,100 men. The war had really begun and in good earnest. In open highways, in wooded ravines and behind stone walls, fences and buildings, the exasperated yeomanry attacked the panting and fleeing British regulars. Man after man fell dead in the ranks, or was badly wounded, until great wagons were filled with slain and wounded. The heat was intense, the dust

Dawes, a Minute Man Sent to Lexington by Dr. Warren

was intolerable: the men were suffering from want of sleep, were hungry, thirsty, and fatigued from long and constant marching, and the eight hundred men, the flower of the British army, must have surrendered to the "farmers" but for the arrival of Earl Percy, with reinforcements.

The retreating British reached Charlestown, between 7 and 8 in the evening. Colonel Smith's men had marched 36 to 40 miles in 24 hours. All the way to Charlestown, the Minute Men of 31 towns, were harrying their rear. It was a complete rout of British regulars, who lost in killed, wounded and missing, 273 men, out of a total of 800. The news first reached England, through American sources, Capt. Richard Derby, of

The Flight of the British from Concord.

Statue of Minute Man at the Bridge, Concord

Battle Monument at the Green, Concord

Salem, a retired shipmaster, and a member of the Provincial Congress, patriotically tendered his own schooner, the diminutive "Quero," commanded by his son, John Derby, a bold and skilful navigator, to carry news to Franklin, the American agent in London. He took the risk of storms at sea, rocks on the shore, and British men-of-war, making the voyage in 29 days—100 miles and more a day,—and reaching London twelve days before the vessel despatched by General Gage. He carried copies of the Essex Gazette, giving full account of the battle which the London papers admitted, tallied very closely with the official report from General Gage. Captain John Derby of Salem, is worthy to stand by the side of the great sailors and commanders of the American Navy, who have ever been their country's pride and boast. The Provincial Congress sent a carefully prepared narrative of the affair to the people of England through Benjamin Franklin, in which was this prophetic introduction:

"On the nineteenth of April, in the year one thousand, seven hundred and seventy-five, a day to be remembered by all Americans of the present generation, and which ought, and doubtless will be, handed down to ages, yet unborn, the troops of Britain, unprovoked, shed the blood of sundry subjects of the British King, on the field of Lexington."

"The hunt had begun with the dawn of the sun,
And night saw the wolf driven back to his den,
And never since then, in the memory of men,
Has the Old Bay State seen such a hunting again."

Edward Everett Hale.

The Battle of Bunker Hill

"And Massachusetts answers, 'Bunker Hill!'
A watchword for us all."

Three days after the fight at Lexington and Concord the Provincial Congress of Massachusetts assembled at Watertown, and a Committee was appointed to draw up a narrative of the "Massacre." They took many depositions, and it was conclusively proven that the British fired the first shot. This narrative with a firm and respectful address to the inhabitants of Great Britain, was sent to Arthur Lee, the Colonial Agent in England, and was published in the "London Chronicle," on the 30th of May, nine days before General Gage's despatches were received. It caused great excitement in London. Placards, lampoons and caricatures and doggerel verses were hawked about the streets.

The retreat of the British from Concord and Lexington was properly regarded as a defeat and a flight, and the King's ministers were reviled because the great British army in Boston had been beaten by a flock of "Yankees" The news of the battle of Lexington spread rapidly through the Colonies, and it was evident to all that the time for compromise was past. Appeals were sent out to the other New England Colonies to enlist troops with all speed. These appeals were promptly answered. New Hampshire sent two thousand men under Generals Stark and Folsom. Sturdy old Israel Putnam raised troops in Connecticut and the State commissioned him a Brigadier-General. Rhode Island sent fifteen hundred men under General Nathaniel Greene, who proved to be one of the most efficient generals of the Revolution. General Artemus Ward, appointed by the Massachusetts Assembly, was the senior officer, and took command of the little army. They established a rigid blockade, and prevented supplies from reaching the town by land, the neighboring country refused to furnish them by water. Fresh provisions and vegetables could no longer be obtained in Boston, and the

inhabitants soon experienced the privations of a besieged city. General Gage saw the perils of his situation. He saw himself surrounded by active and exasperated foes. Being a man wholly devoid of tact, instead of relaxing his rigor, he increased it. He forbade all intercourse with the

country and allowed no one to leave the town. With the supplies of food and fuel cut off, hunger stared the people in the face. The British officers and soldiers were deeply chagrined at being thus hemmed in by a rustic rout, with calico frocks and fowling pieces, but these countrymen could shoot very straight. It was the same old spirit of the Cavaliers and the Roundheads. Considering Episcopacy as the only loyal faith they burned and desecrated the sectarian places of worship in Boston. The Provincials retaliated by burning an Episcopal Church in Cambridge.

Both parties panted for action, the humiliated British to chastise their presumptive besiegers, the Provincials, through enthusiasm for their cause, to harass and punish their haughty foes. On the 28th of May several ships of war arrived at Boston from England, with large reinforcements of troops, under command of Generals Howe, Burgoyne and Clinton. Burgoyne could not conceal his scorn and surprise and exclaimed, "What, ten thousand peasants keep five thousand King's troops shut up! Well, let us get in and we will soon find elbow room!" Two years later this same boasting Burgoyne tested the fighting qualities of these peasants at Saratoga, when nearly six thousand of British troops of his command, unconditionally surrendered.

At this time General Gage issued a most insulting proclamation, declaring martial law, branding all citizens in arms, and their abettors as rebels, and parricides of the Constitution, and offering pardon to all who should return to their allegiance, excepting Samuel Adams and John Hancock, who were reserved for condign punishment as traitors. Mrs. John Adams, then in Boston, writing to her husband, says: "All the records of time cannot produce a blacker page. Satan, when driven from the regions of bliss, did not exhibit more malice." The newly arrived Generals soon saw the perils of the town, and they resolved to sally out from Boston and fortify Dorchester Heights on the 18th of June, and Bunker Hill a little later. The Committee of Safety learned of the intention of the British Commanders and decided to fortify Bunker Hill before their enemies could come out. General Ward and Dr. Warren, who were very judicious, doubted the expediency of maintaining so extended a post, scantily furnished with ordnance and ammunition. General Putnam made light of the danger. He was confident of the bravery of the militia if entrenched. He was seconded by General Pomeroy, a leader of like stamp. These ideas were sanctioned by one whose opinions in such matters carried great weight, Colonel William Prescott of Pepperell, who commanded a regiment of "Minute Men." He was at this time about fifty years of age, tall and commanding in his appearance, and retaining the port of a soldier. He was in full uniform, blue coat with facings, lapped up at the skirts. He wore a

Battle of Bunker Hill.

top wig and three-cornered hat. On June 16th, General Ward issued an order for the regiments of Colonels Frye, Bridges and Prescott, Gridley's Company of Artillery, and a fatigue party of Connecticut troops under Captain Thomas Knowlton of Putnam's regiment, to parade in the camp at Cambridge at six o'clock in the evening with entrenching tools. Col. William Prescott was placed in command and he was ordered to proceed to fortify Bunker's Hill on the Charlestown Peninsula. At 9 o'clock in the evening, after a prayer by Dr. Langdon, the President of Harvard College, a large portion of these regiments accompanied by General Putnam marched over Charlestown Neck and along the road to Bunker Hill, the whole force numbering thirteen hundred men. A Council of war was held in the gloom and it was decided to fortify Breed's Hill, it being a more effective point, as it was nearer Boston. In the starlight a thousand men began the work with pick and spade. Gridley was the engineer who planned the redoubt. The men worked in great silence until dawn and were not discovered by the sentinels on board the British men-of-war, almost directly below them, whose voices shouting hourly, "All's well" were distinctly heard. Three British men-of-war, the "Lively," "Glasgow" and "Somerset,' with floating batteries, rode in fancied security, while a battery was being built on the heights just above them. At daybreak the Americans had completed a formidable redoubt, six feet above the earth. There was great consternation on board the "Lively" when the sentinels saw and reported what had been done, and the Captain at once opened fire upon the works and the other vessels opened broadsides, while the Americans within the works, unharmed by the shots worked bravely on. It was a beautiful summer morning and the cannonade at this early hour woke the British troops and the citizens from their slumbers, and the roofs and steeples and hills of the town were covered with people gazing at the strange sight. General Gage determined that the Americans must be immediately dislodged, and the newly arrived Generals prepared to land troops on Charlestown Neck in rear of the Americans and thus cut off their retreat. General Gage decided to attack them in front. A little past noon 2400 troops comprising infantry, grenadiers and artillery with twelve pieces of artillery crossed the Charles River in boats, landing in Charlestown

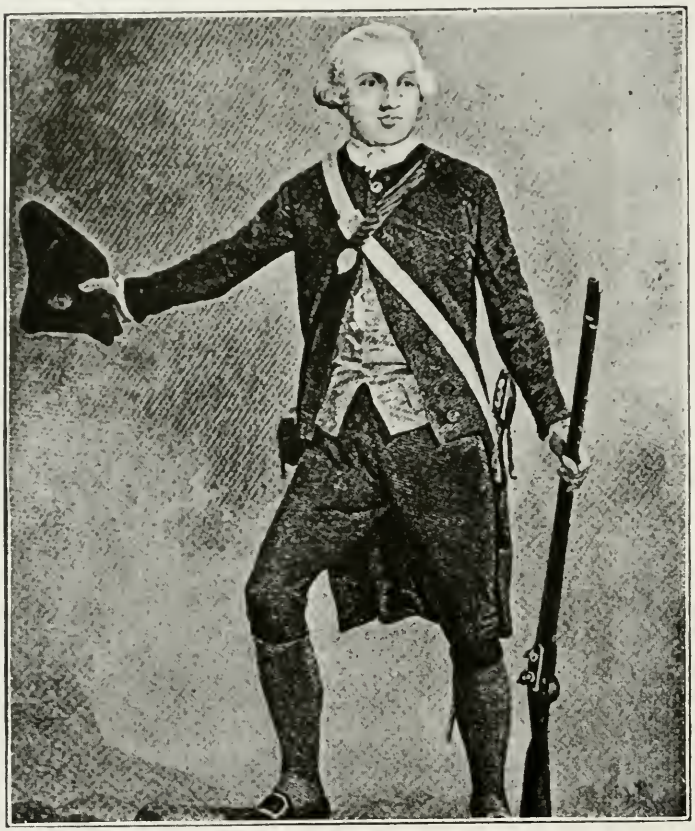
at the head of the present Chelsea bridge. Meantime the British opened a very heavy fire from their men-of-war and from Copp's Hill. Upon landing in Charlestown, Howe reconnoitered the American position, ordered his men to dinner, and sent to General Gage for more troops. The men in the redoubt who had toiled all the forenoon, laid down the spade for the accoutrements of war. They had labored for more than twelve hours, and built a redoubt eight rods square. There were two embankments, one on the right and one on the left, the latter extending almost to the Mystic River. Colonel Prescott, at first believed that the British would attack him. When he found that the British were making every preparation to do so, he sent to General Ward for reinforcements. General Ward, who feared an attack on Cambridge, responded rather tardily to the call, but finally sent the New Hampshire regiments of Generals Reed and Stark and some small field pieces. Dr. Joseph Warren, who had just received a commission as Major General, brought news to Colonel Prescott that reinforcements were on their way. Lossing in his History of the United States gives the following account of the battle: "When Howe was about to move at three o'clock in the afternoon, the Americans were prepared for the contest. Prescott with Warren and the constructors of the redoubt were within the works, excepting the Connecticut troops, who, with the New Hampshire forces were at a rail fence and breastworks on the west of the redoubt. The artillery companies were between the breastworks and a rail fence on the eastern side and three companies were stationed in Charlestown at the foot of Breed's Hill. Just as the fight was to begin reinforcements arrived for Howe, and landed at what is now the entrance to the Navy Yard. They consisted of a regiment, some companies of light infantry and grenadiers, and a marine battalion led by Major Pitcairn of Lexington fame. The entire British force now confronting the Americans, numbered more than three thousand. At half past three o'clock General Howe's great guns moved towards the redoubt and opened fire upon the works. They were followed by troops in two columns, commanded by Generals Howe and Pigot, the infantry and grenadiers assailing the outworks. At the same time the guns on the ships and Copp's Hill hurled cannon shot in abundance at the little earthwork.

In the midst of the roaring thunder the Americans remained silent. Their leader, Colonel Prescott, had ordered them not to fire until they could see the whites of the eyes of the approaching foe. This silence was a riddle to the

Statue of Col. William Prescott.

English but it was soon solved. When they were within the prescribed distance, up rose the concealed host, fifteen hundred strong, at the word, "Fire!" and poured such a tremendous and destructive storm of bullets upon the climbers of the green slope, that whole platoons and even companies were prostrated as a scythe would have mown

down the long grass through which they were wading. Flags fell to the ground like the tall lilies of a mown meadow and the shattered army was horror struck for the moment. The bugles sounded and they fell back to the shore when a shout of triumph went up from the crest of



General Joseph Warren.

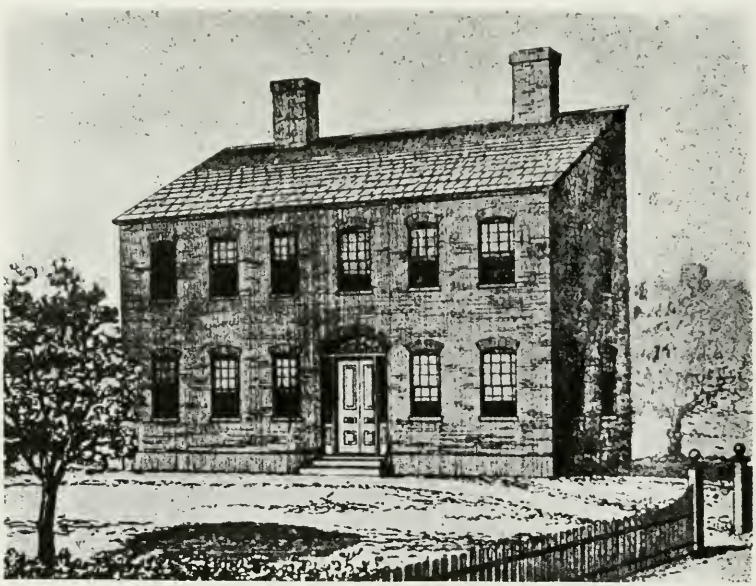
Bunker Hill. Howe rallied his men and repeated the attack with a similar result. The British were annoyed by shots from houses in Charlestown, and Howe ordered shells to be fired from Copp's Hill into Charlestown, setting fire to the town, and two hundred buildings and churches went up in flames.

General Clinton, from Copps Hill had witnessed the second recoil of the British troops, and hastened across the river. Placing himself at the head of some broken battalions, he shared in the perils and success of the third attack for Howe had rallied the troops and was again pressing against the Americans. They marched at the "double quick" and with fixed bayonets. Again from that flaming centre went out dreadful volleys, but the powder of the Americans was now almost exhausted and their fire became more feeble.

The British pushed over the ramparts and after a hand-to-hand struggle in the redoubt with bayonets and clubbed guns, the Americans were driven out. They fled across Charlestown Neck, where reinforcements had been arrested by a heavy, unceasing fire from the British war vessels. The retreat was covered by the prolonged firing of the troops of Stark, Reed and Knowlton at the outworks. General Warren was the last man to leave the redoubt, and was shot down by a bullet that pierced his brain. The British loss in this fight, in killed, wounded and prisoners was 1054. Among the officers mortally wounded was Major Pitcairn, who was taken to Boston to a house on Prince Street, where he died. The house is still standing. His remains were buried under the altar in Christ Church.

The American loss in killed, wounded and missing was 450. The battle lasted about two hours. The Americans retreated across the peninsula running the gauntlet of cannon balls from the British vessels, and encamped that night on Prospect Hill, Somerville. The British reposed on their arms on the field of battle until the next morning, when they passed over to Boston never again to appear on the mainland of Massachusetts.

This was the home of General Joseph Warren at the time of his death. The property belonged to Joshua Green. Dr. Warren hired the house of Mrs. Green in 1770. Mrs. Warren died in this house in 1773. He gave up the practice of his profession about this time, devoted his whole time and attention to legislative matters in Massachusetts preceding



Home of General Joseph Warren on Hanover St.

the Revolution. This house was taken down in 1835, and the American House was built on its site, and within a few months this old landmark of nearly a century has been demolished.

"The Sword of Bunker Hill"
William Hickling Prescott
The Well-Known American Historian

was a grandson of Colonel William Prescott, who commanded the American Forces at the Battle of Bunker Hill. He lived on Beacon Street the later years of his life and he inherited the spirit of liberty which animated his grandfather, the Hero of Bunker Hill. When Charles Sumner returned from abroad, whither he went to recuperate after the murderous asault made upon him in the United States Senate by Preston S. Brooks of South Carolina, the State of Massachusetts and City of Boston gave him a public reception and there was a parade in his honor. As the procession passed through Beacon Street, the residents for the most part showed their pro-slavery sympathies, by closing their blinds or drawing their curtains. But there were two conspicuous exceptions. The houses of Appleton and of Wm. H. Prescott showed life and light and welcome to Charles Sumner, the standard bearer of freedom.

William H. Prescott married the grandaughter of Captain Linzee, "who was a native of New England and lived in the neighborhood of Boston from the close of the Revolutionary War to the time of his death." Mr. George S. Hillard gives a very interesting history of two crossed swords which hang over a door in the halls of the Massachusetts Historical Society. "One of them was worn at the battle of Bunker Hill by Colonel William Prescott, and the other by Captain John Linzee, of the Sloop-of-war Falcon, which at the same battle was engaged on the English side, cannonading the American redoubt from the Waters of Charles River."

Thus the two swords, which had been worn by the soldier and sailor on opposite sides on that memorable day, came by inheritance and transmission into the possession of the historian, and were for many years conspicuous objects in his study, rarely failing to attract the attention of

the many strangers who came to see him. Mr. Thackeray, whose vigilant eye did not fail to notice them when he visited Mr. Prescott in 1852, thus happily alludes to them in the opening of his novel, "The Virginians," published six years later. "On the library wall of one of the most famous writers of America, there hang two crossed swords which his relatives wore in the great war of Independence. The one sword was gallantly drawn in the Service of the King, the other was the weapon of a brave and honored Republican soldier. The possessor of the harmless trophy has earned for himself a name alike honored in his ancestor's country and in his own, where genius like his has always a peaceful welcome." Mr. Prescott, who died on the 28th day of January, 1859, by his will made the following disposition of the swords: "The sword which belonged to my grandfather, Colonel William Prescott, worn by him in the battle of Bunker Hill, I give to the Massachusetts Historical Society, as a curiosity suitable to be preserved among their collections; and the sword which belonged to my wife's grandfather, Captain Linzee of the British Royal Navy, who commanded one of the enemy's ships lying off Charlestown during the same battle, I give to my wife."

But as Mrs. Prescott and the other heirs of Captain Linzee desired that the swords should not be separated, they were both sent to the Historical Society by the Executor of Mr. Prescott's will. Resoltuions were at once unanimously adopted by the Society, gratefully accepting the swords, and directing them to be arranged in a conspicuous place in their halls, crossing each other, as they had been crossed in Mr. Prescott's library, and with suitable inscriptions, setting forth their history and the circumstances of their reception. A tablet of black walnut was therefore prepared, to which they now stand attached crossed through a carved wreath of oak leaves, while over them are two shields, leaning against each other, and bearing respectively the Prescott and the Linzee arms

Some Famous Places of Resort for Whigs and Tories of Revolutionary Days

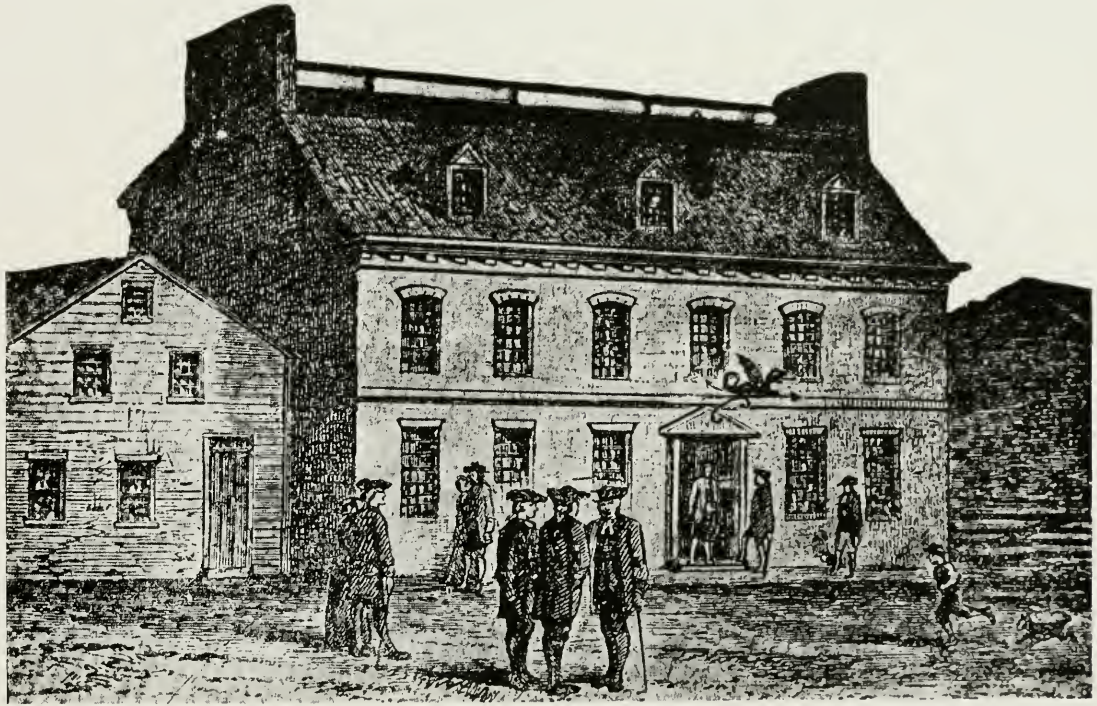
The Taverns of the 17th and 18th centuries were very different from the places called "Taverns" today, where drunkenness so often prevails. That the Puritans tolerated them is evidence that they were not places of a disorderly character. In many respects they were like the modern club. Business men met in them, to talk over their affairs and their enterprises, and "mine host" was often an old and valued friend of many of his guests.

In the days preceding the Revolution and for many subsequent years the

Green Dragon Tavern

was by far the most popular of all Boston resorts. The site was first mentioned in 1635 in its grant to James Jonson, who came in that year to Boston. He seems to have been a man of considerable importance, for he was elected a deacon in the church, and in 1656 he was Captain of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company. The Green Dragon Tavern stood in a little lane, back of Union Street, a short distance north of Hanover Street. Thomas Hawkins built an inn on the ground in 1662. Lieutenant Governor Stoughton owned the property at one time, and bequeathed it to his daughter. When Union Street was widened it took in the land immediately in the rear, so that the site is now on Union Street. The building represented in the cut was of brick, and was erected in 1690.

In those good old Colony times, the prices of meals and of liquors was regulated by law. For instance, no innkeeper could charge more than sixpence for a meal, or more than a penny for a quart of beer. It was in this Tavern that those leading patriots, Dr. Joseph Warren, James Otis, Paul Revere, John Adams and John Hancock, met almost daily, to confer over plans to free the Colonies from Great Britain, and it is believed that in one of the rooms was hatched the idea of the Boston Tea Party. In 1743 this



The Green Dragon Tavern

property was deeded for a little less than £500 to the members of St. Andrew's Lodge of Free Masons, who still hold the property. It is said they once refused an offer of $200,000 for it. In 1740 a balloon was sent up from this Tavern. While the Green Dragon was the most famous of Boston Taverns, it was not the oldest.

COLES TAVERN

was established in 1634, on Washington Street, a little north of the corner of School Street, near where Child's Restaurant is located. The pamphlet of the State Street Trust Company tells of several Public Houses on State Street, which, at one time or another have offered their good cheer to strangers and townsmen. "As early as 1712, the 'Crown Coffee House' on Long Wharf was a favorite resort for visiting seamen, merchant princes, and the young bloods of Boston. It was in the days of the 'buccaneers,' and many exciting tales were told, as the guests sipped their beer and wine."

THE ADMIRAL VERNON TAVERN

was named in honor of the famous seadog of the English navy, Lawrence Washington, who served on the staff of the Admiral, named his estate in Virginia "Mount Vernon." This Tavern stood on the corner of State Street and Merchants Row. "Over it was the wooden figure of the English Admiral, sextant in hand, in the uniform of his rank, quite appropriate as a sign for a tavern, when we learn that from the hero of 'Porto Bello' comes the term 'grog' which seafaring men have given to strong drink." Shem Drowne, the North End carver, was the artist who made the wooden image. He was noted in his day for the ships' figure heads he turned out, and it is said that Copley, the great portrait painter, watched him as he carved the figure of Admiral Vernon."

Long Wharf, in Revolutionary days was the great landing place of the town. Here the Royal Governors disembarked, and escorted by the local military bodies, marched in great pomp and state to the Town House. In 1768, the first British soldiers sent here to overawe Americans landed at this wharf. In 1778 the French Allies, under command of Count Rochambeau, were received with delight by the American patriots. The notorious Colonel Dalyrymple and his men embarked at Long Wharf for Charlestown, on that eventful morning, June 17, 1775, to take part in the

battle of Bunker Hill, from which many never returned. During the Civil War, thousands of brave boys in blue marched down State Street, amid cheers and waving flags on their way to the seat of war. The old street has witnessed many strange and stirring scenes, closely woven into the life of the nation.

On the corner of State and Kilby Streets, there stood in the days of the Revolution, a well-known public house, the resort of the patriots, and known as the

BUNCH OF GRAPES TAVERN.

Its sign was a gilded, carved bunch of grapes. It opened its doors for business in 1712, and became the favorite rallying place for the Whigs, and so continued during all the Revolutionary struggle. In this Tavern was celebrated the victory of Colonel Ethan Allen at Ticonderoga, by 100 of the solid men of Boston. At every toast rockets were discharged in the street, cannon roared, and fifes and drums played patriotic airs." At nine o'clock two barrels of grog were rolled into the street and furnished free drinks for the multitude outside. "Despite this liberality, contemporary accounts relate that before ten o'clock every one had gone quietly home, and there was no disorder." "When the news of the Declaration of Independence reached Boston, the patriots built a large bonfire in front of the tavern. The Lion and the Unicorn, and other emblems of royalty, that decorated the Old State House were torn from their resting places and burned." There is no doubt but that it was a most famous Tavern in its day. Captain Frances Goelet, an Englishman traveling in America in 1770, records in his Diary "that the Bunch of Grapes Tavern was noted as the best punch house in Boston, and was resorted to by most of the gentlemen, merchants and masters of vessels." After the Evacuation of Boston, Washington spent ten days in the town, and during this time, he, and his officers were entertained at this Tavern at an elegant dinner, as a part of the official ceremonies of the occasion. In March, 1786, a group of Continental Army Officers gathered here, and under the inspiration of General Rufus Putnam, organized the "Ohio Company" which settled Ohio, beginning at Marietta. On the other side of State Street and near the corner of Exchange Street was the

"BRITISH COFFEE HOUSE,"

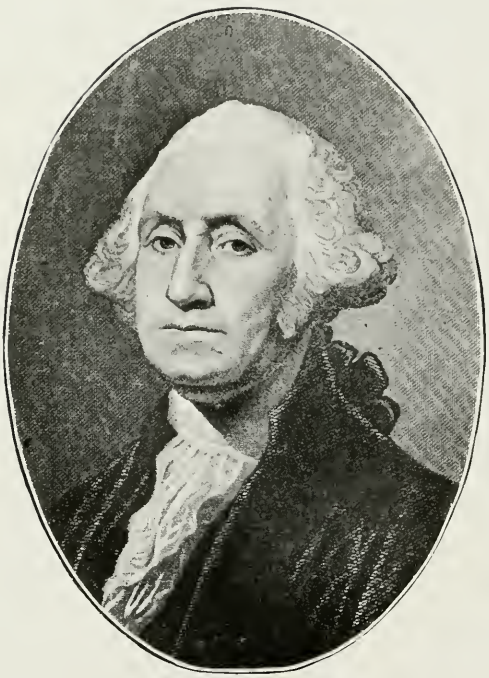
the principal resort of Tories and British officers, during the occupation of the town by the "King's Troops.' The first play ever acted in Boston was given at this Coffee House, and such was the struggle to gain admittance that quite a riot ensued, and several of the participants were arrested and spent that night in jail. It was in this resort that the brilliant orator and ardent patriot, James Otis, was assaulted and received injuries which shattered his intellect. A friend of Otis, passing by, saw the struggle, and threw himself between Otis and Robinson and doubtless saved the life of Otis. It ended the public career of Otis, for he never recovered from the wounds. On the site of the Merchants Bank Building was

THE ROYAL EXCHANGE,

another famous resort of British officers and their sympathizers. An altercation took place in this house, resulting in a duel on Boston Common, and the death of one of the parties. Governor Phipps and Chief Justice Sewall once had a famous dinner in this Tavern.

CORN COURT.

Enters Faneuil Hall Square on the southerly side. In Colonial days it was known as the Corn Market. In 1733, Madame Brazier, a niece of Lieutenant-Governor Spencer Phipps, kept an inn there, known as Brazier's Inn. She made a famous noon-day punch which was greatly enjoyed by many Bostonians of those days. When John Hancock was made Governor this Inn was renamed "The Hancock Tavern." While not so ancient as many other Boston taverns, it was nevertheless rich in historical associations. "In this tavern lodged Talleyrand, during his stay in Boston. He was at this time an exile from France. When Napoleon came into power he returned to his native country and became one of Napoleon's chief ministers." In 1796 the exiled French priest, John Cheverus, lodged here. He became pastor of the Church of the Holy Cross on Franklin Street, and later was the first Roman Catholic Bishop of Boston. In 1797, Louis Phillipe, afterwards King of France, was a guest at this house. The old sign, bearing a portrait of John Hancock, swung for over a hundred years over its doorway, and now quietly reposes in a corner of a room of the Bostonian Society.



George Washington

How Washington Compelled the British To Evacuate Boston

Although Washington took command of the American army in July 1775, it was not until the early part of 1776 that he was fully prepared for an aggressive movement. He found the army undisciplined, being for the most part raw militia. He expected to find 18,000 to 20,000 men under arms, and there were less than fourteen thousand. There was a shortage of ammunition, only nine cartridges to a man. He at once despatched letters to Rhode Island, the Jerseys, Ticonderoga and elsewhere for immediate supplies of powder and lead. The American army was in this critical condition for a fortnight. The camp was rejoiced when General Knox arrived from Ticonderoga with a long train of sledges drawn by oxen, bringing more than fifty cannon, mortars and howitzers, besides supplies of lead and flint. Further ammunition was received from the Royal Arsenal at New York and other quarters, and reinforcements of ten regiments of militia.

"In the latter part of February, 1776 Washington had everything in readiness for his great strategical move, to take possession of Dorchester Heights and fortify them. He planned that if the enemy detached a large force to drive him from the Heights, an attack would be made forthwith on the other side of Boston by General Putnam. He had four thousand picked men in readiness in two divisions under Generals Sullivan and Greene. At a concerted signal from Roxbury, they were to embark in boats near the mouth of the Charles river, cross under fire of three floating batteries, land in two places in Boston, secure the strong posts, force the gates, and work on the Neck and let in the Roxbury troops.

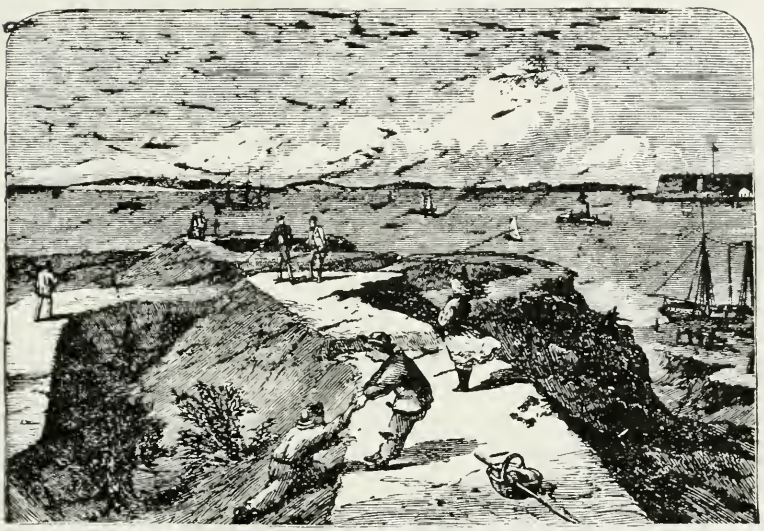
General Howe felt secure in his position in Boston. He wrote to Lord Dartmouth, "We are not in the least apprehensive of an attack upon this place from the rebels by surprise, or otherwise." The loyalists in Boston felt unbounded confidence in the ultimate triumph of Great Britain. Mean-

time British and Tories made themselves more and more obnoxious to the patriots. They disregarded their rights, were overbearing and insolent. The scarcity of all kinds of food caused great suffering among all classes, so closely had Washington drawn his lines around the town.

The evening of Monday, the 4th of March, was the date fixed upon for the occupation of Dorchester Heights. Washington saw, that by occupying and fortifying these Heights, he could completely command the town and harbor, and thus dislodge the British. Nature, in the formation of that hill, had done her best to second the efforts of the patriots, and it only remained for them to take possession and fortify. The large force which the British would have to detail to assault the works on the hill, would leave the town well nigh defenceless, against the attack of the American troops from Cambridge. Thus Washington would have the British between two fires. Washington contracted for several thirteen inch mortars, which were quickly delivered. It was necessary in making the fortifications, to find a substitute for dirt and accordingly, vast quantities of fascines and screwed hay were collected in the American camp. The fascines were made of white birch and faggots and were procured from the farm of Captain John Homans in the upper part of Dorchester. Washington selected the place on account of its obscurity. A lieutenant and thirty men were detailed to cut the brush. At seven o'clock in the evening of March 4th, during a terrific bombardment of the West Side of Boston from Cobble Hill, Lechmere Point, General Thomas of the American army, with three thousand men, marched across the causeway to Dorchester Heights. A covering party of eight hundred men led the way, then followed the carts, with the intrenching tools, then twelve hundred soldiers under the immediate command of General Thomas, and in the rear followed carts, loaded with fascines and hay. The whole move was made in the greatest silence, no one being permitted to speak above a whisper, that not a sound should be wafted over the water to the ear of some vigilant British sentry. At eight o'clock the troops arrived on the Heights, and at once began operations. Part of the covering party was stationed at the nearest point to Boston and part at the point nearest Castle Island. Then the three hundred cartsmen under the special command of Mr. Goddard of Brookline, began to transport the fascines to the hill and in a few hours,

the necessary quantities were on the ground. Bundles of hay were arranged to protect the teams and some of the drivers made three or four trips in the night.

The veteran Gridley, the engineer of Bunker Hill, laid the lines for the entrenchments on Dorchester Heights. As if by magic the fascines were set up, with stakes like basket work, and the interstices filled with whatever was available. It was a cold night, and the earth on the hill was frozen eighteen inches deep.



Dorchester Heights, 1776

The moon shone brightly and lent her light to aid the patriots in the completion of a work which was to prove of the greatest advantage to Boston and to Americans everywhere in their struggle for independence. Washington, as he walked among the men, encouraged them by saying: "Remember it is the Fifth of March and avenge the death of your brethren." As the sun arose above the horizon it revealed to the British the fortification on the Heights. The haze of the early morning made the work look extremely formidable, and General Howe gazed with astonishment upon it, and said, "the rebels have done more in one night than my whole army would have done in a month."

The British Admiral saw that unless the Americans were dislodged from the Heights, the fleet could not ride in safety in the harbor and the town must be evacuated. Relying upon the strength and discipline of his army, General Howe determined to attack the entrenchments, however great the hazard. He ordered 2,400 men, under command of Lord Percy, to repair to Castle William and to assail the works at night. Their preparations were seen by the Americans and with feverish excitement they prepared for the contest. Thousands were assmbled on the neighboring hills to witness the battle. In order to render passage up the hill more difficult, should the enemy attempt to storm the fort, the Americans had a large number of barrels filled with stone and sand and these were placed on the brow of the hill. These were to be rolled down the embankment upon the British troops as they marched up. At 12 o'clock the British troops began embarking for the Castle, but soon a violent wind arose and prevented the soldiers from reaching their destination. During the night the storm increased in fury, the rain falling in torrents. The next day the wind was still boisterous and still the heavy rain. All this time, the Americans were strengthening their redoubt. General Howe was forced to give up his project and recalled his troops. He saw that the fortifications were too strong to give any hope of successful attack and he determined to evacuate the town rather than have his little army cut to pieces by the Americans. This was astounding and heart rending news to the Loyalists in the town. Many of them decided to undergo a long voyage rather than commit themselves to the wrath of the patriots. General Howe provided vessels for their accommodation and conveyed them to Nova Scotia, where many of them settled. It must have been a descendant of one of these Tories who once told a Boston audience that the loyalists at that time did not leave Boston because they were forced to do so, but because they did not wish longer to associate with such common and illiterate people as those in the city of Boston. Those "cultured" Tories emigrated to a more congenial political atmosphere and there were no tears shed over their very hurried departure.

There was no express negotiation between Washington and General Howe but there was a tacit understanding, that no damage would be done to the town, if the British were to be permitted to leave unmolested. The Evacuation of Boston at last bore all the evidences of a panic, due to the wise strategy

of "Mr. George Washington," as the haughty Britons sarcastically called him. Results proved that he was more than a match for the trained soldier, General Howe.

As soon as the retreat of the British was observed, General Ward, with 500 men, marched in over Roxbury Neck, opened the gates of the town and entered Boston just as the last remnant of that army went aboard their ships and sailed away,

Evacuation Monument, Dorchester Heights

nevermore to inflict themselves upon liberty loving Americans. There were 78 ships and transports and between eleven and twelve thousand men, soldiers, sailors and refugees.

As Washington entered the town he was most joyfully received. The town, the state and individuals vied with each other in their expressions of deep gratitude. Throughout the Colonies the news of the Evacuation of Boston carried great joy and was everywhere regarded as a presage of the future success of the Americans in the cause to which they had pledged, "their lives, their fortunes and their sacred honor."

William Cunningham

The British Jailor of New York During the Revolution.

Many of the officers and agents sent by George the Third and his ministers to aid in "subjugating America," were men of the worst type. Corrupt, brutal and overbearing they lost no opportuity of showing their contempt of the colonists and of oppressing them. Perhaps the worst and most cruel of them all was William Cunningham, who, as we have already seen, was somewhat conspicuous during the last days of the sojourn of the British in Boston. This man, the son of a British Army Surgeon, was born in the regimental barracks in Dublin, Ireland. In 1774 he came to America and settled in New York where he made a living for himself for some time by "breaking colts" and giving riding lessons. When the Revolution broke out in 1776, he became involved in a political row with some local patriots and was forced to flee to Boston, there to seek the protection of the British Army. In Boston he attracted the attention of General Gage by his overbearing and quarrelsome disposition and particularly by his loud-mouthed espousal of the cause of the British. General Gage, who showed but little tact in his dealings with Americans, appointed the fellow, Provost Marshal of the British Army. In that autocratic position Cunningham had full range for the exercise of his mean and vindictive disposition, and he never missed an opportunity of exercising it. When General Washington forced General Gage and the British Army out of Boston, Cunningham accompanied the exiles to New York, and was put in charge of the Revolutionary prisoners there, and in Philadelphia. There were several impromptu prisons in New York where the patriot captives were lodged. One was the "City Hall," another the famous "Old Sugar House," another, "Kings," now "Columbia College," another the new "Gaol" (the old Hall of Records), which stood in City Hall Park, which was torn down a few years ago. But the worst prison of all was the prison ship "Jersey" moored on the Brooklyn Shore. Churches were

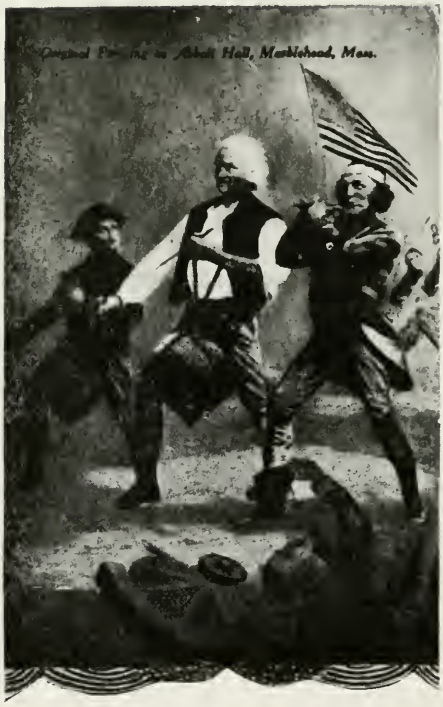
also turned into jails. When the British captured New York and Philadephia they took thousands of Americans prisoners, and among all these soldiers were many non-combatants. These latter were made prisoners because they had helped the cause of freedom by money gifts and patriotic speeches. One writer speaking of the prison ship Jersey, says: "On board this vessel the captives were herded by hundreds, in dark, foul pens, destitute of pure air and sunlight. They were given such food as a dog might well scorn and in such tiny quantities as would not suffice to keep a dog alive. The water they drank was filthy. No medical care or chance for cleanliness or exercise was granted them. Prison fever and other maladies scourged their ranks. They died like so many flies. To such fearful condition were they reduced that the lowest city outcasts were touched by pity and secretly sent them food." The fate of the captives in the New York Hall of Records, was little better. Pintard gives an account of their sufferings from which we quote: "So closely were they packed together that when they lay down at night to rest on the hard oak floor, and they wished to turn, it was all together by word of command, right,' 'left,' being so wedged as to form almost a solid mass of human bodies." No excuses could even palliate such horrible tortures practiced by the British Government upon American prisoners in the days of the Revolution. Directly Cunningham was responsible, but the Government could have bettered matters, had they chosen to do so, for the leading British officers were well aware of what was going on, but they were indifferent and had a supreme contempt for the colonists. The residents of New York knew of the cruelties as appears from an old letter written at the time, part of which reads as follows: "Folks of fashion do complain right grievously that the groanings and lamentable cries of the prisoners (both here in New York in the prison ship on the Brooklyn shore) disturb their slumbers. And they pray that Master Cunningham, our Provost Marshal, will devise some means to keep the poor wretches quiet of nights." There is abundant evidence to show that his own countrymen loathed and despised Cunningham, yet he was selected by the authorities to do this detestable and murderous work. In his confession shortly before his death he says: "I shudder to think of the murders I have been accessory to, both with and without orders from Government, especially while in New York, during which

time, there were more than two thousand prisoners who died, by stopping their rations, which I sold." There were also 275 American prisoners executed. A guard was despatched to forbid people to look out of their doors or windows, on pain of death, after which the prisoners were taken from their quarters at midnight and hung, without warning or mercy, just behind the barracks. It was this same savage Provost Marshal Cunningham, who had charge of Captain Nathan Hale, the American patriot, executed as a spy near what is now Central Park, New York. "Hale was denied the services of a clergyman and the use of a Bible, but the more humane officer who superintended the execution furnished him with materials to write letters to his mother, his betrothed, and sisters. These letters Cunningham destroyed in the presence of the victim of his brutality, while tears and sobs marked the sympathy of the multitude of spectators who witnessed the scene. Hale met his death with firmness. With unfaltering voice he said: "I only regret that I have but one life to give to my country." These were the last words uttered by the young patriot, then only a little more than twenty-one years of age." When peace was concluded between the colonies and the mother country in 1783, the wretch Cunningham returned to England with the Royal troops. Lossing, in "Our Country," gives an amusing incident concerning this man, the day of his departure, related by Dr. Alexander Anderson of New York, in his day, the pioneer wood engraver of New York. The doctor said that at the time of the evacuation of the United States by the British forces in 1783, he was then a boy between eight and nine years of age having been born three days after the battle of Lexington. He was living with his parents on Murray Street, near the Hudson River, then sparsely settled. Opposite his father's dwelling was a boarding house kept by a man named Day, whose wife was a large, stout woman and an ardent Whig. On the morning of Evacuation Day she ran up the American flag on a pole in front of her house. The British claimed possession of the city until twelve o'clock noon, and this act was offensive to them. Early in the forenoon when young Anderson was on his father's stoop, he saw a burly, red-faced British officer in full uniform coming down Murray Street in great haste. Mrs. Day was sweeping in front of her door when the officer came up to her in a blustering manner, and in loud and angry tones, ordered her to haul down the flag. She refused, when the

officer seized the halyards to pull it down himself. Mrs. Day flew at him with her broomstick and beat him so furiously over his head that she made the powder fly from his wig. The officer stormed and swore and tugged in vain at the halyards which were entangled and Mrs. Day applied her weapon so vigorously that he was soon compelled to retreat and leave the flag of the valiant woman floating triumphantly in the keen morning breeze. This inglorious attempt to haul down the colors of "Day Castle" and the result, was without doubt the last fight between the British and the Americans in the old War for Independence, and the British officer who was so thoroughly beaten by a plucky American woman was none other than the infamous scoundrel William Cunningham."

This same man on his return to England lead a riotous life resorting to various kinds of crookedness to support himself, being shunned by all decent, self-respecting people. "Being short of money to squander in dissipation he committed forgery for which crime he was tried, condemned and executed." At last justice was meted out to him at the hands of his own countrymen.

The American Flag



"Flag of the free hearts' hope and home!
By angel hands to valor given!
Thy Stars have lit the welkin dome,
And all thy hues were born in heaven.
Forever float that standard sheet,
Where breathes the foe, but falls before us,
With Freedom's soil beneath our feet,
And Freedom's banner streaming o'er us!"

Drake.

THE BIRTH OF THE FLAG.

Previous to the Declaration of Independence, each colony was a unit, and each had its own flag. Up to that date the only tie that bound them together was the common feeling against the injustice of the mother country. "The first flag that floated over the North American continent, so far as history informs us, was planted on the coast of Labrador in 1497 by John Cabot. This was the Red Cross of St. George, the royal ensign of Henry the Seventh of England, extending entirely across a white field." "From the settlement of Jamestown to that June day when the flag of the Colonies was flung to the breeze, the Red Cross of England floated over the Colonies. For 17 years the Massachusetts Colony had no flag. The religious intolerance of the time made the cross on the English flag a cause of offence. After the accession of Charles the Second to the throne, some of the Colonies used a red flag, with a pine tree or globe, instead of the cross. New England's flag was a green pine tree, upon a white field with the motto, "An Appeal to Heaven." Other mottoes were sometimes used, such as "Liberty or Death," or "Don't tread on me."

The White Flag with the Pine Tree was used from 1707 to 1777. One writer on the flag says there has been much discussion as to the flag borne by the patriots at Bunker Hill. Some assert that the patriots had no flag there. Trumbull, in his famous painting of the battle, depicts a red flag with a pine tree upon it. The flag that was borne at Concord by the men of Bedford is still in existence and may be seen in the Town Hall of Bedford. It has on it a Latin inscription, translated, "Conquer or Die," also a mailed arm, with drawn dagger, and three balls, supposed to be cannon balls. No one, today, can tell its origin. South Carolina's flag was yellow, and on it a representation of a rattlesnake about to strike, and underneath the words, "Don't tread on me." Connecticut's flag bore the motto on one side, "Who transplanted, sustains," and on the other side, "An appeal to Heaven." New York's flag had a white field with a black beaver on it. Rhode Island's flag was white with a blue anchor and the word, "Hope" above it and a blue carton with thirteen white stars. "The stripes first appeared on the flag hoisted by order of General Washington, at Prospect Hill,

Somerville, Massachusetts, January 1, 1776, the crosses upon the blue field were again seen in the Canton. When reported in England, this flag was alluded to as the "thirteen rebellious stripes." There is a theory that the stripes were formed by placing six white stripes, across the red ensign of Great Britain. This theory would seem to be confirmed by a sentiment on the national flag once given by General Washington, in these words: "We take the stars from Heaven, the red from our mother country, separating it by white stripes, thus showing that we have separated from her, and the white stripes shall go down to posterity, representing 'Liberty.'" On June 14th, 1777, the Continental Congress adopted the following Resolution: "Resolved that the Flag of our thirteen United States be thirteen stripes, alternate red and white; that the Union be thirteen stars, white, on a blue field, representing a new constellation." General Washington, Robert Morris, and Colonel Ross, were appointed a committee to get a flag designed and made. The committee went to the little upholstery shop of Betsy Ross, on Arch Street, Philadelphia and asked her to make a flag after the design they showed her. "She agreed to do it, and suggested that the stars which Washington had drawn with six points, be made with five, as being more artistic, and taking a piece of paper and folding it, she showed how the star could be made with a single clip of the scissors. The design was sketched and colored by a local artist and from it Betsy Ross made the sample flag.

The flag was first used in military service on August 2, 1777, at the time the English and their Indian allies, made an attack upon Fort Stanwix. The flag was made in the fort, the red stripes being contributed by a woman who tore them from a petticoat, the white stripes from shirts of the men, and the blue from the military cloak of Captain Abraham Swartwout. This story is confirmed by a letter still in existence. It is said that John Paul Jones was the first to fly this flag over a naval vessel, the "Ranger," which he commanded. The flag remained the same until 1795 when two stripes and two stars were added for Vermont and Kentucky. In 1818, when it was found that there must be a limit to the stripes, it was decided by Congress that the flag be permanently thirteen stripes, representing the thirteen original states and that on the admission of every new state one star be added on the union and that such addition shall take effect on the Fourth of July next succeeding such ad-

mission. Thus the form of our flag was passed by Congress in 1818. In the War with Mexico, the flag bore twenty-nine stars, in the Civil War, thirty-five. Today (1915) it has forty-eight stars, and none has ever been taken from it, the government maintaining during the Civil War, in the sixties, that the tie which binds the nation cannot be severed.

WHAT THE FLAG MEANS.

"It was a small people for which the Continental Congress prescribed this emblem and drew the design and painted its colors. At the very start the flag had a meaning, novel in such a wide application. It meant self rule by the people, independence of control by any power presuming to place the people in the attitude of vassals. There were republics before that of the United States, but they had been smothered and absorbed; ancient history records some of them. Switzerland, today, alone, survives of any preceding the United States. Our flag declared, first in all the world, the principle of liberty as we know it. It was an epochal innovation. The flag which Washington raised at Prospect Hill, Somerville, symbolized a recognition of imperial authority, while declaring the unity of the Colonies in defiance of oppression.

With the action of the Continental Congress, all compromise, or contingent alliance was repudiated. The United States stood alone, flung its own flag in defiance of all control, sought its own friends among the nations, and took its place as the first stalwart exponent of the principle of liberty. Our flag means that the right to govern depends upon the consent of the governed; that an unconsenting people may revolt, may overthrow, if possible, its alien control, and must establish its own authority upon a basis recognizable by others. Happily this was done here by the patriots of so many generations ago. They won out. The Revolutionary Flag was made, as the Continental Congress decreed, the Flag of the Republic of thirteen states. And today, this flag, augmented in its union from the original thirteen stars of the small, rebellious Colonies to the forty-eight of the great states of this twentieth century, is a blazon of the principle of liberty to the world. On each Flag Day the flags blossom out all over the country. We celebrate not only our own emancipation, but the control which our example must exert upon the ideas of the world and the for-

tunes of its inhabitants. Under the flag of our country, we can, and shall, if ever necessary, fight as of old. But under the flag we will, if possible, keep the peace, revive patriotism and civilization in countries that look to us for guidance; and prove to the nations of the earth that the great Republic of the West, stands for amity and human brotherhood, now, as ever."

Note:—The author acknowledges his great indebtedness for much of the material of this article to a little pamphlet, entitled "Our Flag," written for "The National Association of Patriotic Instructors," by Elizabeth Robbins Berry, and also to an editorial which appeared in the columns of the "Boston Post" on Flag Day.

OLD GLORY
or
THE BANNER BETSY MADE*

"We have nicknamed it Old Glory
As it floats out on the breeze,
Rich in legend, song and story,
On the land and on the seas,
Far above the shining river,
Over mountains, gorge and glade,
With a fame that lives forever,
Floats the Banner Betsy made.

"When at last her needle rested,
And her cherished task was done,
Went the banner, love invented,
To the Camp of Washington.
And the gallant Continentals,
In the morning light arrayed
Stood in ragged regimentals
Neath the Banner Betsy made.

How they cheered it, and its maker,
They, the Gallant Sons of Mars;
How they blessed the little Quaker
And her flag of Stripes and Stars,
'Neath its folds no foeman scorning
Glistened bayonets or blade,

And the breezes of the morning
Blessed the Banner Betsy made.

Years have passed but still in glory,
With a pride we love to see,
Laureled with a Nation's story,
Waves the emblem of the free
From the rugged pines of Northland
In the ever-deepening glade,
In the land of sunny Southland
Floats the Banner Betsy made.

Now she sleeps, whose fingers flying,
With a heart to freedom true,
Mingled colors, bright, undying,
Fashioned stars on fields of blue.
It will lack for no defenders
When the foreign foes invade,
For our Nation rose to splendor
'Neath the Banner Betsy made."

*Author unknown.

Betsy Ross Making the First American Flag

The Hiring of Foreign Mercenaries by England To Subjugate America

A new and ominous light dawned upon King George and his subservient ministers after the events at Lexington and Concord. They had boasted before the whole world that they would crush rebellion in America, but the task began to assume "gigantic proportions." To subdue and compel the obedience of a people, scattered along a narrow fringe of sea coast of a thousand miles would require an army of several thousand men for there were many natural obstacles to overcome, such as rugged hills, large rivers, vast morasses, and heavy wooded land almost everywhere. It was difficult to obtain enough British soldiers for such a work against a tolerably united people, smarting under the wrongs and oppressions of many years. The military establishment of Great Britain was not strong enough to spare sufficient troops and ships from the necessary police force of the kingdom to do it, so they began to look for foreign mercenaries in America and Europe —the savages of our forests and the soldiers of the old world despotisms—to aid them in enslaving between two and three millions of their best subjects." (Lossing).

The first application of King George for such troops was made to the Empress Catherine of Russia. He thought that British gold was omnipotent and that she would gladly loan him a few thousand of her "barbarians." Gibbon, the historian, wrote in 1775, regarding this action: "We have great hopes of getting a body of these 'barbarians' (Russian); the ministers, daily and hourly, expect to hear that the business is concluded."

But King George and his ministers received a flat refusal from Queen Catherine of Russia, to have anything to do with such a nefarious business, "half barbarian," as the British King thought her to be. In a letter written by her minister, she says: "I am just beginning to enjoy peace, and your majesty knows that my empire needs repose. There is an impropriety in employing so considerable a body in another hemisphere, under a power almost unknown to it, an almost

deprived of all correspondence with its sovereign. Moreover, I should not be able to prevent myself from reflecting on the consequences which would result for our own dignity, for that of the two monarchies and the two nations, from this junction of our forces, simply to calm a rebellion which is not supported by any foreign power."

This sarcastic reply greatly irritated and stung King George who expected a gracious letter and a ready compliance with his request. He sputtered out his indignation in his rapid way, and said: "She has not had the civility to answer me in her own hand, and has thrown out expressions that may be civil to a Russian ear but certainly not to more civilized ones."

Baffled in this attempt, he next turned to Holland and asked her for the loan of a brigade of troops. The great statesman of the Netherlands, Van der Capellan, replied; "A commercial State should avoid quarrels, if possible, and a republic should never assist in making war on a free people." He offered to loan England a brigade on the condition that it should not serve out of Europe, which was a polite form of denial.

At last he turned to some of the petty German rulers for mercenary troops, and closed the bargain with them in the close of the year 1775 and early part of 1776. These rulers were not so scrupulous. They had a surplus of men and their treasuries were well nigh bankrupt. These men were disposed of by the common law of trade, supply and demand. "England needed troops, the German rulers needed money." The bargain was a natural one on business principles; the morality of the transaction was quite another affair. The contracting parties were the reigning Governors of Hesse-Cassell, Hesse-Hanau, Brunswick, Anhalt, Amspach and Waldeck, and the King of Great Britain. The trade was made through Frederick II. of Hesse Cassel (1760-1785) for 22,000 Hessian soldiers, most of them well disciplined. In all 29,807 Hessians came to this country—17,313 returned—the rest either died or remained as citizens. Grants of land in Nova Scotia were given to many by the British Government.

Their masters were to receive for each soldier a bounty of twenty-two dollars and a half, besides an annual subsidy, the whole amounting to a large sum, £3,191,000. The British government also agreed to make restitution for all soldiers who might perish from contagious diseases while being transported in ships; in engagements, and during

sieges; and they were all to take an oath of allegiance to the British monarch, without its interfering with their oaths of allegiance to their respective rulers.

They were, according to the agreement, to constitute a corps made up of four battalions of grenadiers, each of four companies; fifteen battalions of infantry of five companies each, and two companies of Jagers (riflemen), all to be well equipped with the implements of war. The chief commanders of these troops, best known to Americans, were General Baron de Riedesel, General Baron Knyphausen and General De Heister. The name of Hessians was given to them all, and because they were mercenaries (fighting only for pay), they were particularly detested by the Americans. The employment of them was a disgrace to the British government, and the method used in forcing many of them was a crime against humanity. Laborers were seized in the fields, mechanics in the workshops, and worshippers in the churches and hurried to the barracks, without being allowed a parting embrace with their families. The King of Great Britain, to avoid complicity in the horrid work, refused to give commissions to German recruiting officers (who, it was known to the British ministry intended to impress men), saying: "It, in plain English, amounts to making me a kidnapper, which I cannot think a very honorable occupation." All Europe cried "Shame!" and Frederick the Great of Prussia, took every occasion to express his contempt for the "scandalous man-traffic" of his neighbors. Whenever any of these troops were compelled to pass through any part of his dominions, he claimed the usual toll for so many head of cattle, since, as he said, they had been sold as such.* * * Without these troops the war in America would have been of short duration; with them, the British were not successful. A part of them under Riedesel went to Canada in the spring of 1776, to assist in driving the republicans out of that province. Another part under Knyphausen and DeHeister joined the British army under General Howe, before New York, in the summer, and had their first encounter with the patriots on Long Island."

Washington's brilliant stroke against the Hessians at Trenton, is one of the bright spots in Revolutionary history. After a sharp conflict of thirty-five minutes the Hessians were defeated and dispersed, and Colonel Rahl

was mortally wounded. The main body in trying to escape were intercepted by Colonel Hand of the Continental Army. The frightened Germans threw down their arms and begged for mercy. The victory for the Americans was complete, and would have been more decisive had not General Gates been wilfully disobedient. As it was, Washington, with his small force of two thousand men, won all the glory which greatly inspirited the patriots.

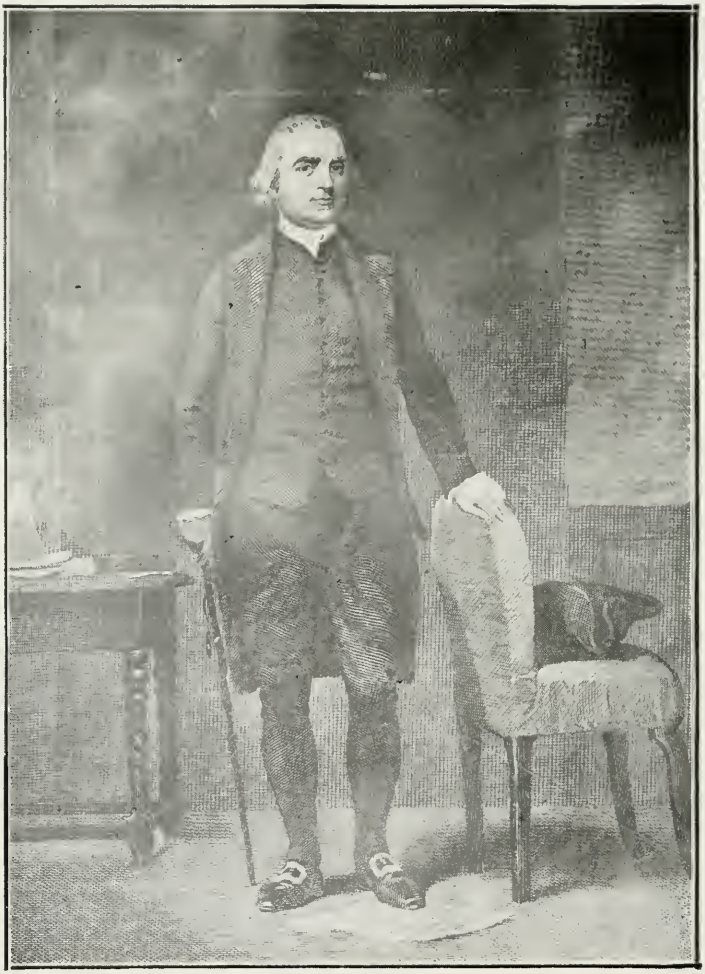
The Americans did not lose a single man and only two were slightly wounded: William Washington, who later served with distinction in the Campaign in the South, and James Monroe, afterwards President of the United States. The spoils of victory were almost a thousand prisoners, twelve hundred small arms, six brass field pieces and all the German standards. This bold stroke of Washington's puzzled the British leaders, alarmed the Tories, and dissipated the terror which had been felt in the presence of the Hessians, as invincible troops."

Samuel Adams

Historians have given many appellations to this famous man and son of Boston, but none seem more fitting than these

THE MAN OF THE PEOPLE and
THE FATHER OF THE AMERICAN REVOLUTION.

He was born on the 16th of September 1722 in a large house on Purchase Street which was then the water front. His father was a wealthy brewer who took an active part in politics and with twenty other substantial citizens of the North and South Ends, organized a Club, the members of which used to meet and lay their plans for introducing certain persons into places of trust and power. It was called the "Caulkers" Club," as it included a number of ship caulkers. Samuel Adams, senior was a man of great influence in the town. He had been a deacon in the Old South Church, and it was through his efforts that the New South Society was established and the House of Worship built on Church Green, Summer Street. He was a Justice of the Peace and a Selectman, and the politicians of his day resorted to his house on Purchase Street to lay their plans for the coming election. It was in such an atmosphere that our Samuel Adams of Revolutionary fame was brought up, and his after life shows that he made good use of the training thus received. Like many other boys of his age and class, he attended the Boston Latin School, which was taught by that celebrated Master, John Lovell. At that time the School was located on School Street directly in the rear of King's Chapel. We know that he was an earnest and diligent student, for he entered Harvard College in 1736 at the early age of fourteen and graduated in 1740, the fifth in a class of twenty-two. Not being content with an A. B., he returned to study for a Master's degree, which he obtained, and in 1743 in the very presence of Governor Shirley, he declaimed in Latin, to the effect that it was "lawful to resist the Supreme Magistrate if the Commonwealth cannot otherwise be preserved." His father, through his connection with the "Land



Samuel Adams

Bank Scheme" met with great financial losses, so that at his death in 1748, he left little but the house on Purchase Street, which was fast becoming rusty for want of proper means to keep it in proper repair. "In 1763, Samuel Adams, because of his great financial straits, was made one of the Collectors of the Town of Boston, an office generally given to citizens who had seen better days. This position gave him wide acquaintance among all classes of the citizens and was of great political value to him."

John Adams thus wrote of his kinsman: "Samuel Adams to my certain knowledge, from 1758 made it his constant rule to watch the rise of every brilliant genius to seek his acquaintance, to court his friendship, to cultivate his natural feelings in favor of his native country, and to warn him against the hostile designs of Great Britain. Through his influence, four brilliant young men came to the front and left their indelible impress on the history of this country. They were John Hancock, Dr. Joseph Warren, Josiah Quincy, 2d, and John Adams. He had great political sagacity." John Adams also tells how Samuel Adams directed the politics of the town of Boston. He says: "I learned this day that the Caucus Club meets at certain times in the garret of Tom Dawes, the Adjutant of the Boston Regiment. He has a large house, and a movable partition in his garret, which he takes down and the whole club meets in one room. There they drink flip and smoke tobacco till you cannot see from one end of the garret to the other. They choose a Moderator, who puts questions to the vote regularly; and Selectmen, Assessors, Collectors, Wardens, Firewards and Representatives are regularly chosen here, before they are chosen in the town." But Samuel Adams did not come into general prominence in the town until 1764, when he was appointed one of a committee of five to prepare instructions for the representatives just elected to the General Assembly. The other members of the committee were eminent citizens, but Samul Adams was the one who drafted the instructions. In that document, the first of his writings of which a trace remains, there is found a year before Patrick Henry's Virginia Resolutions, the first public denial of the right of the British Parliament to tax the Colonies without their consent, and the first suggestion, also, of the union of the Colonies for redress of grievances. These instructions produced a great effect and the provincial policy was based on these lines.

He organized non-importation societies and encouraged the Colonists to make and use their own goods, which dealt a heavy blow to English merchants and manufacturers. It was his idea that caused circular letters to be sent to the other Colonies, asking for their support, and later brought about a Union to resist British taxation and tyranny. He kept up a running and constant fight against Bernard, the Governor, and Hutchinson, his lieutenant. An effort was made to deport Adams to England, there to stand trial for treason, but this proved abortive. Bernard, the Governor, was soon after recalled, leaving Hutchinson, acting Governor. Another grievance was furnished Adams when two infantry regiments arrived in Boston in the fall of 1768, to enforce the decrees of Parliament. This, as we have elsewhere seen, finally led to the Boston Massacre.

We have alluded elsewhere to that witty old Tory of Boston in those days of the Revolution, the Rev. Matthew Byles.

He met Samuel Adams as he was walking home the night of the latter's famous interview with Governor Hutchinson.

In his address to the Governor, Adams stated that three thousand people in the Old South were waiting for the verdict of the Governor in relation to the removal of the British troops from the town to Castle William.

The Rev. Matthew Byles, it is said, asked Mr. Adams, "Why he wouldn't be just as well pleased to be ruled by one tyrant three thousand miles away as by three thousand tyrants only one mile away?" Mr. Adams' reply to this witticism has never been reported.

Three years and a half later, Governor Hutchinson wrote as follows of Samuel Adams: "They (the Legislature) have for their head, one of the members from Boston, who was the first person that openly in any public assembly declared for absolute independence, and who, from a natural obstinacy of temper, and from many years' practice in politics, is, perhaps, as well qualified to excite the people to any extravagance in theory and practice, as any person in America. Whenever there appears to be a disposition to any conciliating measures, this person, by his art and skill, prevents any effect, sometimes by exercising his talents in the newspapers, at other times by open opposition, and this sometimes in the House, where he has defeated every attempt, as often as any has been made."

There is not the slightest doubt but that Sam Adams by his writings in the "Gazette," by his speeches in the Town Meetings, and his work in the Assembly, kept the issues of independence constantly before the minds of the people. He wrote "Let associations and combinations be everywhere set up to consult and recover our just rights."

Parliament retained the tax on tea. Adams resolved to combat it, and his efforts in this direction are told in the article on the Boston Tea Party. "That act left the Province, the town of Boston, in open rebellion against Great Britain. Then followed that retaliatory measure, the Boston Port Bill. The effect of the appeals which Adams sent out at this time to the several Provincial Assemblies for co-operation was magical. From New Hampshire to Georgia, the watchword was, "Boston must be regarded as suffering in the common cause." Expressions of sympathy and help poured in from every quarter. Meanwhile General Gage had arrived in Boston with five regiments of British troops, as Military Governor, replacing Governor Hutchinson. He prorogued the Assembly to meet in June in Salem. Adams was so busy with his correspondence that he did not arrive until late and the Tory members of the Assembly circulated the report that he had been arrested. Once arrived, he lost no time in getting at work and gave a signal proof of his political ability. A great crisis was at hand and a larger number of representatives had gathered than ever before, many of whom were confessed tories. The work before the Assembly was the nomination of delegates to the Continental Congress, and it was all important that the right men should be chosen. Adams saw that the preparations must be made in profound secrecy. If a hint of their proposed plan should reach General Gage, he would instantly dissolve the Assembly and that would mean the failure of everything. A committee of nine was chosen to take the initiation and Adams was made Chairman. The majority of the committee were patriots, but there were some tories, and some doubtful, and these he deceived into inaction. He allowed the talk to run for peace and concord. He lulled the tories into a feeling of confidence, so much so, that a member of the committee, one of the doubtful ones, left for his home in Taunton, and then Adams set to work in the open house. He held secret caucuses at night, where he gathered and drilled his men. At first there were but five, but in two days the

number had increased to more than 30. Presently he had a full majority in hand and the work was done. On the 17th of June, 1774, just a year before the Battle of Bunker Hill, his trap being ready, he sprung it. The Committee on the State of the Province was called to make its report. Adams, as Chairman, suddenly gave orders to the doorkeepers to lock the doors of the house, and to let no one in, or out. Then, before the bewildered tories could gather their wits, he introduced resolves providing for the appointment of James Bowdoin, Thomas Cushing, Samuel Adams, John Adams and Robert Treat Paine, as delegates to the Colonial Assembly, September 1st, at Philadelphia The House was in an uproar, tories and others remonstrated, vehemently, but in vain, for the majority stood firm. Realizing that they had been tricked, the Tories attempted to leave the hall. As the doorkeeper, beset on all sides, began to weaken, Adams took the key from him, and put it in his pocket, and the debate went on. One Tory member, feigning sickness, managed to escape, and sent word to General Gage, who sent his Secretary with a hastily scrawled order of prorogation. But the door was locked and the key could not be had, and so the Secretary read his order to the crowd, that pressed about the stairs. Seeing that resistance was useless, the Tories succumbed and the doubtful ones went over to the whigs. The resolves passed with but 11 "Noes" and then the doors of the room were opened, the Secretary admitted, and the mandate of porrogation submitted to. "It was Adams' greatest triumph, both as patriot and politician. General Gage had special instructions to arrest the Chief of the Revolution, at the proper time, which never seemed to come. Offers of rank and riches were made to Adams, which he spurned as insults. General Gage, through an agent, sought to buy off the opposition of Samuel Adams. The latter indignantly returned this answer: "I trust I have long since made my peace with the King of Kings. No personal consideration shall induce me to abandon the righteous cause of my country. Tell General Gage it is the advice of Samuel Adams that he no longer insult the feelings of an exasperated people."

Much as the Privy Council hated Adams, they did not dare to sign orders for his arrest and trial. Adams was a poor man and when the time came for him to go to Philadelphia, there arose the question of funds. From 1765 to 1774 he had no income save his salary as Clerk of the As-

sembly of £100 per annum. On this, his wife, by frugal housekeeping, maintained a decent and comfortable home, but there was little surplus for apparel, and as delegate to Congress it was fitting that Adams should be properly dressed. For himself his own red cloak would have done amply well, but his friends had other ideas on the matter. One evening as Adams was sitting with his family at supper, a knock came at the door, announcing a well known tailor, who proceeded to take his measure, but would say no word of his business. In a few minutes came a hatter, the most approved in town, and after him a shoe maker and others, all of whom refused to tell whose orders they were obeying. A few days later a large trunk arrived, containing a complete suit of clothes, a red cloak, shoes and cane, a cocked hat, and all the other articles of wearing apparel of the finest quality and style. So attired Adams, on August 10, 1774, left Boston for Philadelphia. As Adams was alone in 1768 when he declared himself in favor of independence, so he was at this session of Congress in the Fall of 1774. By the "Conservatives" he was considered "an artful and designing man," who courted the lower classes for popularity.

The fact was, Adams was in advance of his times; he had the vision of a prophet, and he received, for the time being, the abuse frequently bestowed on prophets. Charles Tomson was the Secretary of this First Continental Congress, a native of Ireland, who, in early life, had emigrated to Delaware, but at this time was a citizen of Philadelphia, a man of character and fortune. Benjamin Franklin was his firm friend. As he was alighting from his chaise with his bride, a messenger came to him from the Congress saying, "They want you at the Carpenter's Hall to keep the records of their proceedings, as you are expert at the business." He complied with their request, and for fifteen years was the sole secretary of that body. Of him John Adams said: "He is the Samuel Adams of Philadelphia, the life of the cause of liberty."

The First Continental Congress adjourned on the 26th of October, 1774, without taking any action toward independence. As the members were about to depart for their several homes, they were impressed with the belief that war was inevitable. Before separating they spent a social evening together at the City Tavern in Philadelphia. They were all bold in their utterances, but Samuel Adams in his address showed his indomitable courage as he said: "I would advise

persisting in our struggle for liberty, though it were revealed from Heaven that nine hundred and ninety-nine were to perish, and only one of a thousand to survive and retain his liberty. One such freeman must possess more virtue, and enjoy more happiness than a thousand slaves; and let him propogate his like and transmit to them what he hath so nobly preserved." As Lossing has well said of these days, "Of what they (the Continental Congress) said, we know very little, for the sessions were held in secret, and there were no professional newspaper reporters in those days. What they did, we all know. The State papers put forth by them were models of their kind, and commanded the admiration of the leading statesmen of Europe." Adams returned to Boston, again took up the helm of the town meetings, ready to go again to Philadelphia the following May, to the session of Congress. Meantime came the Battle of Lexington.

The night before the battle Samuel Adams and John Hancock, his fellow delegate, were stopping at the house of Rev. Jonas Clark at Lexington. Gage, backed by his strong military force, had made his preparations to seize those "rebel leaders." Adams and Hancock had been warned of Gage's plans, but paid but little attention to the matter. The Clark house was guarded that night by a Sergeant and eight men, when about midnight of April 18th, there suddenly appeared on horseback, Paul Revere, the patriot chieftain. The Sleepy Sergeant, only half aroused, protested against the noise Revere was making. Adams and Hancock were quickly aroused and in a few minutes they were down on Lexington Common, where the men of Captain Parker's Company were loading their muskets. An hour later, these two delegates were walking across the fields to Woburn. They heard the reports of the muskets, and Adams knowing that this meant a conflict and that both sides were now committed, exclaimed, "What a glorious morning is this!" Even after this conflict, Congress was not ready to declare for independence. General Gage offered pardon to all who would lay down their arms, "except Samuel Adams and John Hancock, whose affences are of too flagitious a nature to admit of any other consideration than condign punishment." Adams' comment on this exception was characteristic: "Gage," he said, "has made me respectable, by naming me, first, among those who are to receive no favor from him."

In September, 1775, the third Congress convened. The events of the four previous months had turned the popular mind toward independence, still there was no declaring on the part of Congress.

But in April, 1776, the tidal wave in favor of independence swept the country. The Colonists, everywhere, had been signing the "Association Tests" and sending them to their delegates assembled in Congress. The radicals there grew bolder and stronger. Virginia stood shoulder to shoulder with Massachusetts. On the 5th of June, 1776, Richard Henry Lee of Virginia, offered his famous Resolution, declaring the Colonies "free and independent States." We give the text of this Resolution: "That these United Colonies are, and of right ought to be, free and independent States; that they are absolved from all allegiance to the British crown; and that all political connection, between them and Great Britain is, and ought to be, totally dissolved." This Resolution he enforced by one of the most brilliant and powerful displays of refined and forcible eloquence ever exhibited in this country.

At this time the committee was appointed to draft the Declaration of Independence. Lee was unfortunately in Virginia, being called thither by the sudden illness of some member of his family, and thus he was deprived of the honor of being placed at the head of that Committee, but he returned in time to sign that glorious State Paper. In all his labors for Independence he was ably seconded by his eloquent and gifted fellow delegate, Patrick Henry. For three weeks the Resolution of Lee was debated and by July the fight was ended and the great victory won. As one has said: "the signing of the Declaration of Independence was, to Adams, the crowning triumph of his entire career. All that had gone before was but preparatory to it, the years that followed while he served in Congress, and at the close of the War when he returned to Massachusetts and to his own place in town and State could add nothing to it." In 1788 Adams and Hancock were delegates to the State Convention for the ratification of the Federal Constitution. Adams considered that document as centralizing too much power in the Federal Government, holding the same view as did Richard Henry Lee of Virginia. Adams was always "the man of the people," the great apostle of democracy. He did not believe power should be separated from the people.

Knowing his strong views on this point many feared his hostility to the proposed Constitution. Without his influence it could not be ratified. The endorsement of Hancock was easily obtained. Adams would not acquiesce until he knew the will of the people. If they demanded the Constitution their will was law to him. At the "Green Dragon Tavern" on Union Street, a meeting of Boston mechanics was held. Here Resolutions were passed favoring the adoption of the Constitution, and a Committee appointed to carry them to Adams. The incident is thus described by Daniel Webster. "Samuel Adams received the Resolutions from the hands of Paul Revere. "How many mechanics," said Mr. Adams "were at the Green Dragon Tavern when the Resolutions were passed?" "More, sir, than the Green Dragon could hold." "And where were the rest, Mr. Revere?" "In the streets, sir." "And how many were in the streets?" "More, sir, than there are stars in the sky." This satisfied the old patriot and he cast his vote for ratification. In 1789, Adams was elected Lieut. Governor of Massachusetts, John Hancock, being elected Governor. They were the first in their respective positions under the Federal Constitution. These two old veterans served in this capacity until 1793, when Hancock died and Adams was then elected governor. The old companions of Adams of pre-revolutionary days, Otis, Cushing, Molineux, Quincy and Warren had all passed away and the death of Hancock seemed to have left him alone. He was 72 years of age when he assumed the Governor's chair. The Federals opposed him, but he was successfully re-elected and finally retired in 1797 and lived quietly with his family on Winter Street, where he was often seen walking about his garden or seated on his roomy piazza. The end came peacefully on the 2d of October, 1803, at the age of 81. A memorial tablet marks the site of Samuel Adams' home on Winter Street.

In 1898 a rugged boulder of Roxbury Pudding Stone was placed over his grave in the Granary Burying Ground. A bronze tablet on it bears this inscription:

"Here lies buried Samuel Adams, a signer
of the Declaration of Independence, Governor
of the Commonwealth, a leader of men
and an ardent patriot."

"Samuel Adams was not an eloquent orator, although a forceful and convincing speaker, but he, above all his contemporaries, glorified with his incorruptible poverty, the Revolution which he was the first to excite and the last to abandon. He devoted his life to the diffusion and strengthening of opinions in favor of a pure democracy as the only means of securing permanency to the institution which he loved. He was the grand embodiment of the spirit of the New England Town Meeting."

Paul Revere
The Mercury of the American Revolution

This earnest and energetic patriot was born in Boston, January 8, 1735, and came of a very honorable Huguenot family. His father, Apollos Rivoire came to Boston from the

Paul Revere.

Island of Guernsey at the early age of thirteen and was apprenticed to John Coney to learn the goldsmith's trade. "After he had established himself as a gold and silversmith he married Deborah Hichborn, and the third child of this union was Paul Revere, craftsman, artist and patriot." He received a common school education, attending the famous "Old North Grammar School," which stood on North Ben-

nett Street, and upon leaving school he entered his father's shop as an apprentice. When only 27 years old he had the reputation of being one of the most skilful gold and silversmiths in the town of Boston, and as we shall see in the course of his business life, he branched out into other lines of work. "He possessed a natural taste for drawing and became very skilful in the use of the graver. Many are the cups, spoons, pitchers, tankards and other articles of beautiful patterns made by him, and still owned by New England families. Some are in everyday use, all are treasured relics." He taught himself the art of engraving on copper plates, and many specimens of his handiwork in this line are still in existence. He had quite a sense of humor and many of his pictures were political caricatures, appropriate to the time in which he lived. He had an active, ardent temperament, and was not wholly satisfied with the quiet life of an engraver, and we find him when quite a young man entering military life and taking part in the Second Expedition against Crown Point, serving through the campaign as a lieutenant of artillery. In 1755, in conjunction with Josiah Flagg, he published a collection of Psalm tunes, which were advertised in the Boston Gazette. Five years afterwards a similar book was issued called, "The New England Psalm Singer." The 90 pages of music were engraved by Paul Revere, as was also the curious frontispiece representing some men in full dress and powdered wigs, who were seated about a table singing. The advertisement addressed to the subscribers for this book is both quaint and interesting.

In 1765 he joined the "Sons of Liberty," being one of the first members of that famous order, and this may be said to be the beginning of his long patriotic career. This organization intimidated the Stamp Act distributors and successfully opposed that act. Revere was also an active member of the "Long Room Club," which met in the building on the corner of Court Street and Franklin Avenue, where the elegant banking building of the Old Colony Trust Company now stands. He was also a member of the "North End Caucus," which held its meetings in the Green Dragon Tavern, near the corner of Hanover and Union Streets. When the Stamp Act was vexing the spirits of the good people of Boston, Revere represented it in an allegorical print, which immediately became very popular. He described it as follows: "The odious

Paul Revere

Stamp Act represented by the Dragon, confronted by Boston with drawn sword. The Colonies, New York and Rhode Island, support Hampden, New Hampshire and Virginia with the other United Colonies are also represented, while from the 'Liberty Tree' hangs the Officer of the Crown." Accompanying the picture are eleven lines of heroic measure of those days, which were written by Revere, showing him a poet as well as an artist.

The most famous of all his engravings was the one repre-

Exterior Paul Revere's Home, North Street.

senting "The Bloody Massacre, perpetrated in King (State) Street, on March 5, 1770 by a party of the 29th Regiment." This picture was reproduced in London several times, and it became a very popular picture in this country. When the first anniversary of the Boston Massacre was observed, he was living in a house on North Square, then one of the best locations in the town.

From the upper windows of his house he displayed a unique series of transparencies. One represented the death of Christopher Snyder, a second showed the Massacre, and the third was an allegorical painting of America triumphant. In addition to his goldsmith's trade, which was flourishing, he took up the practice of dentistry. The Gazette for September 19, 1768, contained the announcement that persons so unfortunate as to lose their teeth, may have

them replaced with artificial ones by Paul Revere, who learned the method of fixing them from Mr. Baker." Two years later he again advertises that "he still continues the business of a dentist and flatters himself that from the experience he has had these two years, that he can fix them as well as any surgeon dentist whoever came from London." After the battle of Bunker Hill, when General Warren's body was exhumed from its unmarked grave, Paul Revere was able to identify it by the wire which he had used to fasten an artificial tooth.

Kitchen Paul Revere's Home, North Street.

Revere, who was a good horseman, hardy and fearless, became the confidential mesenger of the patriots, and traveled thousands of miles on horseback, during those troublous times, when railroads and steamboats were unknown. "Although he had a large family to support, he was so constituted as to find sufficient leisure to interest himself in all the matters pertaining to the public good, watching closely the course of political events in the pre-revolutionary days. With well considered settled opinions, his will was strong; while his general gifts rendered him competent in great emergencies and equal to great events. The result was, that in a crisis like that of rousing the people to conflict, on the eve of the first struggle for our independence, he was the wise counsellor at home, and the daring actor in the field."

"On the 18th of April, 1775, was the most important single exploit in our Nation's Annals." Longfellow's account of it is known throughout the length and breadth of the land. We quote Revere's own account of the affair.

"In the fall of 1774, and winter of 1775, I was one, of upwards of 30, mostly mechanics, who formed themselves into a committee for the purpose of watching the movements of British soldiers, and gaining every intelligence of the movements of the tories.

"In the winter toward the spring we frequently took turns, two by two, to watch the soldiers by patrolling the streets at night. The Saturday night preceding the 19th of April, about twelve o'clock at night, the boats belonging to the transports were all launched and towed under the sterns of the men-of-war. We likewise found that the grenadiers and light infantry were all taken off duty. From these movements we expected something serious was to be transacted.

"I agreed with Colonel Conant, and some other gentlemen, that if the British went out by water, we should show two lanterns on the North Church steeple, and if land, one as a signal, for we were apprehensive it would be difficult to cross Charles River, or get over Boston Neck. I then went home, took my boots and surtout, went to the north part of the town, where I kept a boat; two friends rowed me across the Charles River, a little to the eastward, where the 'Somerset' man-of-war lay. It was then young flood, the ship was winding and the moon was rising. They landed me on the Charlestown side. * * * I set off upon a very good horse. It was about eleven o'clock, and very pleasant. After I had passed Charlestown Neck, and got exactly opposite where Mark was hung in chains, I saw two men on horseback under a tree. When I got near them I discovered that they were British officers. One tried to get ahead of me and the other to take me. I turned my horse very quick and galloped towards Charlestown Neck, and then pushed for the Medford road.

"The one who chased me endeavoring to cut me off got into a clay pond near where the new tavern is now built. I got clear of him and went through Medford over the bridge and up to Menotomy (Arlington). In Medford I waked up the Captain of the Minute Men, and after that I alarmed almost every house till I got to Lexington. At Lexington I

gave the alarm to John Hancock and Samuel Adams at the Clark House and then pushed on towards Concord. On the way I met some British officers and in an instant was surrounded by four. They had placed themselves in a straight road, that inclined each way; they had taken down a pair of bars on the north side of the road, and two of them were under a tree in the pasture. I descried a wood at a small distance and made for that. When I got there, out started six officers on horseback and ordered me to dismount, and thus the Midnight Ride came to an end."

After a prolonged questioning, he was put with four other prisoners and marched back towards Lexington. "When within sight of the Town Meeting House, the noise of musketry was heard, and the Sergeants in charge of Revere, cutting the saddle and bridle from the horse, let him go. Revere made his way to the Clark House, notified the occupants of what had happened and accompanied Hancock and Adams for a way in their retreat across the fields. Returning then for a trunk of papers, he witnessed the conflict on the Village Green. While he failed to reach Concord as he intended, yet the warning he gave them the Sunday previous enabled the patriots there to remove some of their valuable stores, so that the British march was rendered useless."

The next day Revere was engaged by Dr. Warren, President of the Committee of Safety, as a messenger to do the out door business for that Committee, and so began a new series of services for the American Cause. A bill is still preserved of the charges "for riding from April 21, 1775 to May 7—17 days. He had made his earlier journeys, even the long ride to Philadelphia, without hope of reward, but Revere had a family to support, whom patriotism alone could not feed. The promptness with which his bills were audited and paid is proof of the value placed upon his services by the Committee."

An amusing tradition connected with the famous ride to Lexington is preserved by the Revere family. "While the party was on the way to the boat, that was to take them across the river to Charlestown, it was remembered that nothing had been provided to muffle the sound of the oars against the thole pins. A halt was made before a house near by, and a cautious signal brought an answer from a darkened window above. Their need was made known and the next moment a woolen petticoat exchanged its natural office for a place in history."

After his famous ride to Lexington, he did not return to Boston, but made his home for awhile in Charlestown until the Evacuation of Boston a few months later. He brought his wife and family over, leaving his goldsmith's shop in charge of a friend. In May, 1775, a Convention of the Provincial Congress made a contract with Revere to print notes (paper money) amounting to £100,000. "So great was the demand that June 5th he was urged "to attend to the business of stamping the notes for the soldiers all the ensuing night, if he can, and to finish them with the greatest care and dispatch." Other contracts were likewise awarded him by the Provincial Government and the Continental Congress. Powder was a scarce article in the early days of the war. In November, 1775, the only mill in operation was in Philadelphia, the property of Oswell Eve.

This month Revere was to start for Philadelphia with messages for the Continental Congress and "he was urged to make an investigation and report on the best and most expeditious methods of erecting powder works and manufacturing powder in this country. He had a letter of introduction to Mr. Eve, requesting him to give Mr. Revere such information as would enable him to construct the business on his return home." But monopolists were as greedy in 1775 as in 1916, and Mr. Eve did not believe in giving information to one who might prove to be a powerful competitor. "He allowed Mr. Revere to walk through the establishment, and that, to Revere, with his acute observation, knowledge of chemistry and mechanics, was quite enough. He had a full idea of the process when he left, and Mr. Eve's monopoly was ended." In two months the old powder mill at Canton was rebuilt and was soon in active operation.

When the British were compelled to evacuate Boston, they endeavored in various ways to render the cannon which they left behind useless. This they did by breaking off tranions and in other ways disabling them. "At the personal request of General Washington, Revere repaired the damage done, and invented a new type of gun carriage for them." Meanwhile Revere was serving in the army. In March, 1776, he was made a Major in the Masachusetts Infantry, and was transferred to the Artillery, and made Lieutenant Colonel, and stationed at Castle Island, and September 1, 1778, he had a regular command there. He had a busy life in the army,

was president of a number of Court Martials, had command of the troops that escorted Stark's prisoners. He took an active part in the unfortunate Penobscot Expedition, and an attempt was made to hold him responsible for its failure. He demanded a regular court martial, which was ordered. He received a full acquittal.

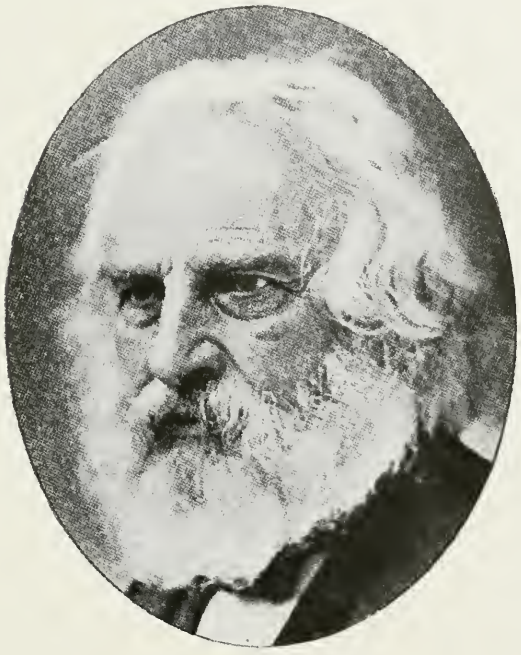
The war was now over and his services were no longer needed and he engaged in many enterprises. He established a foundry for the manufacture of cannon, iron ware and church bells. This was in 1792. The first church bells cast by him were for the Second Church in Boston and these are still in existence. One of his bells at St. Paul's Church, Newburyport, has been in continuous service until within a few years and is now preserved as a relic.

At the death of General Washington he was made one of a committee of three Past Grand Masters of Masonry to write a letter of condolence to Mrs. Washington and to solicit from her a lock of the hero's hair. This request was granted and Revere executed a golden urn about four inches in height for the reception of the relic. He was one of the pall bearers at the observance of Washington's funeral by the Masons of Boston and prepared the insignia, a large white marble urn on a pedestal covered with a pall and having suitable emblems.

At his works in Canton were made the plates five feet long, three feet wide and one quarter of an inch thick for the boilers of Robert Fulton's Steam Engine. He perfected a process for preparing copper for use in bolts and spikes, etc., for naval purposes. He furnished the sheathings and fittings for the U. S. Frigate "Constitution" (Old Ironsides) and for many other gallant vessels. His business was remunerative. His foundry was the only one in the country which could turn out sheet copper.

"The Massachusetts Charitable Mechanics Association was founded largely through his instrumentality in 1795 and he was its first President, and remained in that position four years. In 1794-1800 he was Grand Master of the Grand Lodge of Masons of Massachusetts and in 1795 assisted in laying the corner stone of the State House in Boston. It has justly been said of him "that during the Revolution he held

the sword in one hand and the implement of mechanical trade in the other, and both of them subservient to the great Cause of American liberty." That little group of patriots who led the people of Boston, and, to a large extent, of all the Colonies in the struggle for independence, were wonderful men. Their



Henry W. Longfellow.

energy, wisdom and fertility of resource were most remarkable and Paul Revere, by his courage, his patriotism, and his versatility stands out most prominent.

Revere died May 10, 1818, at the age of 83 years. He was buried in the Granary Burial Ground and near the grave of

Peter Faneuil, a fellow Huguenot. His last years were prosperous and he enjoyed in large measure the love and esteem of his fellow countrymen.

"So through the night rode Paul Revere
And so through the night went his cry of alarm,
To every Middlesex village and farm.
A cry of defiance, and not of fear,
A voice in the darkness, a knock at the door,
And a word that shall echo forevermore!
For borne on the night wind of the past,
Through all our history to the last
In the hour of darkness, and peril and need,
The people will waken and listen to hear
The hurrying hoof beats of that steed,
And the midnight message of Paul Revere!"

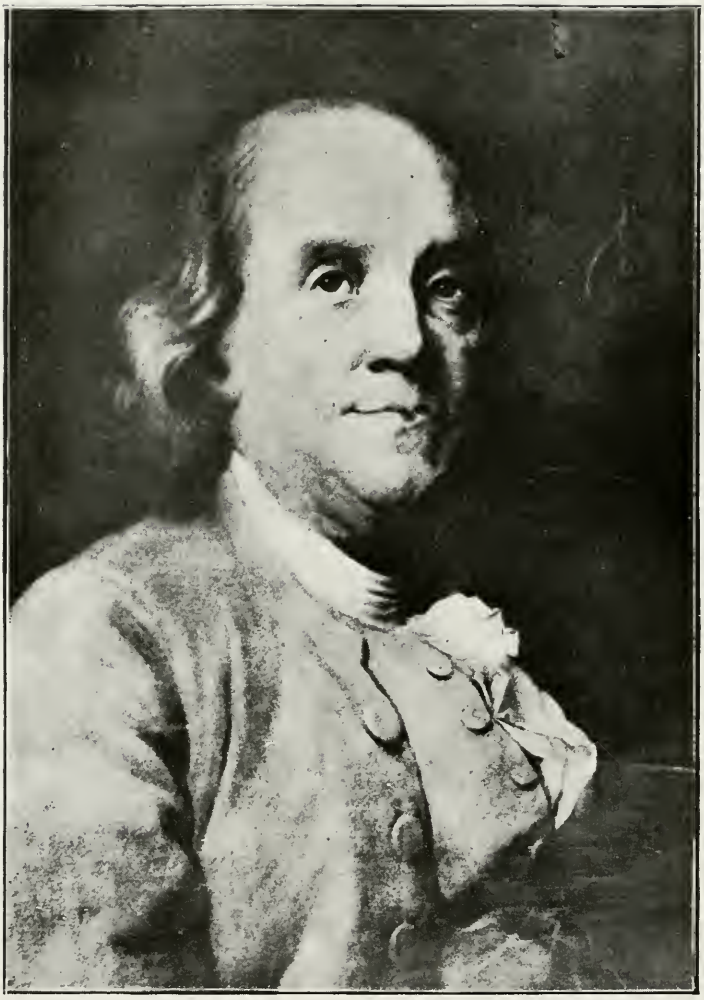
Benjamin Franklin

Benjamin Franklin was one of the most illustrious men of America; a philosopher, a scientist, a diplomat, a vigorous writer, and a patriot who loved his country supremely. The historian, Bancroft, says of him: "Not half of his merits have been told. He was the true father of the American Union. It was he who went forth to lay the foundation of that great design at Albany, and in New York he lifted up his voice. It was Franklin who suggested the Congress of 1774, and but for his wisdom, and the confidence that wisdom inspired, it is a matter of doubt, whether the Congress would have taken effect. It was Franklin who suggested the bond of the Union, which binds the States from Florida to Maine. He was the greatest diplomat of the Eighteenth century. He never spoke a word too soon, he never spoke a word too much, he never failed to speak the right word at the right season."

He was born in Boston, January 6, 1706, Old Style on Milk Street, opposite the Old South Church, where he was baptized, and worshipped while a resident of Boston. His father, who emigrated from England in 1685, was a tallow chandler, and Benjamin was the fifteenth of seventeen children and named for his uncle who came to this country in 1705.

"The main house resembled in form many of the tenements of the olden time. Its front upon the street was rudely clapboarded, and the sides and rear were protected from the inclemencies of a New England climate by large rough shingles. On the street it measured about twenty feet; and on the sides, (the westerly of which was bounded by the passageway and contained the door way, approached by two steps,) the extreme length of the building, including a wooden leanto used as a kitchen, was about thirty feet. In height the house was three stories, the upper being an attic, which presented a pointed gable toward the street. In front, the second story and attic projected somewhat into the street over the principal story on the ground floor.

On the lower floor of the main house, there was one room



Benjamin Franklin

only. This, which probably served the Franklins as a parlor and sitting room, and also for the family eating room, was about twenty feet square, and had two windows upon

Birthplace of Franklin, No. 17 Franklin Street

the street; and it had, also, one upon the passage way, so near the corner as to give the inmates a good view of Washington Street. In the centre of the southerly side of the room was one of those noted large fireplaces, situated in a most capacious chimney, which are so well remem-

bered as among the comforts of old houses; on the left side of this was a spacious closet, and on the right, was the door, communicating with a small entry, in which were the stairs to the rooms above and to the cellar, the latter of which was accessible to the street through one of the old fashioned cellar doors, situated partly in the sidewalk.

The second story contained originally but one chamber, and in this the windows, door, fireplace and closet were similar in number and position to those in the parlor beneath it.

The attic was also originally one unplastered room and had a window in front on the street, and two common attic windows, one on each side of the roof near the back part of it."

Such was undoubtedly the condition and appearance of the house at the time when the parents of Franklin dwelt within its walls, with their large family of children, several of whom received their first light beneath the roof; and such it continued about one hundred years, after the Franklins left it for a house of their own, at the corner of Hanover and Union Streets." The old house was destroyed by fire on Saturday, December 9th, 1810, communicated to it from the livery stable situated on the corner of Milk and Hawley Streets, kept by Stephen L. Sleeper. It was at this time that the Old South Meeting House took fire and was saved by the exertions of a well known Bostonian, Isaac Harris, Esq., for which he received a silver testimonial.

At twelve years of age, Benjamin was apprenticed to his elder brother James, a printer and publisher, of the "New England Courant," a newspaper of Boston. He was never able to gratify his passion for reading. While serving his apprenticeship, he tried his skill in literary composition, occasionally writing anonymous articles for his brother's paper which were published and approved. Some political articles in the "Courant" offended the legislative assembly of the Colony, and James, the publisher, was imprisoned and forbidden to issue the journal. To elude the prohibition, young Benjamin was made the nominal editor, and his indentures of apprenticeship were temporarily cancelled. After the release of his brother he availed himself of this act to assert his freedom, and thus he escaped from a position which had become irksome in consequence of ill-treatment to which his brother had subjected him. Some years later he blamed himself for thus taking advantage of his brother's difficulty and confessed it was one of the errors of his life. Franklin

decided to try his fortune in New York, but was obliged to keep the matter secret, as his father sided with his brother, and would have prevented his going. He sold his books to raise a little money, took passage aboard a sloop and with a fair wind reached New York in three days.

At the age of seventeen he found himself in a strange city, three hundred miles from home, without any recommendation or knowledge of any person in the place, and with very little money in his pocket. In New York he found an old printer of Pennsylvania, who, owing to a quarrel with the Governor of that Colony, had removed to New York. He could give Franklin no employment but gave him a letter to his son, who he thought could obtain a position for Franklin, who started at once by boat for Amboy, leaving his chest and other things to follow him round by sea. His adventures on that trip, as related in his Autobiography, are alike interesting and amusing. From Amboy he proceeded on foot to Burlington, a distance of fifty miles. The last night of that tramp he stopped at an inn kept by a Dr. Brown whom he found very friendly and obliging, and the acquaintance thus begun, continued all through his life. When he arrived at Burlington, the boat had left and no other was expected to sail until Tuesday, three days later, but that evening as he was walking along the river bank, a boat came along bound for Philadelphia, and he engaged passage on her. There was no wind so they rowed all the way to Philadelphia, where they landed Sunday morning at eight o'clock.

Franklin is very minute and particular in his description of his first entry into that city, doubtless having in mind the figure he afterwards made there. He was in his working clothes with his pockets stuffed with shirts and stockings. He was dirty from being so long on the boat. He was fatigued with walking, rowing and the want of sleep and withal very hungry. He knew no one and did not know where to look for lodgings. His entire cash capital amounted to one dollar and one shilling in copper coins, and this shilling he insisted the boatman should take for the passage.

Entering a bake shop he bought three pennies' worth of rolls, and having no room in his pockets, he put a roll under each arm and eating the other, he proceeded leisurely up Market Street, as far as Fourth Street, passing the house of Mr. Reed, his future father-in-law, and his bride to be stood on the doorsteps smiling at him as he passed.

Through the influence of Mr. Bradford he secured a position with Mr. Keiner, a printer, and through this connection he made the acquaintance of Sir William Keith, Governor of Pennsylvania. The Governor was greatly impressed with Franklin's appearance and ability and offered to set him up in the printing business. He also promised him the State printing, and induced Franklin to go to England, and purchase the necessary materials for establishing himself in the printing business. "On reaching London in 1725, Franklin found himself entirely deceived in the Governor's promised letter of credit and recommendation, and being as before, in a strange place, without money or acquaintance, he went to work once more as a compositor."

He remained in England about a year and a half and then returned to Philadelphia and commenced business as a printer and stationer and in 1728 he established a newspaper. He published his "Poor Richard's Almanac" in 1732, which became noted for its pithy sayings, some original, but mostly taken from various sources, ancient and modern. In 1736 he was appointed Clerk in the General Assembly of Pennsylvania, and the year following was made Postmaster of Philadelphia. In the French War of 1744 the Quakers who were in the majority in the Legislature of Pennsylvania, opposed the passage of a militia law and the adoption of precautions for defence. Franklin proposed to accomplish the object by voluntary subscription and he set forth its importance in a pamphlet entitled "Plain Truth," which had great influence. In 1746 he commenced his electrical experiments, making several important discoveries. As a representative to the General Assembly of Pennsylvania in 1747 he distinguished himself by several acts of public utility.

This second visit was under very different auspices from those which attended his visit in 1725. Then he went a poor printer relying upon the imaginary influence of the graceless Sir William Keith, who had cajoled him with chimerical promises and sham letters of recommendation. "Now, it was Franklin, the eminent philosopher and discoverer, the gifted writer and sagacious statesman, who took up temporary residence in London." His electrical discoveries had been promulgated two years before, his first letters on the subject being addressed to Peter Collinson, a member of the Royal Society. In 1749 he suggested an explanation of the Aurora Borealis, and thunder gusts on electrical principles. But it

was not until the summer of 1752 that he resorted to the experiment of a common kite and by means of it converted what was theory into scientific truth. He prepared a kite from a silk handkerchief, as being less likely to be affected by rain, than paper. To the upright stick of the frame he attached an iron point. The string was, as usual, of hemp, except the lower end, which was of silk, and where the hempen and silken cords were united he fastened a metallic key. With this apparatus he went forth with his son into the fields, as a thunder storm was coming on, to try the experiment, the memory of which was to be immortal.

Well knowing the ridicule which is called forth when scientific experiments are unsuccessful, he kept his intentions a secret from all but his companion. He placed himself under a shed to avoid the rain. The kite was raised. A thunder storm passed over it. No sign of electricity appeared. Franklin began to despair of success, when suddenly he saw the loose fibres of his string in motion and bristling in an upright position as if placed on a conductor. On applying his knuckle to the key, he experienced a smart shock. Here was his theory verified. As his string became wet with the rain it operated better as a conductor and he was able to collect an abundant supply of electricity, with which he charged a jar. His experiment was made in June, 1752. It had been successfully performed according to Franklin's original plan by means of a pivoted bar of iron, about a month previous in Paris, by M. De Lor, but Franklin had not been apprised either of the attempt or the result at the time of making his experiment with the kite. He afterwards had an isolated rod constructed to draw the lightning into his house, with a bell attached, in order to inform him when the rod was affected by electricity. "The scientific men of France, however, did ample justice to Franklin's merits, and at length the experiment of drawing lightning from the clouds by a pointed rod having been verified in England, the Royal Society made amends for its neglect by choosing him a member, exempting him from the customary admission fee of twenty-five guineas, and in 1753 presented him with the Gold Medal of Sir Geoffrey Copley."

"The fame of Franklin," says Mignet, "rapidly spread with his theory over the whole world." The Philadelphia sage became the object of universal regard and was abundantly loaded with academic honors. The Academy of Sciences in

Paris, made him an associate member, as it had Newton and Liebrutz. All the learned bodies in Europe eagerly admitted him into their ranks." To this scientific glory he added high political distinction.

To this man, happy, because he was intelligent, great, because he had an active genius and a devoted heart, was accorded the rare felicity of serving his country skilfully and usefully, for a period of fifty years; and after having taken, rank among the immortal founders of the positive sciences, he also enrolled himself among the generous liberators of the nations. Franklin was most hospitably received in England on the occasion of this second visit, which lasted from July 27, 1757, to the latter part of August 1762.

In a literary and religious sense it was an important epoch in the history of England. "Ben Johnson was publishing his 'Idler;' Burke had just given to the world his essay on the 'Sublime and Beautiful,' and was editing the 'Annual Register;' Hume was completing his 'History of England;' Stern was publishing his 'Tristam Shandy'; Swedenborg was residing obscurely in London engaged in his mystical writings; Goldsmith was just launching upon a literary career; Garrick was electrifying the town with his acting; and the Brothers Wesley were engaged in their extraordinary labors for the establishment of a reformed Protestantism. Sir Isaac Newton had died thirty years before." We do not know that Franklin became acquainted with any of these distinguished persons, except Hume, Garrick and Burke. Franklin, on his arrival in London took lodgings in a house on Craven Street near the Strand where he remained during the whole period of his stay in England. He became deeply attached to the landlady and her family. William Strahan, the King's printer, and a member of Parliament, was one of Franklin's most intimate friends, and was a great admirer of Franklin and in writing to Mr. Franklin in 1759, he says: "I never saw a man who was in every respect so perfectly agreeable to me. Some are amiable in one way, and some in another, he in all." "It is a painful example of the estrangements produced by war, to read in connection with this, the following letter (supposed by some to be not wholly serious) from Franklin to Strahan, eighteen years afterwards:

Philadelphia, July 5, 1775.

Mr. Strahan:

You are a member of Parliament and one of that majority

which doomed my country to destruction. You have begun to burn our homes and murder our people. Look upon your hands, they are stained with the blood of your relations. You and I were long friends. You are my enemy and I am yours,

B. Franklin.

After the independence of the Colonies was acknowledged, the friendly intercourse of Franklin and Strahan was resumed and the ties were reknit with added warmth on both sides. Franklin entered into the object of his mission with his usual alacrity and fidelity of attention. His mission was to break up a land monopoly which existed in the Province of Pennsylvania. Thomas Penn the son of William Penn, by his second wife, became by inheritance, proprietary of three-fourths of the Province, his brother Richard, proprietary of the remainder. To extend their influence the proprietaries had claimed the appointment of judicial and other officers. They had forbidden all other persons to purchase land of the natives, thus establishing a monopoly in their own favor and they insisted on the exemption of their immense estate from taxation.

The Governor of the Province was the nominee of the proprietaries and there were constant disputes between him and the General Assembly over these matters. The ready pen and clear judgment of Franklin were frequently called into requisition in drawing up reports and representations to the proprietaries and their associates and having at last shown himself more than a match for the writers on the other side, the General Assembly sent him as their Agent to England to represent their case to the King. The newspapers in England were mostly in favor of the proprietaries and public opinion was thus prejudiced against the Assembly. Franklin at once set about to correct public opinion through the same channel, the press. He had an interview with the proprietaries resident in England and discussed the points of difference, but the Messrs. Penn would not relax in their arbitrary claims. They seemed ambitious of holding the whole population of Pennsylvania in a state of vassalage. Finally the Assembly passed a bill taxing the vast estates of the proprietaries and other laws of a similar nature were passed and signed by the Governor who was removed by the Penns. The laws were sent to the king for his approval, while the Penns petitioned for a veto on them. The matter was referred to the Board of Trade, who decided in 1760 that the Assembly had a right

to tax the estates, specifying some modifications of the Act, which were readily consented to by Franklin, who proved himself a prudent and faithful negotiator.

At this time England was at war with France, and it was largely through the influence of Franklin, whose services were sought after by Lord Chatham, then Prime Minister that the scene of hostilities was changed from Europe to America, resulting in the brilliant victory of General Wolfe, and the annexation of the Province of Canada to the British Empire. Parliament granted thirty thousand pounds to Pennsylvania for military and other expenses and Franklin was appointed by the Assembly to receive and invest the same. Although acting in opposition to the Proprietaries, the latter were forced to admit that his course was fair and unobjectionable. "I do not find," writes Thomas Penn, "that he has done me any prejudice with any party."

The story of this sojourn of Franklin in England is a most interesting one. He devoted the greater part of his time to philosophical and electrical matters. "He had very keen powers of observation and inference. Observation conducted him to discovery and inference to practical application of it."

In 1759 the University of St. Andrews conferred upon Franklin the Degree of Doctor of Laws and in the summer of that year he made a visit to Scotland, where he formed the acquaintance of David Hume, and Dr. Robertson, the Historians, Lord Komes and other eminent men. When Franklin was about to return to America, David Hume wrote him: "I am very sorry that you intend to leave our hemisphere. America has sent us many good things; gold, silver, sugar, tobacco, indigo, etc., but you are the first philosopher, and, indeed, the first great man of letters, for whom we are beholden to her."

In August, 1762, Franklin sailed for America. Owing to the war with France his vessel was under convoy of a man-of-war and was obliged to touch at Madrid, where he remained a few days. On the 1st of November he arrived in America and received an enthusiastic vote of thanks for the faithful discharge of the duties imposed upon him and the Assembly voted him the sum of three thousand pounds sterling in token of their appreciation of his services.

On his arrival home he found that there was serious trouble between the back settlers and the Indians. Hundreds of persons were plundered and slain. Some of the Indians were living peaceably under the charge of Moravian missionaries and six of these were slaughtered in cold blood by the Indian haters, and a number of the Indians fleeing for their lives were pursued into Philadlphia.

Franklin was ever on the side of humanity and justice, and these persecuted Indians found in him a zealous champion and protector.

The rioters having advanced as far as Germantown, within six miles of Philadelphia, Franklin, with three other influental citizens, was deputed to go out and confer with them. They were received with respect and they prevailed uopn the rioters to abandon their hostile project. The war between the Assembly and the proprietaries still continued and as leader of the opposition Franklin became the target of the most vindictive assaults. Some of the men opposed to him had long been his associates in public and private life, and Franklin felt their estrangement very keenly. Before departing for England on his second mission, Franklin wrote the following: "I am now to take my leave, perhaps my final leave of the country I love and in which I have spent the greater part of my life 'Esto perpetua!' I wish every kind of prosperity to my friends and I forgive my enemies!"

He arrived in England December 1764, and had been there but a few months, when, in opposition to the remonstrances of Franklin and the Massachusetts Agents in England, the "Stamp Act" was passed by Parliament.

In February 1766, he was summoned before the House of Commons and subjected to an examination upon facts relative to the repeal of the "Stamp Act."

"Without preparations he submitted to a series of very close inquiries. Various in their character and demanding very extensive information in the respondent. The promptitude, sagacity and independence of his replies with the simple and expressive diction in which they were conveyed and his self poise and unassuming deportment commanded the respect of all parties.

He said there was not gold or silver enough in the Colonies to pay the tax for one year, that it was not true that America was protected by Great Britain and paid no part of

the expense; that the Colonies raised, clothed and paid during the last war near twenty-five thousand men and spent many millions; that the temper of America towards Great Britain before the year 1763, was the best in the world, and to be an old England man was of itself a character of respect and gave a kind of rank among Americans but that their temper now was very much altered. When asked if he thought that America would submit to pay the Stamp Duty if lessened, he replied, "No, never, unless compelled by force of arms." "May not a military force carry the Stamp Act into execution?" asked one of his interrogators. Franklin replied, "Suppose a military force be sent to America, they will find nobody in arms, what are they to do?" "They cannot force a man to take stamps who chooses to do without them." "Suppose the Stamp Act continued and enforced, do you imagine that ill humor will induce the Americans to give as much for worse manufactures of their own and use them in preference to better of ours?" "Yes, I think so. People will pay as freely to gratify one passion as another, their resentment is their pride."

"What are the body of the people of the Colonies?" They are farmers, husbandmen, or planters." "Would they suffer the products of their lands to rot?" "No, but they would not raise too much. They would manufacture and raise less."

In less than three months after Franklin's examination, a bill was introduced into the House of Commons to repeal the Stamp Act. His voice spoke in no uncertain tones concerning the land of his birth and the land he loved.

Space will not permit of giving all the details of Franklin's great and patriotic work during the sojourn in England. His voice and his trenchant pen and his magnetic personality were devoted without stint to the service of his beloved land. Notwithstanding the absorbing nature of his political business he gave much time to scientific and economic questions of public utility.

In 1774, the British ministry dismissed Franklin from the office of Deputy Postmaster of the Colonies. The immediate cause of this dismissal was his agency in communicating to the public certain original letters written in Massachusetts by Governor Hutchinson, Lieut. Governor Oliver and others addressed to Mr. Thomas Whately, Member of Parliament. These letters were transmitted by Franklin to Mr. Thomas Cushing, Chairman of the Massachusetts Com-

mittee of Correspondence. In his letter to Mr. Cushing he says: "I am not at liberty to tell through what channels I received it, and I have engaged that it shall not be printed, nor copies taken of the whole or any part of it, but I am allowed to let it be seen by some of worth in the Province for their satisfaction only. In confidence of your preserving inviolably my engagement, I send you inclosed the original letters, to obviate any pretence of unfairness, in copying, interpolation or omission."

He added a request that the package of letters be returned. Franklin stated under oath, that these letters in question were given to him and came into his hands as Agent for the House of Representatives of the Province of Massachusetts Bay, that when given to him he did not know to whom they were addressed—no address appearing upon any. Nor did he know before that any such letters existed, that he did not cause the letters to be printed, nor direct the doing of it, that he did not erase any address that might have been on the letters. "Meantime the greatest abuse was heaped upon Franklin, but his demeanor all through, this shameful and ribald attack, was calm and dignified. The Lords of the Council seemed to enjoy the abuse heaped upon Franklin, and with the exception of Lord North, frequently laughed outright. In less than a year after this disgraceful scene at the Council Board, Lord Howe appealed to Franklin's magnanimity "not to consider this ill treatment by the Ministry; that some of them were ashamed of it and sorry that it happened; which he supposed must be sufficient to abate resentment in a great and generous mind."

The first Continental Congress was held in Philadelphia, September 17, 1774. In December, following, their petition to the King was forwarded under cover to Franklin.

Lord Chatham, who had taken a bold and decided stand on the side of the Colonies, had long been admired by Franklin at a distance. "Circumstances now brought them together, and their intercourse throughout was of a character honorable to both parties. His lordship's vindication of Franklin from the aspersions of Lord Sandwich, in the House of Lords, is a tribute that outweighs all the abuse ever lavished upon the American sage by the supporters of the ministry." An election had taken place, which gave Lord North and his colleagues an overwhelming majority in Parliament.

In an indirect way the ministry sought the good offices of Franklin to bring about a settlement with the Colonies. "A

certain lady, the the sister of Lord Howe, expressed a desire to play chess with Franklin, and he accepted the invitation, with no apprehension that any political business would have any connection with the new acquaintance. Franklin says: "After playing as long as we liked, we fell into a little chat, partly on a mathematical problem, partly about the new Parliament, then just met, when she said, "What is to be done with this dispute between Great Britain and the Colonies?" "They should kiss and be friends," said I, "what can they do better? Quarrelling can be no service to either, but ruin to both." "I have often said," relied she, "that I wish Government would employ you to settle the dispute, for I am sure nobody could do it so well. Do not you think that the thing is practicable?" "Undoubtedly, Madame, if the parties are disposed to reconciliation, for the two countries have no clashing interests to differ about. It is rather a strife of principles, which two or three reasonable people might settle in half an hour. I thank you for the good opinion you are pleased to express of me, but the ministers will never think of employing me in this good work, they choose rather to abuse me." "Ah," said she, "they have behaved shamefully to you, and, indeed, some of them are now ashamed of themselves."

This conversation led to an acquaintance with Lord Howe, who asked Franklin's opinion in regard to sending over a Commission to inquire into grievances and compose differences. "I wish, brother," said Miss Howe, "you were to be sent hither on such a service. I should like that better than General Howe going to command an army there." "I think, Madam," said Franklin, "they ought to provide for General Howe some more honorable business."

The Ministry became so anxious at this time to secure the services of Franklin in promoting a settlement with the Colonies, as to hint to him that he might expect not only the restoration of his old position, but almost any other he could ask for, upon which Franklin, in writing to his son, says: "I need not tell you who knows me so well, how improper and disgusting this language was to me."

After prolonging his stay to await the result of the Continental Congress, Franklin made his preparations to return to America.

On his arrival he found the Colonies in a high state of excitement. The battles of Lexington and Concord had been fought, and the Second Continental Congress was in ses-

sion. He was the unanimous choice of the Assembly of Pennsylvania as a delegate to Congress. This Congress sent an humble petition to the Crown, giving Britain one more chance, one more opportunity of recovering the friendship of the Colonies, concerning which Franklin writes: "I think she has not sense enough to embrace it, as I consider she has lost them forever."

On the 20th of May, 1775, Congress having resolved that hostilities had been commenced by Great Britain, "It was voted that the Colonies ought to be put in a position of defence." On the 21st of July, 1775, the first sketch for a plan of confederation was presented to Congress by Franklin. The name which he proposed for the Confederacy was, "The United Colonies of North America." About this time Congress established a Post Office system of its own and appointed Franklin Postmaster General. He was on all the important committees of Congress, public or secret, and although seventy years of age, he entered upon his several duties with all the buoyancy and activity of youth. When the Continental paper money was under discussion, he advised that the bill should bear interest, and it was a matter of regret, when too late, that his advice was unheeded.

In October, 1775, he was appointed by Congress to consult with Washington at his headquarters in Cambridge in relation to a reorganization of the militia. Gen. Nathanaiel Green met Franklin on this occasion and wrote, "I had the honor to be introduced to that very great man, Dr. Franklin, whom I viewed with silent admiration during the whole evening. Attention watched his lips, and conviction closed his periods."

He made an arduous journey to Canada to obtain the cooperation of the inhabitants there. He was appointed in 1776 one of a committee of five to prepare a Declaration of Independence. The other members of the committe were Thomas Jefferson, John Adams, Roger Sherman and Robert B. Livingston.

The original draft by Thomas Jefferson of this momentous document, contains interlineations in the handwriting of Franklin. The Declaration was adopted by Congress on the Fourth of July, 1776. It is related that when John Hancock signed it in his bold, handsome hand, he remarked, "King George can read that without his glasses." Then as the others signed their names, he remarked, "We

must be unanimous, we must all hang together," when Franklin quickly replied, "Yes, if we would not hang separately." After the battle of Long Island General Howe

Drafting the Declaration of Independence

expressed to General Sullivan, who had been taken prisoner and liberated on parole, a desire to confer with a delegation of Congress, and that body appointed Benjamin Franklin, John Adams and Edward Rutledge a Committee of Conference.

They met Lord Howe at Staten Island, opposite Amboy, within the British lines. His lordship received and entertained them politely, but informed them he could not treat with them as a Committee of Congress. His powers only permitted him to consult with them as private gentlemen of influence in the Colonies. This statement put an end to the conference, and the committee reported the result to Congress. John Adams, in his diary, gives a very amusing account of the journey of the committee from Philadelphia to Staten Island. In October, 1776, Congress voted to make application to France for aid in the struggle for independence and three commissioners were appointed, namely, Benjamin Franklin, Silas Deane and Arthur Lee, to negotiate with that power.

Messrs. Deane and Lee were already in Europe. Franklin, with his two grandsons, left Philadelphia in October, 1776, embarking on the United States man-of-war "Reprisal," mounting sixteen guns and commanded by Captain Wickes.

The sloop of war was chased several times by British cruisers, but obeyed orders and shunned engagements. Franklin and his grandsons went on board a fishing boat at Auray and reached Nantes December 7, 1776. Here they remained eight days and were treated with the greatest distinction. It was not known in Europe that Congress had decided on any application for aid, it was thought that he was present on some official errand. On the 21st of December he arrived in Paris and met his colleagues, Messrs. Deane and Lee.

The diplomatic course of Franklin in France covered a period of nearly nine years. His reputation in Paris was established in 1767-1769 when he visited that city, and this reputation was greater than in England or America, but it was now matured by the lapse of time, and he was received with a degree of distinction rarely accorded to any foreigner. He remained in Paris but a few days, establishing himself at Passy, about three miles from the centre of the city. John Adams describes his residence there as a very magnificent place, the rent of which must have been enormously high. The owner was a staunch friend of America, and was content to have Franklin occupy his home on very moderate terms, and after the Revolution receive his pay from our Government in grants of public

The Interview between American Commissioners and General Howe

land. Franklin at once gave his attention to the object of his mission. While the French court was not yet prepared for an open breach with England, it had already advanced two hundred thousand dollars for the shipment of arms and military stores to America, it being arranged that Congress should send tobacco and other products in return. M. Vergennes, the Minister of War, received the Commissioners very kindly, but thought it best for the present, to defer any open recognition, but the Commissioners received ostensibly, from a private source, but really from the King's Treasury, for the use of Congress, a quarterly allowance, amounting in the whole to about four hundred thousand dollars, and half as much more from the "farmers general" to be repaid by remittances of tobacco. Being thus supplied with over half a million dollars, they sent to America arms and equipments, fitted out armed vessels, and supplied the American cruisers touching at French ports. The British Ambassador at Paris, Lord Sternmont, protested against the underhanded aid rendered the Americans. Vergennes made a show at rebuking the Commissioners, who were not deterred from their operations. The Commissioners wrote to Lord Sternmont, relative to exchange of prisoners. His Lordship promptly replied: "The King's Ambassador receives no application from rebels unless they come to implore his Majesty's mercy." Franklin's reply, signed also by Deane, to this impertinence, was: "My Lord, in answer to a letter, which concerns some of the most material interests of humanity, and of the two nations, Great Britain and the United States of America, now at war, we received the enclosed indecent paper, as coming from your lordship, which we return for your lordship's more mature consideration." The British Ministry finding the balance of prisoners against them, were soon glad to accept the proposition, thus magnificently put aside by Lord Sternmont."

When the news of Burgoyne's surrender to the Americans under General Gates at Saratoga was received in France, it decided the French Cabinet in its course. "The capitulation of Burgoyne," writes Franklin, "has caused the most profound joy in France, as if it were a victory won by her own troops over her own enemies. Such is the universal ardent and sincere good will and attachment of this nation for us and our cause." He availed himself of this moment of enthusiasm to promote the interests of his

country. On the 7th of December Vergennes informed the American Commissioners that his Majesty was "disposed to establish more direct relations with the United States." Two treaties were signed February 6th, 1778, one of amity and commerce, the other of alliance for mutual defence, by which the king agreed to "make common cause with the United States should England attempt to obstruct the commerce with France, and guaranteed to the United States their liberty, sovereignty and independence." Franklin writes: "The King has treated us with generosity and magnanimity, taking no advantage of our present difficulties to exact terms, which we would not willingly grant when established in prosperity and peace. England is in great consternation." The American Commissioners appeared in Court on a footing with the representatives of other independent powers. Franklin was presented by Vergennes, to Louis, the Sixteenth, at Versailles, and was received by the clapping of hands and other tokens of welcome from the surrounding courtiers. He appeared at this royal audience, very simply attired, with straight, unpowdered hair, a brown cloth coat and round hat. A crowd had collected to see him. His age, his venerable aspect, his simple dress, contrasted with the finery about him, the recollection of his services to science and humanity, all combined to waken the utmost enthusism of the spectators. The King received him with much cordiality, charging him to assure the United States of his friendship, and expressing his satisfaction at the conduct of their commissioners during their residence in France. On his withdrawing from the audience the crowd in the passage ways received Franklin with renewed manifestations of welcome and followed him for some distance. The enthusiasm with which he had been received in Versailles was renewed in Paris. He called on Voltaire who was in his eighty-fifth year. Franklin presented one of his grandsons to him and asked his blessing on him. "God and Liberty," said Voltaire, raising his hands over the young man's head, "that is the only benediction appropriate to the grandson of Franklin."

It was during the residence of the Commissioners in France that the Marquis De Lafayette sailed for America, in a ship of his own, to serve in the American Army.

Franklin's reputation in France so towered over his colleagues that they were ciphers by his side. They were re-

called and on September 14, 1778, Franklin was appointed Minister Plenipotentiary to the Court of France. He accomplished in France by his diplomacy as much as did Washington with all his victories.

"He did the work but he never learned the dialect of diplomacy. He was that strange creature, a republican at the court of a pure monarchy. In Paris, his defects were virtues. As a politician at the Court he was the dire enemy of England, to the jaded society of Paris, he was the representative of a new world of feeling and thought. His New England astuteness seemed to Parisian courtiers, patriarchial innocence. His naive stories and illustrations, which a thousand admirers were ready to translate and repeat in every circle in the town were as bracing as quinine. His very costume, his hair hanging, his spectacles on his nose and white hat under his arm, in the midst of absurd perukes, and brocaded suits, came like a revelation of nature to the Versailles of fashion. He became, to his own amusement, the idol of Paris. Versailles was never, perhaps, quite certain that the New England Philosopher was not of red Indian descent. But love does not reason. Paris had fallen in love with Franklin, and in homage to him, even grew enamored of simplicity. He was a diplomat of high rank in the art. His colleagues, rivals, and detractors were unable to understand the source of his influence, but did not venture to deny the fact, and could not accuse him of neglecting the interests of his country.

As a diplomatist he was not peremptory in insisting on the rights of his own country, still less on his own dignity. He studied the French men and French women, who ruled France, and he probed to the bottom the instincts of the French governing class without losing his own. About allowances in general he was not solicitous. Jefferson rightly said of him: "By his reasonableness, moderation and temper, he so won the confidence of the French ministers, that it may truly be said that they were more under his influence than he was under theirs." With a prospective war with France and Spain on their hands, the British Government began to consider the expediency of making peace with the United States. Franklin was approached by various emissaries. He gave one answer to all such overtures, that any proposition implying a return of the United States to a depend-

ence was impossible, only a peace on equal terms would be considered.

It was about this time that that famous naval adventurer, John Paul Jones was in France, having espoused the cause of the United States. John Adams describes him as "the most ambitious and intriguing officer in the American Navy. His voice is soft, his eye has keenness and wildness and softness."

"In compliment to Franklin, whose poor Richard's maxims were very popular in France, he named his 42 gun ship of the mixed French and American squadron of which he had command, the "Bon Homme Richard." His victory in this ship over the British man-of-war, "Serapis" obtained for him the present of a solid gold belted sword from the French King. It is now admitted that the liberal and timely aid rendered by France to the United States in the Revolutionary struggle, was due in great measure to the personal influence and diplomatic skill of Benjamin Franklin. The hostility of France to Great Britain was an element which entered very largely in securing that aid, but the French King and Ministry had a high personal regard for Franklin. And on his part, he was deeply impressed with the noble and generous manner in which France, without stipulating for a single privilege, had afforded us aid in our distress.

"In the Summer of 1780, Count Rochambeau arrived at Newport, Rhode Island with a French Army of 6,000, and in 1781, Franklin procured from France an additional loan of three million of livres, and the sum of six millions, not as a loan, but as a gift." On the 12th of March, 1781, being then in his 76th year, Franklin wrote to Congress asking for a recall. Congress replied by appointing him, one of a Commission of Five, including John Adams, John Hay, Thomas Jefferson and Lauvens, to negotiate a Treaty of Peace. Franklin accepted the new appointment and on the 30th of November, 1782, a Treaty with Great Britain was signed and this Treaty was duly ratified in Congress.

Franklin arranged highly favorable terms, and for the payment of our debt to France; negotiated a Treaty with Sweden, the first power to welcome us into the family of nations, and also a Treaty with Prussia.

At last in March 1785, Congress heeded Franklin's repeated application for a recall. Thomas Jefferson was appointed Minister to the French Court.

"You have come to fill Dr. Franklin's place," someone asked. "O, No, Sir," replied Jefferson, "no man living can do that, but I am appointed to succeed him!" Mignet, the French writer, says of Franklin, "His company was sought after, not only as the most illustrious, but as the most agreeable the times afforded. He impressed his friends with sentiments of tenderness, admiration and respect, nor was his attachment to them less strong."

On his return to America, he received welcome from many public bodies. Washington, in a letter, assured Franklin, "that no man could salute him with more sincerity and pleasure." After settling down in his own home, Franklin writes: "I am surrounded by my friends, with a fine family of grandchildren about my knees; and an affectionate good daughter, and son-in-law, to take care of me. And after fifty years of service, I have the pleasure to find the esteem of my country with regard to me undiminished." But he was not permitted to retire from public service. He was elected President of the State, which he filled for three successive years. In 1787 he was elected one of the delegates from Pennsylvania to the Convention for forming the National Constitution; which met in Philadelphia. He introduced into that Convention, a motion for daily Prayers, which was not adopted, making these memorable remarks in its support: "In the beginning of the contest with Britain, when we were sensible of danger, we had daily prayers in this room for divine protection. Our prayers, Sir, were heard and they were graciously answered. All of us who were engaged in that Struggle, must have observed frequent instances of a superintending Providence in our favor. To that kind Providence we owe this happy opportunity of consulting in peace on the means of establishing our future national felicity. And have we now forgotten that powerful Friend, or do we imagine, that we no longer need his assistance? I have lived, Sir, for a long time, and the longer I live, the more convincing proofs I have of this truth that God reigns in the affairs of men. And if a sparrow cannot fall to the ground without his notice, is it possible that an Empire can rise without his aid?"

Franklin wrote many strong papers during the last years of his life, which showed no deterioration of his great intellectual Society of a Memorial to Congress. His last letter is one addressed nine days before his decease to Jeffer-

son, the Secretary of State, upon the subject of the North Eastern boundary, which shows a mind clear and strong.

"A friendship founded upon the sincerest mutual esteem, existed between Franklin and Washington. After bequeathing in the codicil to his Will, his fine crab tree walking stick, with a gold head curiously wrought in the form of a liberty cap, to Washington, Franklin adds, with one of his felicitous terms of expression, "if it were a sceptre, he has merited it, and would become it." He writes to Washington in 1789: "I am now finishing my eighty-third year, and probably with it, my course in this life, but in whatever state of existence I am placed hereafter, if I retain any memory of what has passed here, I shall retain the esteem, respect and affection I have always had for you, my dear friend." To this, Washington, with unwonted warmth and earnest expression, replied: "If to be venerated for benevolence; if to be admired for talents; if to be esteemed for patriotism; if to be beloved for philanthropy, can gratify the human mind, you must have the pleasing consolation to know that you have not lived in vain. And I flatter myself that it will not be ranked among the least grateful occurrences of your life to be assured, that, so long as I retain my memory, you will be recollected with respect, veneration and affection by your sincere friend George Washington." His fatal illness occurred in 1790 and required the constant attention of his physician, Dr. John Jones. On the 17th of April, about eleven o'clock in the forenoon, he quietly expired, closing a long and useful life of eighty-four years and three months. He expressed a wish in his Will, that his body should be buried with as little ceremony and expense as may be. The funeral took place on the 21st of April and was attended by the members of the City and State Governments, the various societies of the City and some twenty thousand citizens. The bells were muffled and tolled, flags displayed at half mast, and the consignment of the body to the earth was signalized by peals of artillery. His remains lie in the northwest corner of Christ Church Cemetery in the City of Philadelphia, by the side of those of his wife. A marble stone, six feet long, four feet wide, bears this inscription: "Benjamin and Deborah Franklin"

"In person, Franklin was symmetrically and compactly

formed, in later life inclined to corpulency. His height was five feet, nine or ten inches. His features were an index to the good temper, amenity, cheerfulness, and affability which were his characteristics. Childhood, that best detector of a gentle heart, was ever welcome to his knee."

Franklin carried into public life, the same spirit and qualities which had marked his private life, thoroughly upright, fair and straightforward in all his dealings, and intensely patriotic, and thus achieved the highest success as a statesman and a diplomatist. A sincere believer in the rights of all men, he estimated, at their true worth, the various distinctions which he found introduced into civilized nations and polite society in Europe. In his personal bearing he was sedate and weighty. Men instinctively felt his worth, and submitted themselves to his wisdom." "His country," says Bigelow, "owes much to Franklin for his service in various political capacities; the world owes much to the fruit of his pen; but his greatest contribution to the welfare of mankind, probably, was what he did, by example, to dignify manual labor.

"He was a champion of the Indians, when to advocate their cause was to displease the many. He was among the earliest opponents of the slave trade and of slavery.

He omitted no opportunity to protest against War, and its iniquity, and he branded as piracy the custom of privateering, however sanctioned by international usage. As a statesman and philosopher, his fame is imperishable.

As an active benefactor of his race he is entitled to its lasting gratitude. As one of the founders of the American Union, he must ever be held in honorable remembrance by all who prize American institutions. As the zealous foe to oppression in all its forms, he merits the thankful regard of good men of all ages and climes."

THE FRANKLIN FOUNDATION.

The Codicil to his Will dated June 23, 1789, provided that the Fund if accepted by the inhabitants of the town of Boston, be managed under the direction of the Selectmen united with the Minister of the oldest Episcopalian, Congregational and Presbyterian Churches in that town, who were to make loans on certain conditions to young married

artificers under the age of twenty-five years. Dr. Franklin who died in 1790, calculated that in one hundred years, the one thousand pounds would grow to 131,000 pounds, of which he says: "I would have the managers then lay out, at their discretion, 100,000 pounds in Public Works, which may be judged of most general utility to the inhabitants. The remaining 31,000 pounds I would have continued to be let out on interest for another 100 years. At the end of this second term, if no unfortunate accident has prevented the operation, the same will be 4,061,000 pounds, of which I leave 1,061,000 to the town of Boston and the 3,000,000 to the disposition of the Government of the State, not presuming to carry my views further." The town of Boston accepted this donation at a Town Meeting, held June 1, 1790. A futile suit brought by Franklin's heirs in 1791, prevented the diversion of the Fund at the expiration of the 100 years. On January 17, 1894, by direction of the three ministers and the Board of Aldermen of the City, which board claimed to be the successors of the Selectmen, $329,300.48 of the Fund was paid to the City Treasurer for the purchase of land and the erection thereon of the Franklin Trade School and for the equipment of the same. On January 31, 1906, the amount available for expenditure of the Managers was 0426,824.78. The Franklin Fund, which with its accumulations, will become available in 1991, amounted January 31, 1911, to $200,628.75. The Franklin Trade School, or Franklin Union, as it is now called, occupies the new building at the corner of Appleton and Berkeley Streets, and was opened September, 1908. This building contains 34 class rooms and 6 draughting rooms and accommodates 1700 students. There is also a Technical and Scientific Library, and a large hall with a seating capacity of 1000, for lectures, concerts, discussions and similar purposes. The building, with equipment, cost about $30,000. The site, which was purchased in 1906, cost $100,000.

There was another donation in the Will of Franklin, of about one hundred pounds, to the town of Boston, to be expended in the purchase of Silver Medals for the most meritorious pupils in the Public Schools. This has been fruitful of good. These Franklin Medals are greatly cherished by Bostonians, who, in the years gone by, have been the recipients of them.

The cornerstone was laid with an appropriate address and becoming ceremonies, on the fifteenth of June, in the presence of the Governor and Lieutenant Governor of the

Monument in Granary Burying Ground to Franklin's Father and Mother

Commonwealth, and the officers and members of the Massachusetts Charitable Mechanic Association, by Hon. Charles Wells. The monument is in the form of an obelisk, and is constructed of five massive ashlers of Quincy granite taken from the Bunker Hill Monument Quarry. Its height is twenty-one feet, standing on a rectangular base, measuring two feet in height, and seven feet on each of the four sides.

Josiah Franklin and Abiah his wife
Lie Here interred
They lived lovingly together in wedlock
Fifty-Five Years;
Their youngest son,
In filial regard to their memory
Places this Stone.
J. F., Born 1655—Died 1744—AE. 89.
A. F., Born 1667—Died 1752—AE. 85.

Statue of Benjamin Franklin in front of City Hall, Boston

John Adams

By Rev. Frank B. Cressey of Cambridge, Mass.

Eight miles south of Boston and a part of Greater Boston is the city of Quincy. Within five hundred feet of the railroad station and in plain view of all passengers, stands the Unitarian Church house, a stone structure with massive pillars in front. Beneath the porch thus formed in stone sarcophagi, lie the bodies of John Adams, Second President of the United States, and his son, John Quincy Adams, Sixth President. The room of their entombment is easily visited.

John Adams was born at Quincy, Oct. 30, 1735, and always made it his home, save as public duties called him away temporarily—the house, with its furniture of nearly two hundred years ago, is still standing, and is open to the public, about a mile from the church of his entombment. Mr. Adams was a direct descendant of Henry Adams, an English Puritan, one of the earliest settlers of Massachusetts. John Adams was graduated from Harvard in 1755, studied law, and was admitted to the bar three years later. In 1764 he married Abigail Smith, daughter of the Pastor of the Congregational Church at Weymouth, a half a dozen miles away, the site of the parsonage a long stone's throw from the North Weymouth Railroad Station. A part of this old parsonage still stands in North Weymouth Village. Parson Smith had told his three daughters that when they married he would preach for each a sermon from a text chosen by themselves. The husband's choice of Mary ("Polly") pleased him; therefore he was glad to use the text, "Mary hath chosen that good part." But Abigail's consent to marry John Adams was by no means pleasing to her parson father—too much "social step down" for family pride. Therefore, the Parson's strenuous objection to her chosen wedding text, "John came neither eating nor drinking and they say he hath a devil." However, Abigail stuck to her text, her father preached from it, and neighborhood gossips had something to talk about.

John Adams

That John Adams chose wisely and that Abigail Smith consented wisely as to her husband is a matter of history. Also, it may be well emphasized, that of all Revolutionary patriot wives, none proved herself of nobler mold than Abigail Smith Adams. In all her husband's public life, she was his wisdom and inspiration; their hearts beat sympathetically along patriotic lines. At the time of John Adams' marriage, he, and thousands of other American colonists, were thinking deeply and not a little vigorously, as to their relations to the English Government. One political annoyance after another led to the issuance of the Stamp Act, which commanded the use of Government Stamps on various documents in order to their legality. Immediately a fierce opposition arose, led in no small part by John Adams, who took the bold stand that the act was "null and void," because Parliament had no right to tax the Colonists and that such statutes could have no possible force over persons who had not consented to their enactment. In other words, "Taxation without Representation" is a violation of man's natural born political rights, it is to be resisted to the end, however bitter. All business speedily came to a standstill; some of the British officers, whose duty it was to handle the stamps, necessarily declined such handling; while others felt the personal individual force of the opposition and the Stamp Act was repealed. The "Sons of Liberty" thus speedily showed their power. British stamps were no more necessary to American colonists than British Tea, and they would not be used.

That John Adams was a man to be reckoned with, by the English government, is singularly evidenced by that offer to him of the office of Advocate General under the Crown. Adams was poor, and in a large sense needed the money, which acceptance of the offer would bring him. But to accept the office would close his mouth against all so-called outrages on American rights, would force his denial of what he had said as to the injustice of taxation without representation. Therefore his immediate and emphatic refusal of the offer. No similar attempt at violation of patriotic principle was afterwards made. And yet, strangely enough to thousands of his compatriots, even to some American readers of American history, in this our day, Mr. Adams, as a lawyer defended the British soldiers, whose firing resulted in the so-called Boston Massacre,

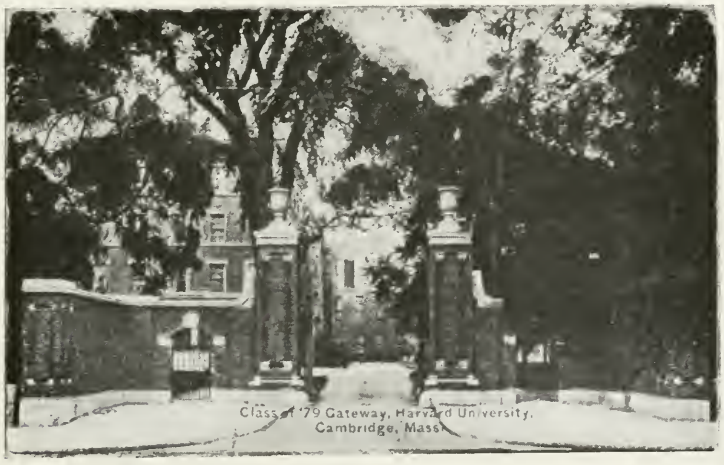
March 5, 1770. For this action many assailed him in traitorous terms; none the less, he did his defence work successfully, also he speedily regained the respect of his assailants, and as before was recognized as the leading lawyer on the patriot side.

In June, 1774, John Adams was chosen one of five delegates to the Continental Congress which was to meet in Philadelphia the following September. One of the delegates did not go, the remaining four rode in a coach, "four poor pilgrims," as they were called.

Adams continued a member of Congress for three years, or till November, 1777. During these years he tried to induce Congess to adopt the Massachusetts Army, gathered after the Battle of Lexington, and to make the fight National, with George Washington at its head; he tried to persuade the Colonies to become States, to declare independence, to unite the States into one Confederation, to make alliances with foreign nations and to establish a Navy,—thus proving himself a patriot among patriots, a leader among leaders. In these three years of service, he was Chairman of twenty-five Committees, and a member of sixty-five more—ninety in all.

In February, 1778, Mr. Adams, as one of the three Commissioners to France, left home, arriving in Paris, in April. Thus began his diplomatic sevice, representing the young and in fact the not yet fully born American nation, and this at the risk of personal consequences by no means attractive. His mission speedily accomplished, he was in Cambridge in September, 1779, as a delegate to the Convention, to form the Constitution of Massachusetts, the writing of which finally devolved almost entirely upon him. Two months later he again sailed for Europe; this time as one of the Commissioners to treat with Great Britain for treaties of peace and commerce; this, three years before the close of the war. But he could not enter England then on account of the strong anti-American sentiment. He, therefore, went to Holland in July, 1780, to borrow money for the United States, and secured a loan of two million dollars, money most sorely needed by the American soldiers. On April 19, 1782, the anniversary of the battle of Lexington, Holland recognized him as Minister Plenipotentiary from the United States of America, the first Government to take any such step. June 21, 1783, a treaty was

signed in Paris by Adams, Franklin and Jay representing the United States and by the authorities of France and England, and thus the War of the Revolution was officially ended, and to America came the long struggle for blessings of peace. February 25, 1785, Mr. Adams was appointed Envoy to Great Britain. The king treated him courteously, but the people as a whole, had no welcome for him. Three years later he was glad to resign his office and come home. The time of Mr. Adams' return (1788) was one in



Gates to Harvard College.

which fear of a foreign foe had given place to serious domestic troubles. The new Federal Government was not yet established. But in less than a year after Mr. Adams' return, the Constitution was adopted and a new Government organized. Washington was unanimously elected President, and Adams elected as Vice-President, although he had nine competitors. Eight years later, Adams became President, but political enemies prevented him from a second term. The strife of parties was now fully on. Adams, the Federalist, gave way to Jefferson, the Democrat. This is said to have been the great grief of his life. He took what vengeance he could on Jefferson, once his intimate friend. He filled many new judicial offices. He even left Washington city before sunrise on March 4, and would not attend Jefferson's inaguration. His official life was

closed. His heart was crushed. He retired to the privacy of his Quincy home and there lived until July 4, 1826, on which day both he and Jefferson died, the fiftieth anniversary of the Declaration of Independence.

General John Glover
A Revolutionary Hero

One of the finest statues in Boston is that of General John Glover, which stands in a prominent position on Commonwealth Avenue and commemorates the services of one of the purest patriots and bravest officers of the Continental Army. Whatever he was given to do, he did thoroughly and well, and without ostentation.

History has been very meagre in its record of his gallant and valuable services and of the noble character of the man, but it should be known that this country is deeply indebted to this sturdy little hero, this "plain man of the people." But for him and his brave Marbleheaders, Washington might never have won his brilliant success at Trenton, which so revived the drooping spirits of the patriots. The story of Glover's life reads like a romance and shows his energy and innate ability. Beginning as a humble shoemaker, in his native town of Marblehead, he soon became master of a sailing vessel, then owner of a fleet of fishing vessels. When hostilities broke out between the mother country and the colonies, Glover was doing a large and prosperous business. The famous Boston Tea Party was succeeded by that odious retaliatory measure, the Boston Port Bill, the intention being to cripple Boston, commercially even if it brought ruin to the town. The men of Marblehead sympathized with their brethren in Boston, and as a practical evidence of that sympathy sent them large quantities of provisions and several cartloads of fish and oil, and Glover was foremost in all this good work. The larger proportion of the men of that time were keen seafaring men and they realized by the close of 1774, that war with Great Britain was inevitable, and they set to work to organize the militia of the town. The officers, up to that time had been appointed by the Royal Governors of the Province. Public opinion now forced the officers to resign, and then the men of each company elected their own officers, who were given their commissions by the

town authorities. Recognizing the ability, bravery and patriotism of their fellow townsman, Captain John Glover, they elected him Colonel of the Regiment. He was not, in his makeup, the beau ideal of a military hero, for he

General John Glover

was short in stature and stout, but he was of fighting stuff, of sturdy manhood, a born leader of men, and a patriot to the core. Before the close of the Revolutionary War, in which he bore a most conspicuous part, he proved that he had military genius of no mean order, and he possessed the love and confidence of Washington to the very end.

He proved that he was an unselfish patriot, for when war had really begun he gave up his extensive and profitable business, and devoted the proceeds to the enlistment of men and the purchase of supplies. His fishing vessels were converted into smart sailing privateers, and were manned by as brave and skillful seamen as ever sailed the ocean. In his work of organizing the militia he was greatly aided by the town authorities. He gave his men constant and careful training, and he soon had a thoroughly disciplined body of men.

The Battle of Lexington soon followed the excursion of Colonel Leslie, and then came the mustering of the Continentals. The Marblehead Militia became the 21st Provincial Regiment. The town records of those days speak of the fishermen in the Continental Army. One day a rumor ran through the town that soldiers from the British man-of war in Marblehead harbor were landing at the ferry and the regiment turned out, Colonel Glover, at its head. The next day one of Glover's vessels arrived from the West Indies. In spite of the orders of the commander of the British sloop-of-war Merlin, Glover brought the vessel to Gerry's Wharf right from under the guns of the enemy. On June 10, Glover received order to "continue the regiment under his command until further orders, and to hold them in readiness to march at a moment's notice to any post where he may be directed." Six days later he was officially commissioned as Colonel by the Provincial Committee of Public Safety, and on the 21st, four days after the battle of Bunker Hill orders came to march. His regiment reached Cambridge the next day and were quartered in what is now known as the "Longfellow House."

Of its ten companies, every officer, soldier and musician —save eight, was a citizen of Marblehead, the only regiment in the war to be thus raised from a single town. The uniform of the men was a blue round jacket and trousers, trimmed with leather buttons. Colonel Glover, himself, was said to have been the most finely dressed officer in the Continental Army. The first order issued by Washington after taking command, was on the 3d of July, 1775, and was to Colonel Glover's regiment. The regiment remained in camp all summer, with the exception of one company, which was detached in August to Marblehead for privateering. Two months later Washington made Glover, vir-

tually, Secretary of the Navy, "for he was appointed to superintend the equipment and manning of armed vessels which made the first naval expedition, and captured the first prize. In the latter part of November he sent to Cambridge a long lumbering team of wagons laden with ordnance and military stores, taken by Captain Manly from a British supply ship. Of this event, Washington said: "Surely nothing ever came more apropos." History has handed down to us a little incident which occurred while the regiment was at Cambridge which shows the independent spirit and ready manners of the Continental Army. I

The Fight Between the Virginians and the Marbleheaders

give it in the words of another: "A number of Rifle Companies had recently arrived at camp from Virginia and between them and the Marbleheaders much rivalry sprung up. The Virginians were stout, hardy men in white frocks, or rifle shirts and round hats, crack shots to a man, and as such, of great use to Washington's army. They walked with a swaggering stride, spoke with a Southern drawl, and talked much of their warlike prowess and deeds. The men of Glover's Marine Regiment, who had already earned for themselves the appelations of "amphibious," and "web-

footed," were sailors and fishermen and dressed as such. They rolled in their gait and their voices had the true nasal of the Yankee. They looked upon the half Indian equipment, the fringed and frayed garb of their Southern neighbors, and their manners and pretensions with unrestrained merriment, while the men of Virginia found the Marbleheaders no less amusing. On one occasion bantering gave way to a snow ball battle, and this, in turn, to a general fight, in which a full thousand men were engaged, and a tumult raised in the camp, in the words of an eye witness, "worthy of the days of Homer." Happily at this point Washington himself appeared. Leaping from his horse he rushed into the thickest of the melee and seized by the throat two brawny riflemen, keeping them at arm's length, shaking and beating them.

By his prompt and energetic act, the disturbance was ended and a permanent peace was made between the men of the North and the men of the South. On January 1, 1776, when their term of service expired hardly a man left camp and the entire regiment re-enlisted for the war and was thereafter known as the Fourteenth Continental. In March, 1776, Washington compelled the British to evacuate Boston and shortly afterwards made his headquarters in New York. In July Colonel Glover marched with his regiment to New York where he arrived August 9, 1776, and here his regiment performed one of the greatest exploits of the war, the saving of the American army, and of Washington himself, in the retreat from Long Island, August 29th, 1776. The American army was spread out in a olng semi-circle stretching from Paulus Hook (Jersey City) on the west and Brooklyn Heights on the east. It was a long thin line and very vulnerable. General Howe had a large and well trained army of British and Hessians on Staten Island and had the support of British war vessels, commanded by his brother, Admiral Howe, when he should be ready to move against the Americans. Washington did not know where to move his troops to meet the attack. The objective point of the British was Brooklyn. August 14th, Lord Howe crossed with his forces to Gravesend Bay and two days later was ready to attack the Americans at Brooklyn. General Greene was absent on account of illness and the American forces were in command of the aged Putnam, and of Sullivan, comparatively inexperienced and ignorant of the ground. Moreover the

Americans did not number one-third as many as the British and were composed mostly of untrained militia. The advantages were all with Lord Howe, who resolved on a flanking movement. While feigning an attack in front, he took his best regiments under cover of the night, by a long detour around the American's left flank to their rear. The action commenced August 27th and the Americans were caught between two fires, and cut off from their defences. It was a long and desperate fight, and the Americans lost heavily, a large number being captured, including two generals. It was a very severe blow to the patriot cause. Some of the regiments regained their defences. These Washington reinforced by new regiments, but with the British in so strong a position the defences were no longer tenable, and only a retreat could save the American army from entire destruction. For twenty-four hours all the energies of the Commander-in-Chief were devoted in making the retreat successful. The army must be ferried across the East river to New York.

The morning of August 29th opened with the rain falling in torrents. Washington ordered every flat bottomed boat and other craft fit for transporting men, down to New York and at the same time sent an order in another direction to impress every kind of water craft from Hell Gate to Spuytten Duyvil creek, that could be kept afloat, and that had sails, or oars, and have all on the East harbor of the city by dark. Towards evening the Long Island troops were to make a feint as if about to attack. Thus the whole force was ready and under arms to march off at a moment's notice. Washington put the whole movement in charge of Colonel Glover, who had been on that side since the day of the battle. The boats had arrived and were of every variety, row boats, flat boats, whaleboats, perringers, sloops and open sail boats, everything that would carry a man, or a gun. Colonel Glover and his web-footed Marbleheaders at once commenced operations. At seven o'clock in the evening, the troops commenced to embark. The militia and least dependable troops were first to be loaded. Starting from the Brooklyn Ferry, they were carried quickly and noiselessly over to New York. The work transporting the militia was not completed until after 10 o'clock. Meantime the ebb tide and strong north wind which rose and the pouring rain rendered the sloops and sailboats useless, even when manned by the "web-feet," who boasted that they could handle every kind of craft in the worst

weather. Fortunately a thick fog settled over Long Island while New York remained still clear. Every precaution was taken to guard against discovery and the retreat was conducted so noiselessly, that the last to leave could hear the blows of pick and axe of the enemy, who were constructing besieging lines outside of the American defences. "For thirteen long hours, these hardy seamen of Marblehead plied their muffled oars, with steady strokes, their boats loaded to the "gunnalls" on a sea as smooth as glass, until the last of the entire army were safe across the mile of water to New York.

When the fog scattered and the sun shone out the British looked out on deserted forts, not an American remained. The only capture the British made was a little boat of three stragglers. "The brilliancy of the retreat atoned for the disaster of the battle, and all credit for its success was due to the 'Webfeet,' the Marine Regiment and their brave and skilful commander, Colonel John Glover, without whom it could not have been accomplished." In recognition of his services Washington appointed Colonel Glover to the command of the brigade of Colonel Clinton who was taken prisoner in the battle. Glover's own regiment formed part of the brigade. In that position he had opportunity to show to friend and foe alike, the mettle of the men of Marblehead. During the remaining months of the year 1776, the fortunes of the American army were at the very lowest. The men were dispirited and deserted in large numbers, one retreat followed close upon the other. The Americans had not been long in New York before Washington saw that it was untenable and must be given up, and he decided to cross over to New Jersey. Again Colonel Glover, who was still in command of Clinton's brigade, and his "webfeet" manned their boats and carried 500 men in safety across the North river. The sick were transported to New Jersey Hospitals and the next day the heavy baggage, arms, and ammunition were removed. After 6 hours of hard, continuous labor, the evacuation was nearly completed, when this little Iron Brigade received orders to march to King's Bridge, fifteen miles distant. They had hardly unstrapped their knapsacks and had had no refreshment, when wor came to them that General Howe had at last marched up the East River and was landing at Kip's Bay, and Glover and his men were recalled to Harlem seven miles south. "It was a sorry sight that met his eyes when he

reached his destination. The regiments sent to resist the landing of the British had been driven from the shore by the cannonading of the war ships in the river and were panic stricken and retreating. This had in turn communicated itself to the troops sent to their relief, for they were, for the most part, raw militia, and the whole detachment were in a wild flight toward King's Bridge with the British at their heels. "In their mad rush they met Glover and his men, tired from their hard service, but marching with the firm and assured tread of veterans. They halted, formed again, took courage and were ready to go back and meet the enemy. But Washington did not dare trust them to go again into battle. General Glover's brigade, alone, could not save the day, and reluctantly, he marched his men back to the north of the island, but he had borne himself like a hero, and had won the lasting friendship and regard of Washington. A little later, in an exploit at Poll's Point he was again to show those qualities which made him so reliable at all times. The Commander-in-Chief could always depend on his courage, common sense and good judgment. With his brigade of less than a thousand men he had been attached to General Lee's division and was stationed on the East Chester road near Pelham, to watch the enemy. "Lord Howe was planning to take his troops across to King's Bridge and get in the rear of the American position. "On the morning of October 18th, the British commander landed several corps at Pell's Point at the mouth of Hutchinson River and immediately marched towards New Rochelle. These movements had been noted by Colonel Glover who, after sending off a message to General Lee, marched down with 350 men and three field pieces to oppose their landing. It was the first fight in which Colonel Glover had held the chief command and conscious of his lack of scientific military training, he was not a little nervous at the responsibility. "Surprised to find the British advance guard nearer than he had supposed, he, none the less, arranged to the best advantage his little force, all men from Massachusetts including his own Marbleheaders. Reed's regiment he stationed on the left of the road, near the great boulder stone, since known as Glover's Rock, and Shepperd's and Baldwin's to the right and rear of it, behind a stone wall. Part of his own regiment he posted with the three guns on a hill in the rear and with 40 men he moved forward to meet the British. After a brisk skirmish with the advance guard

which was quickly reinforced, he slowly fell back while the enemy followed with a shout until they came within thirty yards of the point where Reed's regiment lay concealed. The latter then rose and poured a volley into the British ranks, forcing them back in confusion until their main force appeared, some 4000 men with artillery.

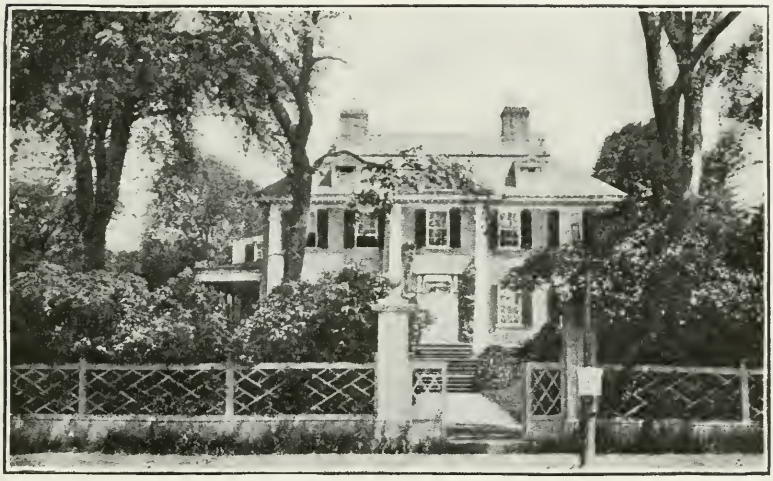
Under the cover of their guns the British advanced again and the Americans after exchanging several rounds were forced to retire, first to Shepperd's position, where a sharp fight was maintained, the men firing by divisions, and then keeping up a constant fire, and then to Baldwin's, finally retreating to the hill, where the British, with all their superior numbers did not dare to atack and contented themselves with a desultory fire. At dark Glover withdrew his men and marched about three miles to Dobb's Ferry near the main body. "After fighting all day without victuals or drink, laying as a picket all night, the heavens over us and the earth under us, which was all we had, having left our baggage at the old encampment in the morning." Although forced to withdraw finally, Colonel Glover had, by his stubborn stand, served materially to check the British advance and it has been said "that he had thereby the honor of being the first to resist the landing of a British army on the mainland of America."

The following day General Lee sent his warmest thanks to Colonel Glover and the brigade under his command "not only for their gallant behavior yesterday, but for their prudent, cool, orderly and soldier-like conduct in all respects." From Washington also came thanks and commendation. December 19, 1776, Thomas Paine considered the blackest moment of the American Revolution, and said in the Pennsylvania Journal: "These are the times that try men's souls. The summer soldier and the sunshine patriot will, in this crisis shrink from the service of his country, but he that stands now deserves the thanks of man or woman." There were continual disasters to the American arms. After the battle of White Plains, Washington abandoned the entire island of New York and Fort Washington on the Hudson commanded by General Greene had been taken and with it 3000 American troops. Washington's army at this time was but a "forlorn hope" and he saw it gradually melting away. He was driven down the west side of the Hudson and across New Jersey, and the

enemy within a day's march ready to attack and capture him. In the last week of December his army was strengthened by reinforcements of Pennsylvanians, and now in his camp on the Pennsylvania side of the river he was planning how to wrest a victory from the enemy and thus check his advances.

"In his army was Colonel Glover with his brigade, including his own regiment, the brave and devoted webfeet of Marblehead. He had fought bravely against McDougal at Chatterton Hill and had maintained a stubborn defence against an enemy of greatly superior numbers. Later he had been stationed at North Castle with Lee's army and when Lee was captured he had marched under Sullivan to rejoin Washington on the Delaware. Washington's army at this time did not number over 6000 men and were scattered for 30 miles along the river." The New England regiments were so poorly provided with blankets and camp equipage and such meagre stores of every kind that it was necessary to send men about the country to buy and beg old clothing and blankets for the freezing men." It was with these men that Washington planned to make what will ever be known as one of the most daring and successful coups in history. On the opposite side of the river from his lines was Trenton and here were stationed three regiments of Hessians with a detachment of artillery under the general command of Colonel Rahl. There were no intrenchments and the guards were careless. The Germans, true to their traditions and customs of "fatherland" were holding high carnival on Christmas Day, and, confident of their own military strength, they never thought of any trouble from the "farmers" across the river. Washington knew this. If he could strike a blow at such a time and inflict a defeat upon the enemy it would restore the lost morale to his army and inspire the country with new hope and courage. A council of officers was held a few days previous to the proposed attack and Washington unfolded his plans. The great difficulty was in crossing the river. It is related that Colonel Glover, who was one of the Council, said: "You need not be troubled about that, General, my boys can arrange it." The time chosen for the attack was Christmas night, when it was thought the Hessian debauch would be at its height and they would fall an easy prey in a sudden and unexpected attack. As in the

case of the retreat from Long Island, a large number of boats were collected and stationed at different points along the river bank as it was proposed to cross in three places. Washington, with the main army, 2000 strong, was to make the direct attack. Early Christmas morning the final orders were given and by 3 o'clock in the afternoon all the troops ordered on the expedition were in motion toward the river. There was a little snow on the ground and



Glover's Headquarters at Cambridge.

Major Wilkinson says: "the route of the poor soldiers was easily traced for the snow was, here and there, tinged with blood from the feet of the men who wore broken shoes."

On Christmas Day, the river was full of floating ice, there was a swift current and the weather was very bleak and cold. In the boats waiting for the troops, were the brave Marbleheaders, the much ridiculed "Webfeet," but already famous as the heroes of Long Island, and who were now to win still greater laurels by making victory possible for the great Comander-in-Chief." General Washington stood on the brink of the river watching the boats as they rushed into the current. At his side was Colonel Henry Knox, of Boston, Chief Artillery Officer, whose stentorian voice made the Commander's orders clearly understood

Washington Crossing the Delaware

across the stream. And the men of Marblehead, clad in their serviceable but well-worn unforms of blue jackets and leather buttoned trousers, bent to their oars and time after time ferried the boats across the river." Washington plannd to complete the crossing by midnight, but so violent was the weather that it was four o'clock in the morning of the 26th before the last man was across and the army ready to march. It was only expert boatmen who could have handled those boats in such a current with the masses of ice striking against them. The crossing was made more difficult by a snow storm of mingled snow and hail which set in towards morning. An eye witness said of the scene: "It was as severe a night as I ever saw, the frost was sharp, the current difficult to stem, the ice increasing, the wind high, and at eleven o'clock it began to snow. It was only with the greatest care and labor that the horses and artillery could be ferried across the river. Two brave men were frozen to death and a third would have perished had not his benumbed body been found in time. The march from the ferry to the village was cold and cheerless. It is told that on the way, Captain John Glover, a son of the Colonel, finding that the snow and sleet had rendered the muskets useless, reported the fact to General Sullivan. "Well, boys," he replied, "we must fight them with the bayonet." Washington sent a like reply. "Tell the General to use the bayonet and penetrate into the town, for the town must be taken and I am resolved to take it." The town was taken. The surprise was complete and wholly successful. The Hessians, roused from their heavy slumbers, were attacked before they could make adequate preparations for defence, their own cannon trained on them, and their regiments broken up and captured. Colonel Glover and his men, tired as they were from the long and arduous night's work, distinguished themselves no less in the battle than at the crossing. "Years afterwards in a speech before the Massachusetts Legislature, General Knox eulogized General Glover and his men for their work of that night. "There," he said in conclusion, "went the fishermen of Marblehead, alike at home upon land or water, alike ardent, patriotic and unflinching, whenever they unfurled the flag of their country." On the battle monument commemorating this brilliant stroke of Washington is a statue of one of the men of Glover's Marblehead regiment, gun in hand, as he appeared

in that famous fight. Historians all agree that this battle turned the crisis of the Revolution and saved the fortunes of the Nation, and to the brave Marbleheaders, led by their intrepid Colonel John Glover, the honor is largely due. Although he had notably distinguished himself wherever he had been placed, and had on several important occasions commanded a brigade, it was not until February 1777, that Congress appointed him a Brigadier-General. His modesty and his regard for the welfare of his family led him to decline it. He had sacrificed much of his property in his sudden departure from home, and his long absence from home made it difficult to find the means of support of his wife and eight children. Washington feared to lose the services of this brave and capable officer, who, on more than one occasion, had saved the fortunes of the Army and the Nation, and he urged Glover to accept the appointment and remain in the service. He wrote Glover: "I put your name down in the list of those whom I thought proper for the command and whom I wish to see preferred. I think I may tell you, without flattery that I know of no man better qualified than you to command a brigade. You have activity, energy, and as you very well know the duties of a Colonel, you know how to exact that duty from others."

Glover yielded to Washington's request and went to Peekskill to rejoin his brigade. He found them in a shocking condition, "without coats, breeches, stockings or shoes, many of them having nothing but a frock and blanket to cover their nakedness." Two regiments had no tents. Burgoyne and his allies were near Saratoga and in July, Glover received orders to go with his brigade to reinforce Schuyler, who was being hardly pressed by the enemy. The woods on the way swarmed with Indians, and many of the scouting parties were cut off, killed, scalped, and taken prisoners, at least 250 or 300 within two days. In the battle of Bemis Heights, September 19th, Glover's brigade made a part of the American right wing, and "in one continual blaze" helped to hold the hills near the river against all British attacks. In the second battle of October 7th the Marblehead regiment took a most prominent part, the rest of the brigade being held in reserve. "Again and again they broke through the British lines, captured their artillery, and by a determined bayonet charge and a desperate hand to hand fight broke the camp itself. Glover, himself had three horses shot from under

him that day, but escaped without wound, but many of his brave men were less fortunate. Even the stolid Hessians expressed their amazement when they saw those brave Marbleheaders dash through the fire of grape and cannister, over the dead bodies of their comrades, through the embrasures, over the cannon with the same agility with which they had frequently climbed to the main top, bayonetting the cannoniers at their posts. "Glover's troops evinced the coolness and agility of sailors in their attack, and showed that they could use the bayonet with as much skill and effect as the 'marlin' or 'handspike' aboard ship. General Gates pursued the discomfited British to Saratoga, and believing that Burgoyne had removed the main body of his army to Fort Edward, he ordered an attack on the camp as he thought, of the rear guard of the British army. Generals Nixon and Glover were in the advance, and the former was already across Saratoga Creek when Glover learned from a captured British soldier, that Burgoyne's whole army, instead of retreating, was drawn up under cover of the woods across the creek, supported by artillery.

"Quickly grasping the situation, General Glover immediately sent to recall Nixon, though the latter was his superior, saving him from destruction and the American army from great loss, thereby hastening Burgoyne's surrender which was made a few days later. General Glover had the honor of guarding and conducting the army of prisoners to their destination at Cambridge, and in the task he showed that his tact and fairmindedness were no less than his energy and his courage. On November 7, he delivered his prisoners on the very grounds where two years before he and his "webfoot" regiment had first appeared in the Continental service. General Glover's health at this time began to fail and his family were almost in want, and but for his loyalty to the patriot cause he would gladly have resigned. In August 1778 he raised volunteers from Boston and Marblehead and he joined in the attack on Newport under General Sullivan, after the departure of the French fleet and the destruction of half of the army in the hot and successful battle of Botts Hill. The following night the Americans, finding their position no longer tenable, General Glover and his Marbleheaders were once again in their boats, and transferred the whole American force from Rhode Island to the mainland at Tiverton, without the loss of a man. His

wife died in November, and in February following he was granted a furlough to settle his affairs.

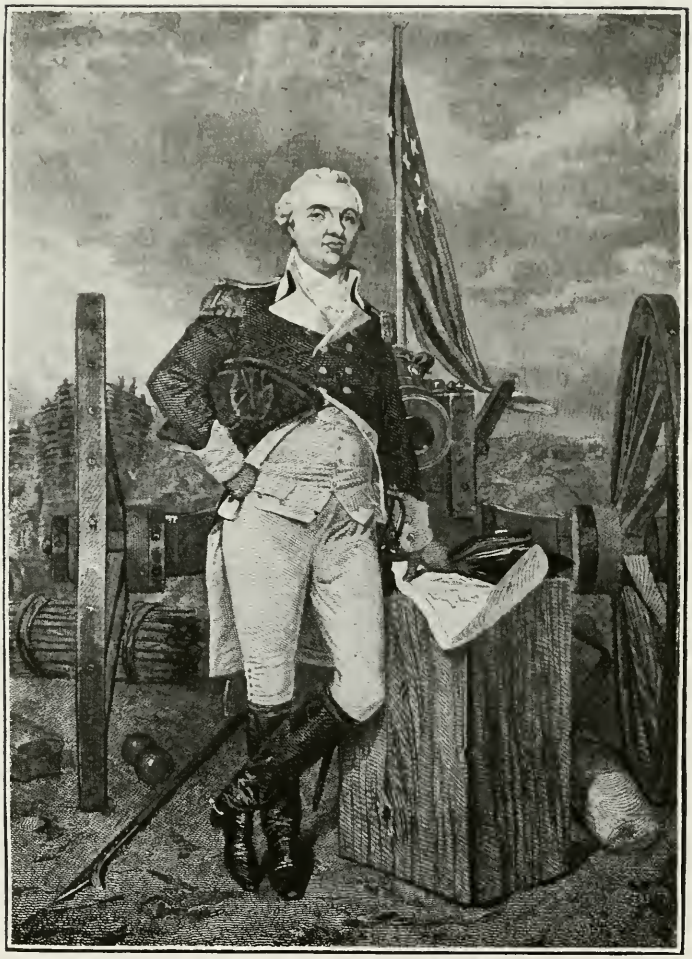
The John Glover statue on Commonwealth Avenue is by Martin Millmore and was given to the City of Boston by Benjamin Tyler Reed in 1875. It is of bronze, of heroic size, and represents the sturdy old soldier in Continental uniform, with the heavy overcoat hanging in graceful folds from his shoulders. His left leg is advanced with the foot resting on a cannon, and in his right hand he holds a sword, the point resting on the ground, while the empty scabbard is grasped in his left. The inscription is as follows:

JOHN GLOVER
of Marblehead
A Soldier of the Revolution
He commanded a regiment of one thousand men
raised in that town, known as the Marine Regiment
And enlisted to serve through the war.
He joined the camp at Cambridge June 22d 1775
And rendered distinguished service in transporting the
Army from Brooklyn to New York August 29th, 1776
and across the Delaware December 25th, 1776
He was appointed by the Continental Congress, a Brigadier
General on February 27, 1777
By his Courage, Energy, Military Talents he secured the
confidence of Washington and the gratitude of his country.
Born November 5, 1732
Died at Marblehead January 3, 1797.

Later he had command of the Department of Providence and was also stationed at Ridgefield and Peekskill. His ill health still continued. During the years 1780 and 1781 he was, for most of the time with his brigade at West Point and was a member of the military court which sentenced Major Andre. After the surrender of Lord Cornwallis at Yorktown he received his last commission to take charge of mustering and furnishing of troops from Masachusetts. In the spring of 1782 he wrote to Washington: "Instead of growing better I find myself much weaker, my whole frame being exceedingly shattered and debilitated and my nervous system so much weakened that were I to gain a kingdom I could not make a journey of 20 miles." July 23, 1782 he was retired on half pay by Congress and went home to Marblehead to his motherless children.

He had put himself and his fortune into the Revolution and now that his vitality was nearly exhausted and his fortune absorbed, he did not complain. "His youth was gone, and he had no capital, so he partitioned off a corner of his sitting room for a workshop and made and cobbled shoes for a living."

His fellow townsmen who loved and respected him and had watched with pride his career in the Army did not forget him now. They made him Selectman of the town and twice elected him Representative to the Massachusetts Legislature. In 1788, with his brother Jonathan and his old friend Ager Order he was sent to the State Convention to vote for the adoption of the Federal Constitution. He died January 30, 1797 in his 65th year. Outside of his town of Marblehead, his death was hardly noted by the country for whom he fought so bravely and to whose interest he had devoted his life and fortune.



General Henry Knox

General Henry Knox

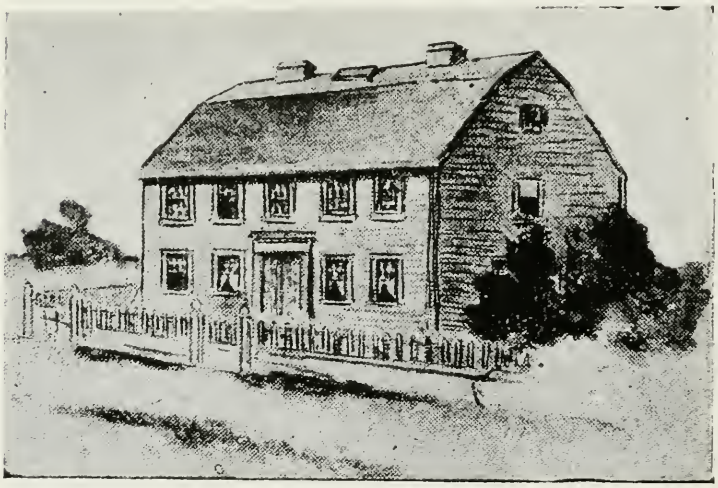
Bookseller, Patriot, General and Secretary of War

As in the case of General John Glover, so General Henry Knox has not received in general histories the meed of honor due his ability, his gallantry and patriotism. By his character and solid merit he rose in rank, step by step, winning the confidence and friendship of Washington to an unusual degree. He was an able and fearless general, a great Secretary of War at a critical period in our history, and his declining years were spent as a model citizen of the country he helped to make and which he dearly loved. His was such a human, strong and sound life story that all Americans may well be proud of him. Washington Irving says of General Knox: "He was one of those providential characters which spring up in emergencies as if formed by and for the occasion."

He threw up a thriving business to take up arms for the liberties of his country. The aptness and talent displayed by him as an artillery officer induced Washington to recommend him to Congress for the command of the regiment of artillery, in place of the veteran Gridley who was considered by all the officers of the camp too old for active engagement.

Hon. James Sullivan, in his book, "Familiar Letters on Public Characters" gives quite a minute account of the engaging character of the man Knox, who within his manly frame, had a woman's heart and tenderness. It is generally conceded that he came of Scotch origin. His father, William Knox, was one of a company of immigrants under the spiritual leadership of Rev. John Muirhead, who in 1729 sailed from Belfast, Ireland, to Boston, to found a religious society, which later became the Federal Street Church. In 1735 William Knox married Mary Campbell, whose father was a member of the congregation. Henry Knox was the seventh of their ten sons, four of whom reached manhood, and two of these were lost at sea in 1769.

William Knox was a shipmaster, and it is evident that for a time at least he was prospered in his calling as he owned not only a large and comfortable dwelling but also a wharf nearby. In this house, located near the corner of Federal and Summer Streets, Henry Knox was born in 1750, and here he lived until he was eight years of age. The house, although somewhat changed in appearance stood until 1872 when, like many other old landmarks, it went down



Birthplace of General Knox

in that whirlwind of flame that swept the business district of Boston. Financial reverses overtook William Knox and he was compelled to sell his home. In 1759 he sailed for St. Eustatia, West Indies, where he was reported to have been born, evidently intending to take his family there later, but he died suddenly in 1762, leaving his family but very little property. At that time Henry had nearly completed his grammar school course and in all probability would have gone to the Latin School on School Street, where the Adamses and Hancocks had graduated, but he was compelled at this early age to contribute his part toward the support of the family, and this ended his schooling. As an apprentice he entered the book store of Wharton & Bowes who were located on the south corner of State and Wash-

ington Streets. While he may have had no choice in the matter, it is evident that the occupation proved a very congenial and happy one for him. His employer, Mr. Nicholas Bowes, was a very excellent gentleman and was like a father to the lad. "The books offered to his active and inquisitive mind the education that he sought. Every spare moment in the shop he filled with reading, to what good effect, subsequent correspondence, both official and personal, clearly shows. In addition he acquired an excellent knowledge of French, and later on this proved an asset of great value to him. One of his favorite authors was Plutarch, in whose pages, full of generals and heroes, he may well have gained his first taste of a military career. While he had a highly intellectual nature, he was a strong and imposing figure physically, tall and commanding and fond of athletic sports. He was the champion of the South End faction, leading their forces in the mimic combats, with the boys of the North End, who were often headed by Paul Revere." On the night of the

BOSTON MASSACRE

March 5, 1770, young Knox arrived on the scene of action, while on his way home from a visit to some friends in Charlestown. He had great influence with the people and went among them exerting himself to the utmost to preserve peace. He urged the excited crowd not to rush upon the soldiers, and seizing Captain Preston by the coat he implored him not to let his men fire, but a blow was struck, then followed a shot and more firing. The crowd fled, but left behind them three men dead, and eight wounded, two of them, mortally. The scenes he witnessed that night made him an ardent patriot, ready to offer his services when the inevitable conflict came five years later. In the "Boston Gazette," July 29th, 1771, the following notice appeared.

"This day is opened a new London Book Store by Henry Knox, opposite Williams Court on Cornhill (Washington Street) Boston, who has just imported on the last ships from London, a large and very elegant assortment of books, the most modern books in all branches of Literature, Arts and Sciences (catalogues of which will be published soon) and to be sold as cheap as can be bought at any place in town. Also a complete assortment of Stationery."

He had spent nine years as an apprentice with Wharton & Bowes, and at the early age of 21 he entered into business on his own account, notwithstanding the threatening aspect of political affairs. General Henry Burbeck, a contemporary friend of Henry Knox, says the store "was a great resort for the British ocers and Tory ladies, who were the '400' of that period." And Harrison Gray Otis, another friend, says: "It was a store of great display and great attraction for young and old, and a fashionable morning lounge." Here the literary and wealthy people of the town could meet for a morning chat, exchange bits of gossip, discuss political matters, read the papers, buy the latest book, or any article carried under the elastic name of stationery. Records show that he did considerable business for those days, as he bought in ten months, of a single London printer, books to the value of £2066. These were books on law, medicine and theology, among the latter, a large number of "Baxter's Saints Rest." Works of fiction by Richardson and Fielding and Sterne, and from Rivington, the Tory printer of New York, he received many copies of De Foe's "Robinson Crusoe." When the non-importation agreement went into force in 1776, the traffic in English books ceased, and then there was a demand for American.

At the age of 18, Knox joined the Artillery Company, known as "The Train," composed largely of South End mechanics and shopkeepers, under command of Major Paddock, a most efficient drill master, and the Patriot Army in the Revolutionary War owed much to the training of this doughty old Tory. Knox in 1772 was one of the founders of the "Boston Grenadier Corps," an offshoot of the Artillery Company. They were all tall men, not one being under 5 feet 10 inches in height. Their handsome uniforms and fine military bearing elicited praise even from British officers. Henry Knox was second in command, and his splendid figure in uniform, won him many admiring glances from the ladies whenever the Company drilled on the Common. One young lady, Miss Lucy Flucker, was especially attracted by the handsome young officer, and the result proved that he was not insensible to her charms. She was the daughter of Thomas Flucker, the Royal Secretary of the Province, who is described as "a high toned loyalist, of great family pretensions," and possessing much wealth and influence. Harrison Gray Otis writes of Miss Flucker that she "was

distinguished as a young lady of high intellectual endowments, very fond of books, especially of the books sold by Knox, to whose shelves she had frequent recourse, and so while orators roared and ministers caused unwise laws to be passed, and the day of battles drew nearer, the daughter of the Tory official and the rebel shopkeeper quietly carried on their courtship among the books." The old Tory, proud of his Huguenot ancestry and of his lofty position and influence, looked with great disfavor upon the suit of Knox and "they pleaded earnestly with the stubborn Lucy, urging her to give up her crazy fancies. But though only 18 years old, the young lady had a will of her own, and she was very much in love, as was Knox also. So in the end to avoid the scandal of an elopement, the family gave a grudging consent, and June 16, 1774, the two were married. Every hour the war was drawing nearer, but for 10 months Knox remained in Boston and carried on his business. He was offered great inducements to take service in the Royal cause, but he not only declined all such offers, but openly asserted his patriotic sympathies.

Failing to win him over, he was held under strict surveillance and forbidden to leave town. He was, for a time, contented to remain. He was happily married and his store was paying him well, particularly the stationery, printing and binding departments, for he had no competition. When the first shot was fired at Lexington, April 19, 1775, he could no longer remain away from the cause he held so dear, and he and his wife left the town secretly that night, his wife carrying in the lining of her cloak the sword he had worn in the militia service.

British and Tories might now ravage his shop as they pleased, henceforth his place was in the patriot ranks. With that sword he was to carve out his fortune. For better or worse he was now with the defenders of the patriot cause On his arrival at the American camp he was offered a commission, but declined, for a time, to accept one, preferring to serve as a volunteer. He had studied military science and engineering and he planned and superintended a line of fortifications around Boston. He planned and built the fort on Roxbury Neck, known as Roxbury Fort, which commanded the sole exit from Boston. When General Washington examined the works built by Knox, he expressed great pleasure and surprise at their situation and utility.

General Nathaniel Greene, with his Rhode Island contingent, was at Cambridge, and he and Knox became fast friends and were constantly together. Glover, Knox and Greene, were men drawn from the ranks of the people, and were suddenly transferred fom civil to military pursuits, each one of whom won distinguished honor as soldiers, being brave, resourceful and energetic.

They enjoyed the fullest respect and confidence of Washington, and on their part they were thoroughly loyal and devoted to their great chief. Knox expressed his pleasure at the ease and dignity with which Washington filled his exalted state as Commander-in-Chief. During the siege of Boston, siege guns were sadly needed. The fertile and active mind of Knox conceived the daring enterprise of sending to Fort Ticonderoga on Lake Champlain and dragging from thence the ordnance captured by Ethan Allen, when the fort was surrendered to him, and which was lying there unused. He submitted his plans to Washington, who, after careful thought, gave them his approval.

Knox's plan was to go to Ticonderoga while the snow and ice continued to render streams passable and roads feasible for sleds and sleighs. He thought $1000 might cover the expenses of such a journey, but the actual expenses were over $2500. General Philip Schuyler of New York was instructed by Washington to render Knox every possible assistance. Knox reached Albany December 1st. The winter was severe, the roads unbroken, and the snows deep. He reached Ticonderoga on the 5th of December and collecting the coveted ordnance, began his homeward journey. His inventory shows that he took away 8 brass mortars, 6 iron mortars, one howitzer, 13 brass cannon, 30 iron cannon, a barrel of flints, and a quantity of lead. The heaviest artillery were brass, 14 and 18 pounds. He wrote Washington under date of December 17, detailing the difficulties of the expedition, and says: "I have had made 42 exceeding strong sleds, and have provided 80 yoke of oxen to drag them as far as Springfield, where I shall get fresh cattle to carry them to camp. In 16 or 17 days' time, I hope to be able to present to your excellency, a noble train of artillery." The route was over the Green Mountains, through the hill country of New England, by roads that never bore a cannon and have never borne one since. One stormy night while on his way to Ticonderoga, he slept on

the floor of a rude log cabin. His bed fellow was Major Andre, who had been taken prisoner by General Richard Montgomery at St. John, and who was on his way to Lancaster, Pennsylvania, to await an exchange. As was well known, Andre was a most genial and companionable man, and he and Knox talked far into the night.

In 1778, General Knox served on the tribunal, which sentenced Andre to the ignominious death of a spy. It was a hard position for a man of his kind heart and susceptibility, and especially remembering his pleasant interview with Andre two years previous. On January 5th, Knox sent his wife a very lively and entertaining account of this wonderful and historic journey. There was great rejoicing in the American camp as Knox entered with his treasures and the hearts of the patriots were inspired with fresh hope and courage. After the evacuation of Boston, Washington, who saw and greatly admired the energy, ability and patriotism of Knox, detailed him to lay out fortifications for points along the coast that had been molested and threatened by the enemy. Knox was close by the side of Washington in the operations around New York in August, 1776. It was his habit to cross over to the Long Island shore with Washington every day to inspect and direct the lines of defences that were being thrown up by the Americans. He drew up a plan for the increase and efficiency of the body of artillerists and he was placed at the head with the rank of Brigadier-General, and thenceforth in the battles of Trenton, Princeton, Germantown and Monmouth he especially distinguished himself by the work of his artillery. He helped to repair the error of Lee and at Yorktown his battery, as usual, was most gallantly served. He was meanwhile employed in various counsels and negotiations of the war calling for skill and judgment and in planning with Greene and Clinton the defence of the Hudson, and in the counsels on the state of the Army at Valley Forge.

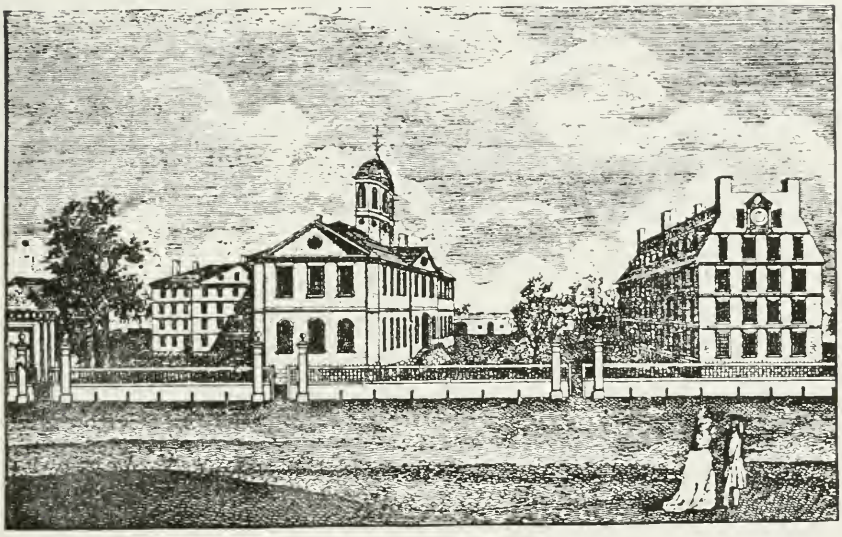
Knox saw the weakness of the militia at the battle of Long Island. He continually urged the necessity of trained men, of a standing army, and gave good reasons why it was necessary. Being a very brave man he could not brook cowardice in a soldier. Knox and Green supported Washington in his determination to abandon further defence of New York. At Kip's Bay, three miles above New York, Knox, while removing ordnance and stores, narrowly escaped cap-

ture by the British. Colonel Aaron Burr, with a force, was close at hand and guided Knox and his force to the Bloomingdale road.

Knox seized a boat, made his way up the East river to Harlem, where he was received with great acclamation by his brother officers, who had given him up for lost. Washington greeted him with an affectionate embrace. It was at this time that Mrs. Murray served the patriot cause well by entertaining and detaining General Howe and his pursuing troops at her hospitable mansion. Putnam was conducting the retreat of the American army, and while Howe dallied over the refreshments furnished most liberally by Mrs. Murray, the Americans escaped an encounter with a greatly superior force. Thatcher says: "Ten minutes would have been sufficient for the British to have secured the road at this turn and entirely cut off General Putnam's retreat." Ever afterwards it was a common saying among the Continental officers, "that Mrs. Murray saved this part of the Continental Army. Murray Hill, New York, now 34th Street, was named in honor of this noble, patriotic woman. The outlook of the American cause in the Fall of 1776, was a very serious one. Even Washington, was, at times, almost discouraged, but Knox was of a hopeful and buoyant temperament, and had a firm and resolute belief in the ultimate triumph of the patriot cause.

The victory at Trenton inspired all hearts with fresh courage and here Knox and Glover worked hand in hand like true heroes. The stentorian voice of Knox on the shore as he superintended the embarkation of troops could be heard far and near above all clamor. The day following that battle, Knox received his commission as Brigadier-General. It was well deserved by that brave and skilful soldier. He was an active participant in the campaign through the Jerseys. When the army was in quarters at Morristown, and enjoying for a while a season of rest, Knox was sent to New England to oversee the casting of cannon, and the establishments of laboratories for manufacturing powder and other material. The works today represented by the splendid United States Arsenal at Springfield are the result of his wise and well directed efforts. After the battle of Yorktown, General Knox was especially recommended by General Washington to Congress for promotion. "The resources of his genius," says Washington, "have suffered on

this and many other interesting occasions, the defect of means. His distinguished talents and services equally important and indefatigable, entitle him to the same mark of approbation of Congress, that they may be pleased to grant to the Chief Engineer" (meaning the French officer, General Duportail, commanding the Corps of Engineers). In the closing operations of the war General Knox bore a conspicuous part. In the summer of 1782 and the following



Harvard College in Colonial Days

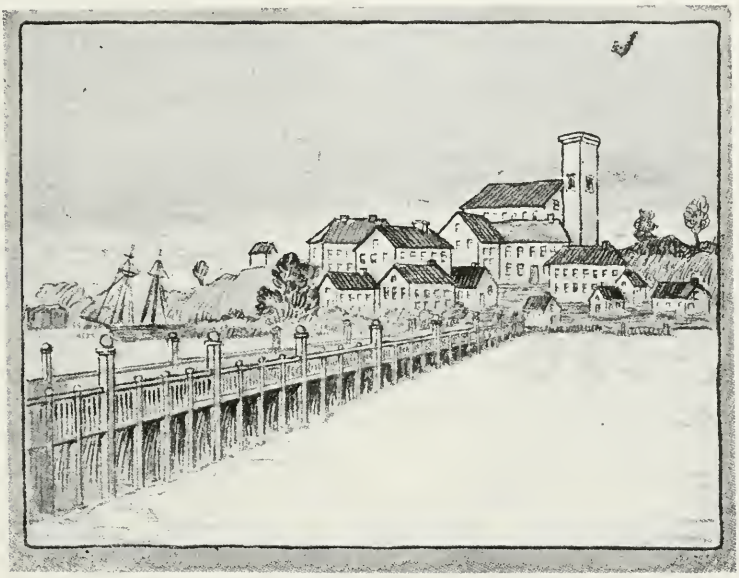
year he was in command of West Point, supporting Washington, and on the evacuation of New York by the British, he came down with his troops from West Point and entered the city at their head. When Washington on the 4th of December took that memorable leave of his officers at Frances Tavern in New York, Knox was the foremost who responded to the invitation to take his hand, and as they met, tears flowed down the cheeks of each, the Commander-in-Chief kissed his faithful friend, an example which was followed with the other officers. In 1785 Knox was appointed Secretary of War, which called forth the congratulations of Washington. When the Government was organ

ized under the Federal Constitution, Washington, as President, called him into his Cabinet to still occupy the same position. As a cabinet officer at the national capital, Knox and his wife held distinguished positions, for both were great favorites. He was a brilliant conversationalist and always in good humor, and she was a lively and amiable society leader. He remained as Secretary of War until 1794, when he retired from public life and took up his residence in Maine near Thomaston, where he had an estate thirty miles square. In his later years General Knox spent most of his time in Boston. Maine at that time being under the same government as Massachusetts, he filled a seat in the Council Board of the State. He was active in public affairs and was at one time talked of for Governor of Massachusetts. His active and useful career was suddenly closed by an accident. He died at the age of 56 at his home in Thomaston, from an inflammation caused by swallowing the bone of a chicken.

On the 22d of February, 1911, the Massachusetts Sons of the American Revolution fittingly observed Washington's Birthday by placing a tablet to his friend and fellow soldier, Major General Henry Knox, near the site of his birthplace. The tablet was placed on the Essex Street side of Hotel Essex and was unveiled by Nathan Warren, Esq., President of the above society, who was a good soldier in the Civil War, that saved the Union.

The Charles River Bridge

The subject of a bridge to connect the north side of Boston with the main land was a subject for discussion for



The First Bridge across the Charles River

many long years, but it was not until the year 1720, that the citizens at a town meeting thought it expedient to build it.

When, however, they learned that the construction would require a large amount of money the project was abandoned.

The matter was again agitated in 1738, and a design was made and submitted to the Selectmen and the people to consider but this effort failed to materialize, in all probability from the same reason as before. It was not until 1786 that the bridge was finally built and opened to the public. It

was the first bridge that stretched out from the shores of Boston and to the residents of Boston, and of the neighboring towns and villages it was an event of great importance.

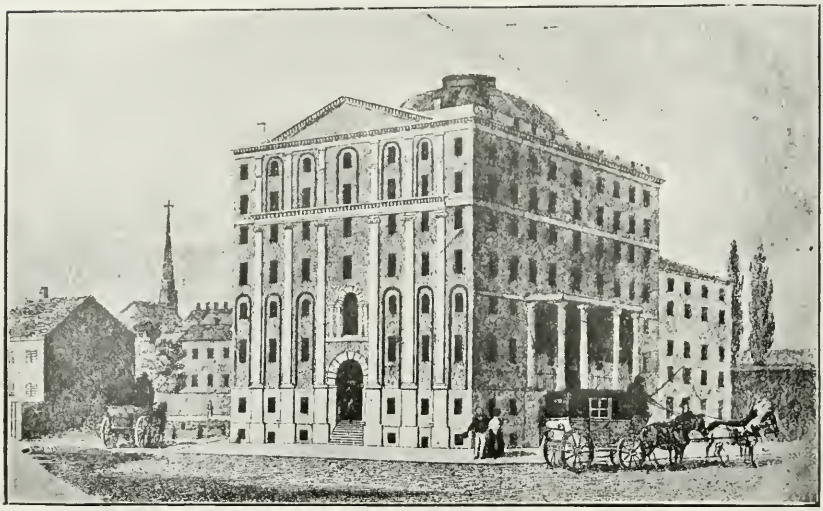
It not only promoted quicker transit between the metropolis and the outlying country, but it was continually adding to their prosperity. "The whole work was completed in thirteen months." All emoluments arising from tolls were vested for forty years in the company that built it, the Proprietors of the Charles River Bridge. The picture of the bridge and the following description was copied from the Massachusetts Magazine for 1789. "The exercises attendant were witnessed by upwards of 20,000 people. The ceremonies were ushered in at daybreak by the discharge of thirteen cannon from Breed's Hill, Charlestown, and from Copp's Hill, Boston, accompanied by the ringing of the bells of Christ Church. A long line of civic and military bodies, headed by the different branches of the legislature, started from the Old State House, as a salute was fired from the Castle. On their arrival at the bridge, the procession formed two lines, between which the president of the bridge company, Thomas Russell, and the other individuals forming the company, passed on to the centre of the structure and orders were given to fasten the draws, when the procession passed over.

The Exchange Coffee House

One hundred years ago there stood on the corner of State, Congress and Devonshire Streets, the large and imposing building depicted on next page. Compared with other buildings of its day it was certainly an immense structure, and considering the size of the town, we do not wonder that its projectors were driven into poverty. It cost $100,000 and at that time was the largest hotel in America. It contained a large dining room, 200 apartments, a splendid ball room, and a Masonic hall. Built in 1808 it was destroyed by fire November 3, 1818. It was in the busy part of the town and during the ten years of its existence it was a great gathering place for merchants and professional men, for social and business purposes. Many a project has been discussed and settled over its dining tables. In 1812 the news of all naval engagements were registered here and it was on that account a resort for the "solid men of Boston." The writer of "Glimpses of Old Boston," published in the Boston Post, in his description of this building gives an interesting account of events which occurred there during the War of 1812. He says: "Two of the heroes of that war upon the sea, in which Britannia did not rule the waves, were honored guests here. Captain Hull lived at the Coffee House when his ship, the redoubtable 'Constitution,' was in port. He had none of the egotism often engendered by success, and after the 'Constitution' escaped from the British fleet in 1812 he wrote in the registry 'Whatever merit may be due for the escape of the Constitution from the British fleet belongs to my first officer, Charles Morris, Esq.'" After the memorable victory of the ship over the "Guerriere," Captain Dacres, the British Commander, was an unwilling guest at the Coffee House, until he could make arrangements to get to England. In February 1813, Commodore William Bainbridge, who had succeeded Hull as Commander of the "Constitution," brought his ship to Boston, after sinking the British ship "Java," off the coast of Brazil.

Bainbridge was a man of fine figure, very erect and of mil-

itary bearing, and was easily discernible as he walked with uncovered head. Other famous heroes marched with him in the short parade. Captain Rodgers, Commodore Hull, Brigadier General Welles and Colonel Blake. "A band was playing on the balcony of the State Bank. Under the banners and streamers strung across State Street the procession passed, while cheer after cheer from the citizens greeted the victorious Commander. An ensign was suspended across State



The Exchange Coffee House.

Street from opposite houses, on which was written: 'Hull, Jones, Decatur and Bainbridge, famous names in the War of 1812.' The cheers for the two heroes, Hull and Bainbridge, were long and loud and could be heard for many blocks. That evening Bainbridge was a guest at the Federal Street Theatre, on the corner of Federal and Franklin Streets, the play for the evening being 'Macbeth,' and as the distinguished guests entered, they arose, and gave them a hearty welcome. His appearance so affected the veteran actor, Cooper, who had the principal part, that he forgot for the moment all his ambitions, which Lady Macbeth was stirring in his breast, and he threw his bonnet in the air and joined lustily in the cheering."

On the third of March a great public dinner was given Bainbridge and his officers, attended by Governor Gore, Harrison Gray Otis, Israel Thorndike and other notables of Boston. Commodore Bainbridge treated Capt. Lambert of the "Java," with extreme and rare courtesy. This British officer was severely wounded in the fight and Bainbridge had him brought to the "Constitution," and placed him in his own cabin where he could have the best of care. Before leaving his ship Bainbridge brought the British officer's sword which had been surrendered and returned it with a little speech which showed the moral calibre of the American officer and must have deeply affected the gallant British commander.

This great hotel was destroyed by fire a few years later and was replaced by a much more modest structure. This second Coffee House stood until 1853 when this second building was taken down and a business block erected in its place.

In this connection a little incident concerning Captain Hull may be interesting. At the Authors' Guild Dinner at Salem in 1894, the President related several incidents concerning Captain Hull, who commanded the "Constitution" in her famous fight.

"Just before the war, the 'Guerriers' was on our coast and Hull entertained the English officers on board of his vessel, probably at the Charlestown Navy Yard. They fell to talking of what they would do if there were war, and Hull said he would bring them all into some American port. Dacres offered to bet one hundred guineas. Hull said no, but he would bet him a hat. When the 'Guerriere' was taken and Dacres gave up his sword on the quarter deck, Hull returned it to him and said 'But I will thank you for my hat.'"

"The double granite mansion which formerly stood on the corner of Beacon and Somerset Streets was built after the War of 1812 by David Hinkley, a rich merchant, who bought the land in 1810 of Jeremiah Allen, High Sheriff of Suffolk County. After Mr. Hinkley's occupancy, for a few years before his death in 1825, it became the home of Benjamin W. Crowninshield, who died in 1851. In 1852 the house became the home of the newly-formed Somerset Club, and was so used for 20 years, when the Club acquired by purchase the mansion house of David Sears on Beacon Street. The Easterly house on Beacon Street was occupied by Benjamin Wiggin, merchant, whose death occurred about the year 1825. In 1825 the house was sold to Joseph Peabody

of Salem, whose daughter had recently married John L. Gardner of Boston, and the Gardners resided in the house for about forty years. In 1872, the combined houses came into the possession of the Congregational Society, which constructed stores on the first floor and used the upper part for society purposes.

In 1904 the Hinkley Houses were taken down and a new building erected on the site. It is now a portion of the store of the Houghton & Dutton Company."

The Hinkley Houses.

The Public Garden

No city in the country can show a more charming or attractive spot than the beautiful Public Garden of Boston. A hundred years ago it was marsh lands and flats and for twenty years the territory was occupied by five long ropewalks. The town granted the lands, rent free, to the ropemakers after the destruction of their buildings in Pearl and Congress Streets by fire in 1794, for two reasons: to prevent the erection of buildings in a district they endangered and to help the crippled proprietors. These five ropewalks were burned in 1819 and the ropemakers decided not to rebuild but to cut up the land into building lots, and sell it for dwelling and business purposes, as the land had greatly increased in value, owing to the opening of Charles Street in 1804. The Mill Dam project of the Boston and Roxbury Mill Corporation was then under way and when that should be completed, the marshes and flats would be converted into dry land. The territory then commanded an unobstructed view of the Charles River and the opposite shores. The people saw that it was an ideal spot for a public garden and they strongly objected to the scheme of the ropemakers. As they insisted on their rights under their agreement with the town, the matter was left to referees, who decided in favor of the rope makers. By the payment of $50,000 the city regained possession of the territory which the town had given away. But this did not stop the agitation, for buildings and residences on this land—it continued until 1859, when by vote of the city and an Act of the Legislature, this little spot of 24 acres was reserved as a public park, one of the lungs of this great city. The city then began to beautify the grounds, which work has gone steadily forward, and it is today what its name really indicates, a Public Garden, with dainty flower beds, plants, shrubbery, grass plots, stretches of closely-clipped lawns, and narrow winding gravel paths. In its midst is a pretty pond, irregularly laid out, and in the summer time this is bright with gaily canopied pleasure boats. An iron bridge, with granite piers, and imposing design, spans it, and the winding walks along its margin; and the seats under the few large trees near its brink, are much sought on pleasant afternoons. There are several statues in the Garden. The equestrian statue of Washington, by Thomas Ball, stands near the Arlington Street entrance, opposite Common-

wealth Avenue. It is said to be the largest of its kind in America. The movement for its erection began in the Spring of 1859. The first substantial contribution to the fund was from the receipts of an oration by the Hon. Robert C. Winthrop in Music Hall that year, and in November following, a great fair for its benefit was held with gratifying success. All the work upon it was done by Massachusetts artists and artisans. The height of the statue is 22 feet and with the pedestal reaches 38 feet.

The Public Garden

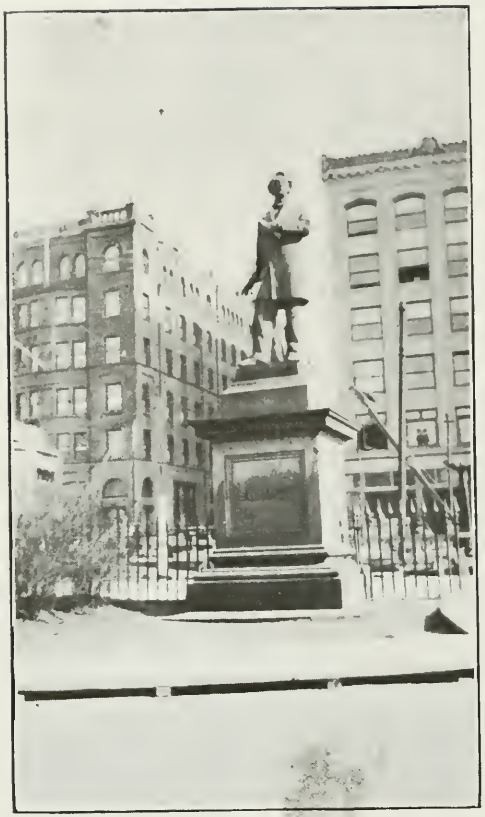
The Ether Monument was a gift to the city in 1868 by Thomas Lee. It has an excellent location and is a fine piece of work of granite and red marble. A medallion on the side represents a surgeon operating upon an injured person under the influence of ether.

The Charles Sumner Statue stands in the Public Garden, near Boylston Street, facing Beacon Street. The figure is

of bronze, about 10 feet in height, and mounted on a pedestal of Quincy granite. His attitude is firm and graceful and his left hand grasps a roll of manuscript. The funds for this statue, as in the case of the Edward Everett Statue, were raised by popular subscription. The sculptor who designed it was Thomas Ball. It was unveiled in December, 1868.

Equestrian Statue of Washington

The most recent addition to the statues in the garden is the Edward Everett Hale Statue on the Charles Street side, near the central entrance from that street. The statue stands facing the garden and is a faithful representation of the face and form of the man so familiar to two generations of Bostonians, who was so loved and admired for his humanity and broadmindedness.

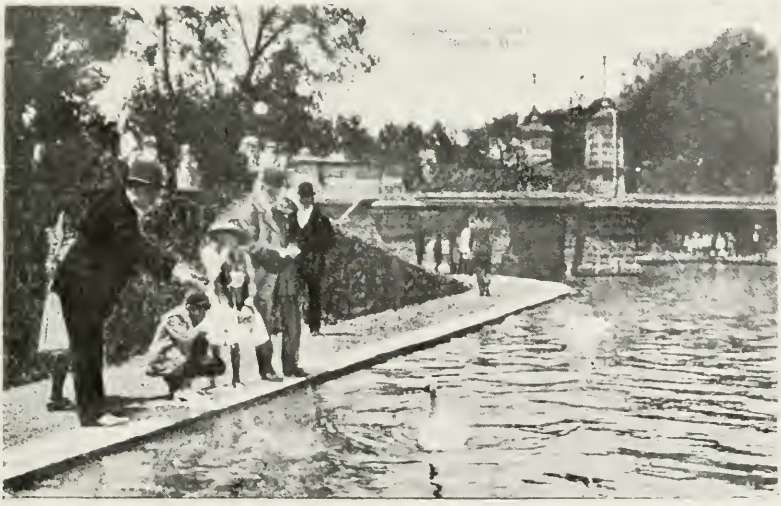


Statue of
Charles Sumner

Statue of
Rev. Edward Everett Hale

Panorama of Public Garden, Boston, Mass.

Public Garden.

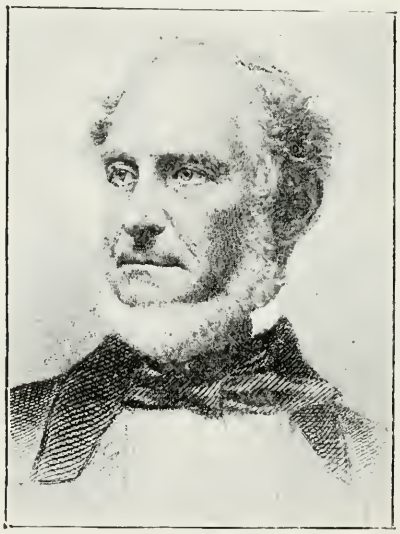


Public Garden.

Boston Schools

The men who settled Boston, under John Winthrop in 1630, were, for the most part, of sound learning, far sighted vision, and noble spirit. They were stern and austere in their religious views, but their sentiments regarding political prosperity were sound and healthy, and they laid deep the foundation for social and public happiness.

They knew that liberty, civil and religious, for which they



Thomas Sherwin, Master English High School

had sacrificed so much, could never be maintained if the people were ignorant. Governor Winthrop in his journal in 1645, writes, "that divers free schools were erected," and it is quaintly observed in the law establishing these schools, "that the stronghold of Satan consisted in the ignorance of the people, and all means should be employed to counteract the ould

deluder." The Puritans began to teach the children almost at the moment of landing. The records show that on the 13th of April, 1635, a Free School was established, and from that hour to the present, the inhabitants of Boston have cherished and fostered these invaluable institutions, so that the history of the Boston schools is, in a good degree, the history of the people themselves. It has been the aim and pride of each generation subsequent to the founders, not to deface or mar the walls of our fathers' building, but to beautify, perfect and adorn them, extending their area, and elevating their towers of grandeur in all strength and fair proportion.

Our ancestors enforced upon the towns by penal enactments, the obligation to support free public schools, and inaugurated a policy, which, in after years, induced their descendants to provide by law for the compulsory school attendance of all children. They were determined that the "ould deluder," should have no chance in Boston. In no direction does the generous public spirit of Bostonians, show so conspicuously as in the support of their schools. This is attested in the vast sums expended for schoolhouses and apparatus and the generous salaries paid to the teachers. Add to this the sacrifice of property for the good of future generations, and it stands forth without a parallel in the world's history.

Philemon Pormont became schoolmaster in 1635. In 1639 Mr. Wheelwright joined him. The school was free, supported by subscription, according as each man felt disposed to give. Daniel Maude came to the office in 1646. Maude was a minister and on his removal to Dover, N. H., Benjamin Thompson came some years later, a very learned man and a poet. Ezekiel Cheever came next, and is rgarded as the father of American Pedagogues. He elevated the character of Boston schools and it was conceded to be the principal school of the land. The first District Writing School was kept by John Cole in 1684.

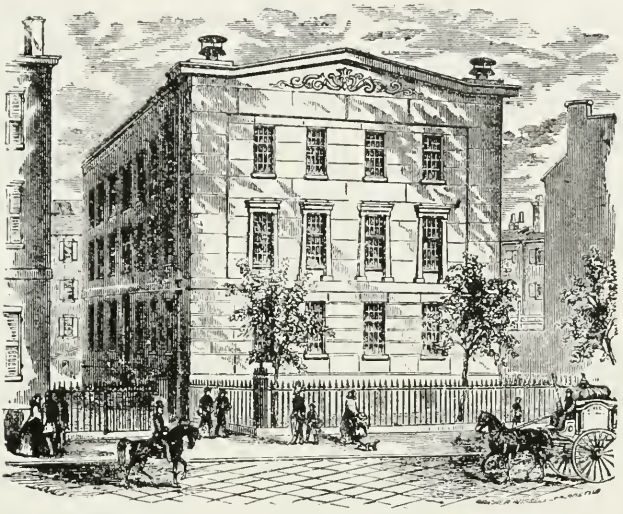
In 1713 Captain Thomas Hutchinson built a schoolhouse at his own expense, which was known as the North Latin school. The same family built a schoolhouse in 1718 in Love Lane. There was another Writing School on Mason Street. There was but one school kept open during the Siege of Boston, and that was kept grauitously by Mr. Oliver Dupee. In November 1776, all the schools resumed under the care of the Selectmen. The oldest volume of Town Records shows a subscription list for the support of schools, headed by Sir Henry Vane,

who gave £10, as did also Governor Winthrop, and Richard Bellingham. In 1641 the town voted to apply the rent money from Deer Island to support public schools. For over two centuries Boston Schools have been supported from the public treasury. Previous to 1789, boys, only, were taught in the public schools, of which six were in existence at that time. The records show that the examination of the schools by the Seelctmen was quite a ceremonious affair. There were present, besides the Selectmen, the ministers of the town, overseers of the poor, representatives to the General Court and leading citizens. The Educational Committee gave a report of their examination, the number of pupils in each school and all "the pupils in very good order." No wonder the little fellows were still and fixed to their seats, at seeing thirty pairs of knee buckles, breeches and long hose come parading into the schoolhouse, all in a row, with their ruffles, wrist bands, cocked hats, powdered wigs, and spectacles, to say nothing of parsons' gowns and doctors' saddle bags. Verily it must have been a rare sight to look at!

The extent of instruction in those days was in the branches of Reading, Writing and Arithmetic. In 1789, the people of the town saw the necessity of improvement in the existing system and voted for instruction of both sexes. There should be one school where the rudiments of the Latin and Greek languages should be taught and there should be one Writing and one Reading School at the South, at the Centre and at the North parts of the town, where children of both sexes should be taught. The Boston Latin School is a venerable institution of learning. If we may judge from the language of our ancestors its origin seems to have been in hostility to his Satanic majesty in the Statute words, "it being one chief project of Satan to keep men from the knowledge of the Scriptures as in former times, keeping them in unknown tongues, that so at last, the true source and meaning of the original might be clouded and corrupted with false glosses of deceivers."

As we have said, the school building was first located on School Street, in the rear of King's Chapel. Later, (1812) it occupied a building on the site of the Parker House. In 1844 a large brick school edifice was erected on Bedford Street, one-half being occupied by the Latin School and the other half by the English High School. The latter school was established in 1821, and was a progressive step in popular edu-

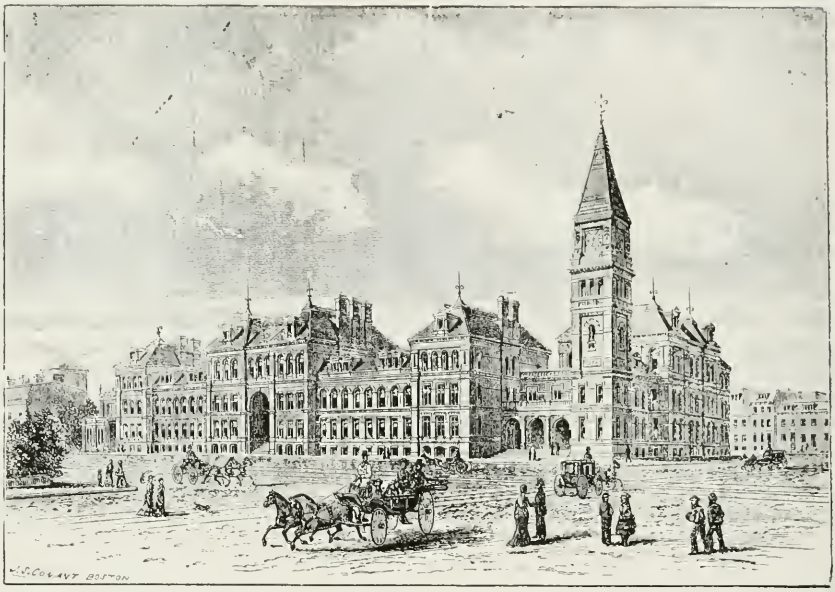
cation and its complete success not only satisfied the most sanguine expectations of its friends and promoters, but also gave an impetus to a similar provision for the girls of the city. The Latin school has had some famous masters, and the English High has also been especially favored in having been under the guidance of very excellent men and able instructors.



The Latin and English High School Building on Bedford Street, 1860

Among the teachers of New England, there was none who stood higher in his profession, or who was more truly loved and honored than the late Thomas Sherwin. "He had a remarkable completeness of character and a well adjustment of all his powers, which gave symmetry and beauty to his moral and intellectual nature; combined with which he united widely gathered knowledge, a thorough mastery of whatever subject he had investigated and the conscientious use of all he was and all he knew for the advantage of others. These traits with his unselfish disposition and genial spirit, won for him universal regard, and made him a competent judge on every side, and one of the leading characters of his time,—a worthy model for the encouragement and emulation of progressive

minds." Under his guidance it was considered, that in thoroughness the English High School of Boston ranked next to West Point. An English gentleman was appointed to visit the schools of this country and upon his return he made his report to Parliament. In it he said: "Taking for all in all and as accomplishing the end at which it professes to aim, the English High School of Boston, struck me as the model school of the



English High and Latin School, Montgomery Street

United States. I wish we had a hundred such in England."

No record of Boston schools would be complete without an extended notice of the great and valuable services rendered by the Hon. Horace Mann, who did so much in making them the model schools of the country. While a resident of the town of Dedham, he was elected a member of the Legislature where he served ten years, four years representing the town and six years as a member from Boston, whither he removed in 1833. A brilliant and thorough scholar, he saw that the time had arrived for an advance in the system of public school instruction and he advocated the establishment of a State

Board of Education—which was organized in 1837, with eight members, Mr. Mann being a member and the first secretary. Here he worked with great zeal and efficiency and it was principally through his influence and exertions that the whole policy of the State in regard to public schools was revolutionized, which made Mr. Mann a conspicuous figure in the educational circles of two continents. He visited Europe and made an exhaustive study of the popular educational systems there. In 1852 he was nominated by the Free Soilers for Governor of Massachusetts and on the same day he was elected to the presidency of Antioch College, Yellow Springs, Ohio. He accepted the presidency of the college and carried the institution through a series of financial and other difficulties.

The First Church

One of the very first acts of the Colonists upon their arrival in New England was the formation of a church. The Covenant signed by those early settlers of Boston, July 30th, 1630, was the foundation of the First Church.

We are told that the groves were God's first temples, and these God-fearing men and women held their first meetings during that first summer under the shade of a great oak, literally "in a house not made with hands."

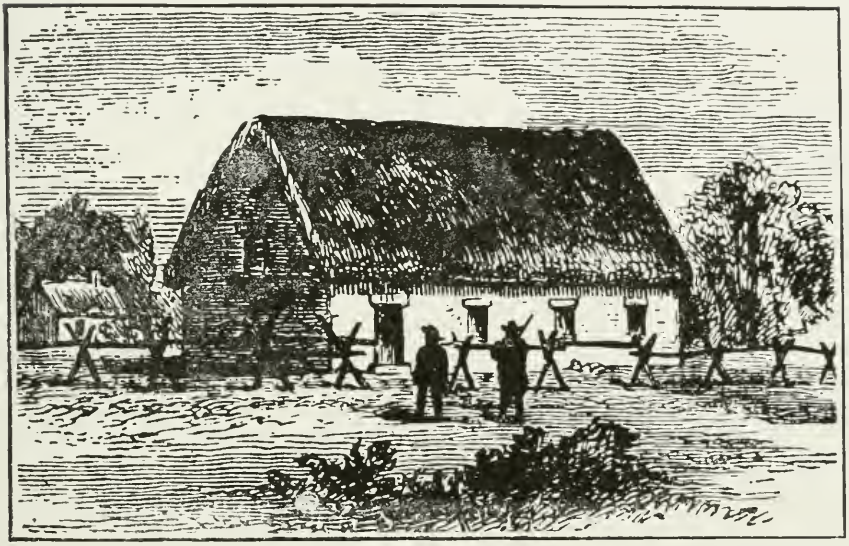
The first meeting house was built in 1632 and had mud walls and a thatched roof, and stood on the corner of State and Devonshire Streets, where the Brazier Building now stands. It was a rude but substantial building. The first pastor was the Rev. John Wilson, who lived near by on his farm, and he had for a colleague, the highly esteemed Rev. John Cotton formerly the pastor of old St. Botolph's, Boston, England.

In 1639, the church had become too small, and in 1640 a new edifice was erected on Cornhill (now Washington Street) where now is located the Rogers Building, opposite State Street. Since those early days, this First Church has had many locations, but it has always retained its original name. The cost of this second edifice was met by weekly church collections, which shows, that, even in those early days, the people of Boston believed in supporting their church by voluntary contributions, and not by rates or taxation by law.

This second meeting house was destroyed in the conflagration of 1711, the greatest of the eight great fires that Boston had then, experienced, but was rebuilt.

On Market Street, nearly opposite the front door of the church, stood the whipping-post and the stocks, and we are told that the first prisoner placed in the stocks was the carpenter, Edward Palmer, who built them in 1639. The town fathers were incensed at his exorbitant bill for their construction, and they laid their strong hands upon him, and he forthwith spent an hour as a prisoner of his own creation.

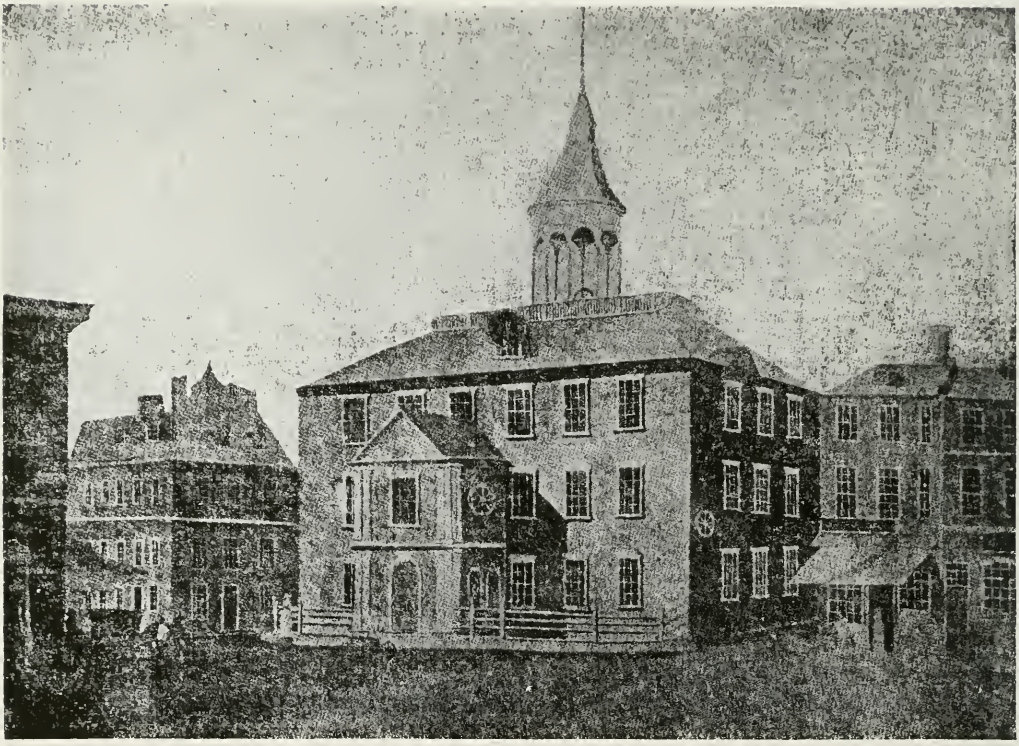
and as a forbidding example to like grasping merchants with whom the early town may have been afflicted. In 1801 the stocks stood on State Street, near Change Avenue. We are told that during the fire which destroyed the church building some sailors who climbed to the church cupola to try and save the bell, were cut off by the flames and perished. A brick edifice on the same site replaced the wooden one, and in 1717, or thereabouts, a large clock was put on the building, which was probably the first time-keeper for public use



First Church, Boston, 1632, Corner Devonshire and State Streets

in Boston, if not in America. There were some quaint old laws and customs in the Puritan churches of those days. In 1646 it was the custom of this First Church to fine absentees from church service three shillings each. In these modern days when the audience rooms of churches are made so comfortable in every way for the worshippers, we can scarcely realize the hardships endured by church goers of a hundred years and more ago. The heating of an audience room in those days would have been considered an unnecessary expense. The services were unusually long, the sermons generally an hour or more in delivery, and through it

all the people sat and shivered. Under such a test of endurance small boys grew restless and their elders grew sleepy. An attendant was always present to look after such cases. He walked up and down the aisle during the services armed with a long pole, with a solid wooden ball at one end.



First Church, 1639

When he caught sight of a sleeper, he administered a vigorous tap on the offender's head, if a man, or boy, but in the case of a woman he had a pole in which was a fox's tail, and this he would draw across her face. Judge Sewall, in his diary, says, that "one Sunday at the Old South Church, the worshippers were so cold that their coughing interfered with the sermon, and the Sacrament bread was frozen as hard as pebbles." In 1721 the Second Church was built on Hanover

Street, and after that the First Church was popularly known as the "Old Brick."

In 1760 there was another disastrous fire, and again the church edifice was destroyed. The Town House (Old State House) was also burned and more than 30 buildings. In 1761 another church edifice arose from the ashes. On March 5, 1770, the bell of the Old Brick Church gave warning to the citizens of the Boston Massacre. In March, 1776, after the siege of Boston, General Washington with some of his troops attended service at the First Church, and then adjourned to the Bunch of Grapes tavern on the corner of State and Kilby Streets, to refresh the body.

The last service in this old church building was held July 7, 1808, and on the 21st of the same month they worshipped for the first time in their new meeting-house in Chauncey Place, now Chauncey Street, on the East side, about half way between Summer and Bedford Streets. That section was then a fine residential quarter. Here the solid men of the town lived, and between the years 1805 and 1850, there were a large number of churches in that section. There was the new South, on Church Green; Trinity Church on Summer Street, corner of Hawley Street; Federal Street Church, on the corner of Federal and Franklin Streets; The Holy Cross Cathedral on the corner of Franklin and Devonshire Streets; Rowe Street Baptist Church on the corner of Bedford and Rowe Streets; the Second Church on Bedford Street, between Chauncey and Washington Streets; the Mariner's Church at the foot of Summer Street; the Essex Street Church on the corner of Rowe Street and Essex Street. Across Washington Street, was the Winter Street Church, Park Street Church and St. Paul's Church. Of that large number only Park Street and St. Paul's Churches remain in their original location. The onward march of business and the change in the residential district has driven them away.

In 1868, the property on Chauncey Place was sold and a lot purchased on the corner of Berkeley and Marlborough Streets, on which the society erected a most beautiful stone structure costing $325,000, having a seating capacity of about 1,000 persons. The difference between the first house of worship built by Winthrop and his associates, with its mud walls and thatched roof, and the present magnificent edifice, marks, as well as any other illustration which can be given, the advance which 250 years have brought about.

But the most interesting memorial in that elegant architectural church edifice is the original Church Covenant inscribed on one of the stained glass windows: "Prosperity may bring change and progress in material things, but there is no mark of change in the expression of Christian fellowship."

At No. 27 State Street is the following Tablet:

ON THIS SITE STOOD
THE FIRST MEETING HOUSE
IN BOSTON
1632—1640

Also another Tablet:

Site of the First Meeting House in Boston—Built A. D. 1632. Preachers: John Wilson, John Eliot, John Cotton. Used before 1640 for Towne Meetings, and for Sessions of the General Court of the Colony.

The First Church, 1916

KING'S CHAPEL.

This quaint old Church building stands on its original site on the corner of Tremont and School Streets and was the first Episcopal Church in New England. It is now a Unitarian Church. The first edifice was of wood and was built in 1689, and Robert Ratcliffe was the first Rector. In 1754 the present stone structure was erected. Its plain and

King's Chapel

simple architecture, although overshadowed by the larger and more imposing modern buildings, is still a fitting type of those sturdy, serious minded men who built it, and of those, who, for generations, worshipped witihin its walls.

In 1804, the tower was blown down in a severe storm. In 1878, the City of Boston seriously considered the removal of Kings' Chapel, with the adjoining burial ground, and erecting a new Court House on its site. "The interior of the Church, with the high old fashioned pillars, and stained glass windows, is remarkably attractive." In Revolutionary Days, General Washington, during his stay in Boston, worshipped in this church, and the pew he occu

pied is pointed out, with pardonable pride, to the visiting stranger. The genial Autocrat of the Breakfast Table, Dr. Oliver Wendell Holmes, was a regular attendant at this church and devotedly attached to its interests. On its 200th Anniversary in 1888 he contributed a poem which was full of historical reminiscences. There are some who remember him in his later years, as he used to stand in his gallery pew during the singing of the hymns. Writing a loving letter to his friend, Phillips Brooks, in 1888, he says of Kings' Chapel: "In that church I have worshipped for half a century. There on the fifteenth of June 1840, I was married; from that church the dear companion of so many blessed years was buried. In her seat, I must sit, and through its door I hope to be carried to my last resting place." His last desire was respected, he was buried from that church. In his poem, "The Rhymed Lesson," he makes the bells of Kings' Chapel, Brattle Street, the Old South, Park Street and the Old North on a Sunday morning, blend their tones in one gospel of reverence, humanity and mutual toleration. Its insertion here, we deem appropriate:

"The Chapel, last of sublinary things,
That stirs our echoes with the name of Kings,
Whose bell, just glistening from the font and forge,
Rolled its proud requiem for the Second George,
Solemn and swelling, as of old it rang.
Flings to the wind, its deep sonorous clang;
The steeple pile, that, mindful of the hour
When Howe's artillery shook its half-built tower,
Wears on its bosom, as a bride might do,
The iron breastpin which the Rebels threw
Wakes the sharp echoes with the quivering thrill
Of keen vibrations, tremulous and shrill,
Aloft, suspended in the morning's fire
Crash the vast cymbals from the Southern spire;
The Giant, standing by the Elm-clad green
His white lance lifted o'er the silent scene,
Whirling in air, his brazen goblet round,
Swings from its brim, the swollen floods of sound,
While sad with memories of the olden time,
Throbs from its tower, the Northern minstrel's chime,
Faint, single tones, that spell their ancient song,
But tears still follow as they breathe along."

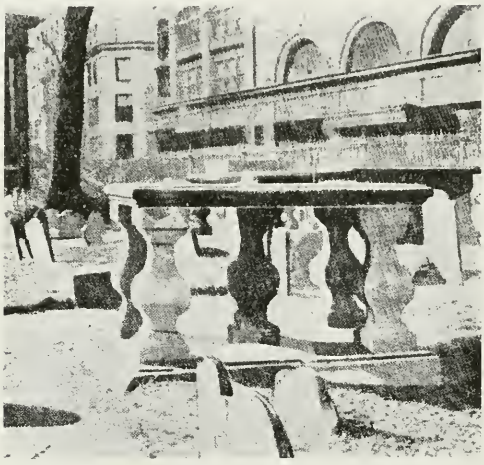
The original bell in the tower of Kings' Chapel was from the famous White Chapel Foundry, England, and was hung in 1772. This bell was cracked while being tolled for evening service May 8, 1814. It was replaced by a bell cast in 1816 by Paul Revere at his foundry in Canton. It weighed 2437 pounds and was the heaviest bell cast at the Revere Foundry. The contract entered into with Paul Revere was that he should take the old bell and allow 25 cents a pound for its metal. He was to make the new bell

Interior of King's Chapel

in all respects, size, shape, weight and tone as near as possible like the old bell. This he accomplished successfully by using the old metal and adding a little of his own composition. His pay for the new bell completed was at the rate of 41 1-2 cents per pound. During his life time, Paul Revere cast 398 bells, and the Kings' Chapel bell was his 161st.

This burying ground is the oldest in the city proper. According to accurate records, the first burial in this cemetery was on February 18, 1630, the year that Boston was founded by John Winthrop. For 30 years it was the only burial place of the town.

Here Governor Winthrop, his son, and grandson were buried; the two latter were Governors of Connecticut. Here also were buried Governor Shirley, who built the famous Colonial mansion in Roxbury, Lady Andros, wife of Governor Andros, the Rev. John Cotton, the famous divine, pastor of the First Church of Boston, John Davenport, the founder of New Haven, Connecticut; John Oxenbridge and Thomas Bridge, pastors of the First Church



Tomb of John Winthrop

and many other well known persons of Colonial days in Boston, including Major Thomas Savage, of King Philip's War fame. In one of the tombs were deposited the remains of the wife of John Winslow, who, as Mary Chilton, according to tradition, was the "first woman to touch the shores of Cape Cod."

The United States Navy in the War of 1812
On the Ocean and the Lakes

The war of 1812 between Great Britain and the United States, was brought about by the aggressions of British cruisers upon American commerce. For several years the continent of Europe had been engaged in the Napoleonic wars. The "man from Corsica" had laid Europe prostrate at his feet and had been consecrated "The High and Mighty Napoleon, the First Emperor of the French."

England allied herself with the Continental powers, in the attempt to crush Napoleon, and her fleets had almost swept French commerce from the ocean. There remained but one obstacle to her becoming complete mistress of the Seas, "and that was the American merchant marine, which, taking advantage of the troublous times in Europe, had assumed considerable proportions. American ships, flying a neutral flag, had free access to the ports of England and France, and other European ports and were doing a large and profitable carrying trade."

British ship owners and naval officers looked on with envy, foreseeing a formidable rival, whose power must be crippled, and these represented to their Government, that the Americans, under the guise of neutrality, were secretly aiding the French.

The British Government at once revived an old law, known as the "rule of 1756," concerning neutrals, and orders were secretly issued authorizing British cruisers to seize, and British Admiralty Courts to condemn, as prizes, Ameican vessels and their cargoes that might be captured by British cruisers. "These depredations which were nothing, more or less than 'highway robberies" were often made under the most frivolous and absurd pretexts, and they aroused the most intense indignation throughout the United States."

Under such conditions commerce began to dwindle, and became scarcely more than a coastwise trade, for American vessels were subject to seizure by both British and French cruisers, and the United States had no navy to protect its merchant ships.

"The feeling in America was intensified by the haughty assertion and offensive practice of the British doctrine of the right of search for suspected deserters from the royal navy, and to carry such suspected persons away without hindrance. The right of search and seizure had been strenuously denied, and its policy condemned because American seamen might be thus forced in the British Service under the

Battle between the "Constitution" and the "Guerriere"

false pretext that they were deserters. This had already happened. It had been proven after thorough investigation, that since the promulgation of the "rule of 1756," nearly three hundred seamen, a greater portion of them Americans, had been taken from vessels, and pressed into the British service." In 1807, occurred the affair of the British man-of-war Leopard, and the United States Frigate Chesapeake,—when a broadside was fired into the latter vessel, and four men taken from her crew, one of whom was hanged at Halifax. "In 1808, the British Parliament, with an air of

great condescension, passed an act, permitting American trade with France, on condition that vessels engaged in such trade, should first enter some British port, pay a transit duty and take out a license." Matters continued to grow worse for four years, until forbearance ceased to be a virtue. For America to hesitate and submit longer to such treatment was rank cowardice. President Madison sounded the War trumpet in his Annual Message, in November, 1811. "The House of Representatives, led by that brilliant speaker, Henry Clay, then only thirty-four years of age, determined that indecision should no longer mark the councils of the Nation." The Committee on Foreign Relations, Peter B. Porter, Chairman, submitted an energetic report on the 29th of November, in which the British Government was arraigned, on charges of injustice, cruelty and wrong. The Report stated, "To sum up in a word, your Committee need only say, that the United States, as a sovereign and independent power, claims the right to use the ocean, which is the common and acknowledged highway of Nations, for the purpose of transporting, in their own vessels, the products of their own soils, and the acquisitions of their own industry, to a market in the ports of friendly nations, and to bring home in return such articles as their necessities or convenience may require, always regarding the rights of belligerents, as defined by the established law of nations." Great Britain in defiance of this incontestable right, captures every American vessel, bound to, or returning from a port, where her commerce is not favored, enslaves our seamen, and in spite of our remonstrances, perseveres in these aggressions. To wrongs so daring in character, and disgraceful in their execution, it is impossible that the people of the United States should remain indifferent. We must never tamely and quietly submit, or we must resist by those means which God has placed within our reach. The sovereignty and independence of these States, purchased and sanctified by the blood of our fathers, from whom we received them, not for ourselves only, but as the inheritance of our posterity, are deliberately and systematically violated. And the period has arrived, when, in the opinion of your Committee, it is the sacred duty of Congress, to call forth the patriotism and resources of the country. By the aid of these and the blessing of God, we confidently trust, we

shall be able to procure that redress which has been sought for, by justice, by remonstrance and by forbearance in vain."

On June 19, 1812, President Madison issued a proclamation in which he formally declared war against Great Britain. The chief cause for declaring war was the impressment of American seamen by the British, the blockade of French ports, without adequate force to sustain the act, the orders in Councils, and the incitement of the savages to hostilities. Congress immediately sustained this declaration of War and appropriated $3,000,000 for the Navy. There were many military failures in the War of 1812, but the little American Navy, weak as compared with that of the British, won great honor for itself and the Nation. At that time the British naval force on the American Station consisted of five ships of the line, nineteen frigates, forty-one brigs, and sixteen schooners, these scattered from Halifax to the Leeward Islands. "The Americans went boldly out upon the ocean in National and privately armed vessels, and won victory after victory." When war was declared a small squadron of American Ships, under command of Commodore Rogers, consisting of three Frigates, the "President," "Congress" and "United States," and the sloop of war "Hornet," was cruising off Sandy Hook. He sighted a British squadron, convoying a West India fleet of merchantmen, to England. In his flagship, the "President," he gave chase, and overtook the British off Nantucket Shoals. He had a slight engagement with the "Belvidera" and a chase of several hours, but finally abandoned the pursuit. When the news was carried into Halifax, it caused considerable excitement, and a squadron of war vessels under command of Captain Broke, was sent out in pursuit of Rodgers and his frigate. Broke's frigate was the "Shannon" of 38 guns.

"The "Constitution," or "Old Ironsides," as she became familiarly known, was launched October 21, 1797. She was built in Boston, at Edmund Hart's shipyard—where is now Constitution Wharf. At first she was considered an ill-fated ship, as two attempts to launch her failed, but at the third attempt, she slid gracefully into the water. In those days she was the pride of the American Navy. She was designed by Joshua Humphreys of Philadelphia, and constructed under the supervision of Colonel George Clag-

horne of New Bedford. She was 175 feet long, and carried a crew of 400 men. She cost $302,718.84. She was emphatically a Boston ship. A Boston shipwright chose the wood, and Paul Revere, the Revolutionary patriot, furnished the copper bolts and spikes, and Ephraim Thayer of the South End made the gun carriages. The sails were made in the Old Granary, which stood on the site of Park Street Church. Her anchors were made in Hanover, Mass. and the duck for her sails was manufactured by a company whose factory stood on the corner of Tremont and Boylston Streets.

She left Annapolis on July 12, on a cruise to the northward. When five days out, she fell in with Broke's squadron, and then occurred one of the most remarkable naval pursuits and escapes on record. The "Constitution" was not strong enough to fight the squadron with any hope of winning, her only safety was in flight. At the time there was a dead calm, and her sails were flapping idly in the breeze. Captain Hull was determined to escape his pursuers and his seamanship was equal to the occasion. Her boats were lowered with sweeps, and manned by sturdy seamen. A long 18 pounder was rigged as a stern chaser, and another of the same calibre was pointed off the forecastle. The cabin windows were sawed, so as to admit of 24 pounders being run out, and everything made ready in case she had to fight. A gentle breeze sprang up and she was getting under headway when the "Shannon" sent a shot, at long range, without effect. Then succeeded another calm, when sweeps were again used, and the good ship kept moving along in a way that puzzled her pursuers. At last the British captain discovered the secret power that was moving the "Constitution" along, and out of his power, and he adopted the same tactics and began to gain on the "Constitution." The "Guerriere" of 38 guns, Captain Dacres, another of the British Squadron, also joined in the chase. The pursuit was kept up all day and all night.

The second day the whole British Squadron was chasing the American frigate, bent on her capture. Every sail on the British ships was set, it was perfect cloud of canvas, but the expert seamanship of Captain Hull, was constantly widening the space between the vessels, and it was useless for the British vessels to try to reach her with

a shot. In the afternoon she was four miles ahead of the "Belvidera," the nearest vessel of the squadron. Then followed a terrific storm of wind, lightning and rain, but the gallant ship outrode the tempest, and at twilight she was still ahead of her pursuers, and bounding over the sea at the rate of eleven knots an hour. The British fired two guns at midnight, and at dawn they gave up the chase. The chase lasted 64 hours, and the country rang with praises of Captain Hull and of his gallant ship, the "Constitution." The "Constitution" did not long remain idle. She sailed from Boston on the 12th of August, and cruised eastward in search of British vessels. Captain Hull was especially anxious to meet the "Guerriere," whose commander had boastfully enjoined the Americans to remember that she was not the "Little Belt." He assembled his crew and told them if they ever met the "Constitution," they would have an easy victory. Captain Hull sailed as far as the Bay of Fundy, and then along the coast of Nova Scotia, where he captured some British merchant vessels on their way to the St. Lawrence river. On the 19th of August, he had his wish, for he fell in with the "Guerriere." Each commenced firing at long range, but they gradually came closer to each other for a fair yard arm and yard arm fight. Hull walked the quarter deck watching every movement of his antagonist with the keenest interest. Hull was a fat man and wore very tight white breeches. When the "Guerriere" began to pour shot into the "Constitution," Lieutenant Morris, Hull's second in command, asked, "Shall I open fire?" The Commander replied quietly, "Not yet." As the shots began to tell seriously on the "Constitution," the question was repeated. "Not yet," Hull quietly answered. When the vessels were very near each other, Hull, filled with intense excitement, bent himself twice to the deck and then shouted, "Now, boys, pour it into them!" The command was instantly obeyed. When the smoke of the first broadside cleared away, it was discovered that the Commander, in his energetic movements, had split his breeches, from waistband to knee, but he did not stop to change them during the action.

The vessels fought not fifty yards apart, and the guns of the "Constitution" were double shotted with round and grape and did terrible execution. In fifteen minutes the

upper works of the "Guerriere" were almost shot to pieces, the mizzen mast gone, her rigging, ropes and sails were in shreds, and her hull bored in many places. Captain Hull, by a skilful movement, ran the bowsprit of the "Constitution" into the larboard quarter of the "Guerriere."

The cabin of the "Constitution" was set on fire, but was soon put out. While the guns were roaring with terrific noise, Captain Hull tried to board his antagonist, but there was a heavy sea on at the time and it was impossiible to pass from one vessel to the other.

As the "Constitution" disengaged herself from the "Guerriere," the mainmast of the latter, shot through and through, fell into the sea, and the British Frigate, shattered and helpless, rolled like a log in the trough of the sea. "Her flag, that had been flying on the stump of her mizzen mast was lowered, and Lieut. George C. Read (afterward Commodore) was sent on board of her." "Captain Hull's compliments," said Read to Dacres, "and he wishes to know if you have struck your flag?" Captain Dacres, who was a jolly tar, looking up and down coolly and dryly, said: "Well, I don't know, our mizzenmast is gone, and main mast is gone, and, upon the whole, you may say we have struck our flag!" In her badly shattered condition it was impossible to save her. Her people and effects were removed to the "Constitution." The "Guerriere" was set on fire and soon blew up. A rhymer at the time, wrote:

"Isaac did so maul and rake her,
That the decks of Captain Dacres
Were in such an awful pickle,
As if Death with scythe and sickle,
With his sling, or with his shaft,
Had cut his harvest, fore and aft.
Thus in thirty minutes ended,
Mischief that could not be mended,
Mast and yards and ship descended
All to David Jones' locker
Such a ship, in such a pucker.

The "Constitution" returned to Boston, carrying the news of her great victory. It was especially gratifying to the citizens of Boston, on account of her having been built here, for they had a love and reverence for the gallant old ship. There was a great shout of triumph all

over the land, and Captain Hull was the hero of the hour. Boston gave him and his officers a grand banquet at the Exchange Coffee House, where plates were laid for over six hundred. New York sent him the freedom of the city in a gold box. Philadelphia presented him with an elegant piece of plate. He was awarded a gold medal by Congress, who also appropriated $50,000 to be distributed as prize money among the officers and crew of the "Constitution."

While the victory of the "Constitution" caused great rejoicing in the United States, it created great amazement in Great Britain. They had considered themselves impregnable on the water, and they now had forebodings, not only as to the future of the war, but also in regard to their supremacy on the water. It was so regarded by the London Times, which said: "It is not merely that one English frigate, has been taken, but that it has been taken by a new enemy, an enemy unaccustomed to such triumphs, and likely to be rendered insolent and confident by them." After the victory over the "Guerriere," Captain Hull retired from the command of the "Constitution," that some brother officer might have a chance to win renown with her.

Captain William Bainbridge was appointed his successor, and he had a small squadron, consisting of the "Constitution," 44, "Essex" 32, and "Hornet," 18. Bainbridge, with the "Constitution" and the "Essex," sailed from Boston, late in October, for the coast of South America, and there, in December, met the "Hornet," which had an English Sloop of War, the "Bonne Citoyenne," blockaded at Bahia, Brazil, which was about to sail for England with a very large amount of specie. The "Constitution" kept on her course farther down the coast of Brazil, and on the 29th of December, 30 miles from land, fell in with the British Frigate, "Java," 38, one of the finest vessels in the British Navy. They cleared decks and went into action at two o'clock in the afternoon, and fought between two and three hours. Both vessels manoeuvred for quite a while for advantage of position, the "Java," trying to run down the "Constitution," and in so doing received much damage, without gaining any advantage. As the "Java" turned, the "Constitution" poured a raking broadside into the stern of her enemy. Another broadside crashed with terrible effect through the "Java," carrying away her jib boom and part of her bowsprit. Then the two vessels lay

broadside to broadside in deadly conflict. The mizzen-mast of the "Java" went by the board and between five and six o'clock, the "Java" ceased to fire and her colors were hauled down. Her commander Captain Lambert, was mortally wounded. Her crew consisted of 446 men and boys and she had more than one hundred passengers. Her people were all transferred to the "Constitution" with their baggage, and the "Java" was then set on fire and blew up on the 31st of December.

Bainbridge, after landing and paroling his prisoners, set sail for the United States, where he was awarded the welcome given to all naval heroes of those days, who did so much for the honor and glory of the country. "From New York and Albany he received the freedom of the City in a gold box. Philadelphia presented him with an elegant service of plate; Congress voted him a Gold Medal, and $50,000 as Prize Money for his officers and crew. This was the fourth brilliant victory over the British won by the American Navy in the space of five months. These achievements of the Navy were the bright spots in that War. Again the press and people of England were raving over the successive victories of the Americans on the water. One of the leading London journals gave vent to its feelings in a most vulgar fashion, by "expressing" its apprehension that England might be stripped of her maritime supremacy, by a piece of striped bunting, flying at the masthead of a few fir built frigates manned by a handful of bastards and outlaws." Due allowance must be made for the haughty and arrogant Britons. It was a bitter pill for them to swallow, that any other nation in a fair fight and evenly matched, could whip them on the sea. In 1830 the "Constitution," then thirty-three years old, was lying at Charlestown Navy Yard. The United States Navy Department, thinking her usefulness at an end, and taking no account of the sentiment that gathered around that famous hull, condemned her to be broken up and her remains consigned to the junk pile. Our Boston poet, Oliver Wendell Holmes was then a student at Harvard, of barely legal voting age.

He read the account of this proposed action and it fired his imagination and indignation, and he rapidly wrote with a pencil on a scrap of paper the stanzas now so familiar to every school boy, and sent them to a Boston

newspaper, that published them. In a few days they had been reprinted in scores of papers all over the land and a storm of protest was aroused against the destruction of the old frigate. The result was that the order was rescinded and money appropriated for her repair and preservation. The young patriotic, poet-student became famous, and in later years became more admired and appreciated for his many gifts to American literature. The old frigate still floats and we hope may be viewed with patriotic pride by future generations:

"Aye, tear her tattered Ensign down!
Long has it waved on high!
And many an eye has danced to see,
That banner in the sky.
Beneath it, rang the battle shout!
And burst the cannons' roar
The meteor of the ocean air,
Shall sweep the clouds no more!
Nail to the mast that holy flag,
Set every threadbare sail,
And give her to the God of Storms,
The lightning and the gale!

Holmes."

While the Constitution was doing such grand work, other naval vessels were demonstrating the seamanship, skill and fighting qualities of the American sailor, and his ability to cope with any foe on the ocean.

On October 18, the American sloop of war "Wasp," Captain Jones, captured the British brig "Frolic," after a sharp engagement of forty-five minutes, off the coast of North Carolina. The slaughter on the "Frolic" was terrific. Ninety were killed and wounded, while only ten were killed and disabled on the "Wasp." But her victory was of short duration for that very afternoon the British 74-gun ship, the "Poicters," Captain Beresford, appeared, and two hours after the gallant Jones had gained his triumph, he was compelled to surrender his prize and his own ship to another of superior force. Jones was honored for his bravery by public entertainments and Congress gave hi ma gold medal.

A week later the frigate "United States," Captain Stephen Decatur, of the squadron of Commodore Rodgers, while cruising off the Canary Islands, gained a great naval victory

after a fight of two hours. He captured the British frigate "Macedonian," 38 guns, Captain Carden. After a long distance cannonade of half an hour, they came into close contact and here the Americans displayed splendid gunnery, for which, indeed, they have ever been noted. The mizzen mast of the "Macedonian" was first to go overboard, then the main yard was hanging in two pieces, her fore mast was tottering, and her main mast and bowsprit badly bruised, while the "United States" was practically unhurt. The "Macedonian" was so badly crippled that she was obliged to surrender. She received one hundred round of shot in her hull, and many between wind and water. Captain Decatur rigged her as a barque, put a prize crew on board and with his own ship and Captain Carden, sailed for New York, reaching that port January 1, 1813, where she was welcomed as a New Year's gift.

As one of the New York papers of that day said: "She comes with the compliments of the season from Old Neptune." Decatur received similar honors to those which had been bestowed on Hull and Bainbridge.

Captain Porter made a memorable voyage on the "Essex." Sailing southward he crossed the equator December 11, 1812, and the next day captured his first prize, the British packet ship "Norton," with $35,000 in specie on board. He sailed around Cape Horn into the Pacific Ocean with the intention of capturing the English whalers there, and to live on the enemy. He seized twelve British whaleships, with an aggregate of 302 men and 107 guns.

In Valparaiso harbor he met with disaster. He had made a consort of one of his prize vessels and called her the "Essex, Jr.," and these two vessels were blockaded by two British men-of-war.

Porter resolved to run the blockade. While seeking for shelter in a bay, Porter's vessel having been damaged in a gale, was attacked by two British war vessels, the "Phebe" and the "Cherub," and a desperate and sanguinary battle followed. Says Lossing, "When at last the "Essex" was a helpless wreck and on fire, and her magazine was threatened, when every officer, but one, was slain or disabled, when, of the two hundred and twenty-five brave men who went into the fight on board of her, only seventy-five effective ones remained Porter hauled down his flag. So ended the brilliant cruise of the "Essex." Her gallant commander wrote to the

Secretary of War: "We have been unfortunate, but not disgraced." Porter was publicly honored as the "Hero of the Pacific."

On the 18th of February, 1813, the U. S. Sloop of War "Hornet," Commander James Lawrence, fell in with the British brig "Peacock," 18 guns, Captain Peake, off the mouth of the Demerapa river. After a sharp fight of fifteen minutes, the "Peacock" struck her colors and ran up a flag of distress. Before all the wounded could be taken from her she went to the bottom of the sea. Lawrence's exploit created a profound impression. A Halifax newspaper said: "It will not do for our vessels to fight them single-handed. The Americans are a dead nip." Great honors were showered upon Lawrence, but that which he most highly prized, was a public letter of thanks given to him by the officers of the "Peacock" for his kind and generous treatment of them. Lawrence afterwards lost his life while in command of the "Chesapeake," in an engagement with the "Shannon," off Boston Harbor, in which the British were victorious. "As he left the deck he said: "Tell the men to fire faster and not give up the ship. Fight her till she sinks." The words of the dying hero, "Don't give up the ship," became a battle-cry of the Americans.

Commodore Rodgers had a remarkable cruise in the "President," 44 guns. While off the Azores, he fell in with the British armed schooner "Highflyer," the tender to Admiral Warren's flagship, "San Domingo." "The Highflyer" was commanded by Lieutenant Hutchinson, one of Admiral Cockburn's subalterns, when that Admiral plundered and burned Havre de Grace, the home of Rodgers. By a clever ruse, Rodgers got the "Highflyer" alongside of the "President" and captured her without firing a gun. Before leaving Boston he attained some British signal books and made use of them with good effect. Rodgers raised the British Ensign, sent one of his lieutenants on board the "Highflyer," dressed in the British naval uniform, with an order to send his signal books on board the "Sea Horse" to be altered. Hutchinson obeyed, and Rodgers was put in possession of the whole correspondence of the British Navy. Lieut. Hutchinson soon after came on board and told Rodgers that the main object of the British Naval Chief was to capture or destroy the "President," which had spread alarm in British waters. "Sir," said Rodgers, "do you know

what vessel you are on board of?" "Why, yes, sir; His Majesty's Ship "Sea Horse." "Then, sir," said Rodgers, "you labor under a mistake. You are on board the 'President,' and I am Commodore Rodgers." At that moment the band struck up "Yankee Doodle," the American Ensign was displayed, and uniforms were suddenly changed from red to blue. Rodgers carried his prize into Newport. He captured eleven merchant vessels and three hundred prisoners. He made another cruise southward in 1814, with varying fortunes. On his return he dashed through a British blockading squadron off Sandy Hook and sailed into New York harbor.

Early in June, 1814, British naval vessels received orders from Admiral Cockburn, "to destroy the seaport towns and devastate the country." In July, Sir Thomas Hardy sailed from Halifax with a considerable force for service on sea and land. A large portion of the coast of Maine passed under British rule. An attack on Boston was momentarily expected. The city was almost defenceless. Its capture would have been a rich prize and would have had a great moral effect upon the enemy. The inhabitants of all classes turned out with implements of labor to build a fort on Noddles Island (East Boston). It was built on an elevation, on the crown of the present Webster Street, near Belmont Square, and a heavy battery was placed across the bay on the far famed Dorchester Heights. When the British blockading squadron learned of these preparations and the enthusiasm of the people, they decided not to attack Boston. The vandalism of Admiral Cockburn and General Ross is a black and infamous page in English history. "Willingly," said the London Statesman, "would we throw a veil of oblivion over our transactions at Washington. The Cossacks spared Paris; we spared not the Capital of America." While the people of England loudly condemned the act, the British Government caused the Tower guns to be fired in honor of Ross' victory; and on his death a few weeks later, his government decreed him a monument in Westminster Abbey.

While the National vessels were winning victories, the privateers were making prizes in every direction. They swarmed on the sea in the summer and autumn of 1812. "Accounts of their expoits filled the newspapers and helped to swell the tide of joy throughout the Union. It is esti-

mated that during the year 1812, more than fifty armed British vessels and two hundred and fifty merchantmen, with an aggregate of more than three thousand prisoners, and a vast amount of booty, were captured by the Americans."

Not only was the conflict raging on the ocean, but there was great activity and great victories on the Lakes. Isaac Chauncey, one of America's best naval officers, was busy on Lake Ontario in 1813. With his fleet of war schooners, he co-operated with the brave General Pike in the capture of York, now Toronto.

Later with Commodore Perry and General Winfield Scott he assisted in the capture of Fort George, and the Niagara frontier passed into the possession of the Americans. Sackett's Harbor was the chief depot for the military and naval stores of the Americans on that frontier. When the British learned that the place was in a comparatively defenceless condition, by reason of the force sent to capture York, a British squadron, under Sir James Yee, sailed from Kingston to capture Sackett's Harbor. On June 28, six British armed vessels and forty batteaux appeared off Sackett's Harbor, bearing over a thousand land troops, the whole armament under Commander Sir George Prevost.

The appearance of the American flotilla caused the British naval officer to swerve from his purpose for a while, but perceiving the real weakness of the enemy, he again turned the prows of his squadron toward Sackett's Harbor. A heavy gun from the American fort commenced firing upon the British and at the same time a dense smoke arose in the rear of the American troops. The storehouses had been set on fire to prevent their falling into the hands of the British, which turned the fortunes of the day in favor of the Americans, for Sir George Prevost, saw the militia being rallied and concluded they were reinforcements, and he sounded a retreat. Sackett's Harbor was never afterward attacked and continued to be the chief basis of supplies for the frontier for the remainder of the War. The great batte on the Lakes was fought by Commodore Perry on Lake Erie on the 10th of September 1813.

In March, 1813, Perry went to Presque Isle (now Erie, Pa.) to hasten the construction of a little navy and four vessels were built there and at Buffalo, five merchant vessels had been fashioned into warriors. Early in July, this little fleet of nine vessels were all ready. Perry named his

flagship the "Lawrence," in compliment to the gallant commander of the "Chesapeake," who gave his life to his country in that memorable fight with the "Shannon."

But Perry had to wait several weeks for men and supplies, and chafed at this enforced idleness, while out on the lake, a British squadron under command of Commodore Barclay, was cruising, awaiting the approach of the "Americans." Perry was to co-operate with General Harrison, who was in command of the American land forces, and on the 17th of August, while off Sandusky Bay, he fired his signal gun. While waiting for General Harrison, to get his troops to move, Perry cruised about the lake. For a few days he was anchored in Put-in Bay. "The 10th of September was a bright and beautiful morning; the watching sentinel on the main top of the 'Lawrence' cried 'Sail-Ho!' The 'Lawrence' at once signalled to the rest of the fleet: 'Enemy in sight! Get under way!' and the boatswain responded 'All hands up anchor Ahoy!'" Perry's nine vessels were the "Lawrence" 20 guns; "Niagara," 20; "Caledonia" 3; Schooners "Arid" 4, "Scorpion" 2 and two swivels, "Tigris" 1, "Porcupine" 1 and Sloop "Trippe" 1; in all 54 carriage guns and two swivels. Barclay's fleet consisted of the "Detroit," "Queen Charlotte," "Lady Purcel," "Hunter," "Little Belt" and "Chippewa" carrying 64 carriage guns, 2 swivels and 4 howitzers. The fleets slowly approached each other and commenced firing at each other at long range, the first shot being fired by the "Scorpion," commanded by young Champlin, then less than twenty-four years of age. As the fleets rapidly approached each other, the battle waxed fiercer and fiercer. The "Lawrence" bore the brunt of the battle with twice her force, her rigging was all shot away, her sails in shreds, her mast in splinters and her guns dismounted. Only one mast remained and from it proudly floated the "Stars and Stripes." All the other vessels were fighting gallantly, excepting the "Niagara," which had been lagging behind. Perry determined to fly to her, renew the fight and win a victory. So strong was his faith in his success, he put on the uniform of his rank, that he might properly receive the sword of Barclay. Then taking down his pennant and his banner with the stirring words, "Don't give up the ship," he entered a boat and started on his perilous voyage.

He stood upright in the boat, with the pennant and ban-

Commodore Perry at the Battle of Lake Erie

ner partially wrapped around him, a conspicuous mark for the guns of the enemy. Barclay knew that if Perry should reach the staunch "Niagara," the British would be in danger, so he ordered all the big and little guns of his fleet to play upon the boat which carried the young hero. The oars were splintered, bullets traversed sides of the boat and the oarsmen were covered with spray from the round and grape shot falling in the water around them.

With his pennant floating over the "Niagara," he dashed through the British line, and in eight minutes the British flagship hauled down her colors, and all but two of the fleet surrendered. These were pursued and brought back by the gallant young Champlin. He fired the first gun in the conflict and the last one in securing the conquered vessels. It was a most complete victory."

Perry sat down and wrote with his pencil on the back of a letter, this famous dispatch to General Harrison: "We have met the Enemy and they are ours. Yours with great respect, O. H. Perry." The news of this victory carried joy to the hearts of Americans. The lakes had echoed the triumphs of the ocean. The name of Perry in naval annals was made immortal. The government in the name of the people, thanked him, and gave him and Eliott, each a Gold Medal, and a Silver Medal to each man who took part in the battle. The American loss was 27 killed, and 96 wounded. The British lost 200 killed and wounded and 600 made prisoners. Perry's humane conduct toward the wounded Commander of the British fleet was such that Barclay declared it was sufficient to immortalize him."

Another battle on the Lakes was fought by Commodore Macdonough on Lake Champlain. The British Naval force under Commodore Downie, consisted of the Frigate Confidence, one brig two sloops and twelve gunboats, and they came around Cumberland Head, with a fair wind, where they were to assist the land forces in a combined attack on the Americans. Macdonough's flagship was the "Saratoga," and he had also, one brig, two schooners and ten gunboats or galleys. Macdonough, then thirty-one years of age, had skilfully prepared his forces to meet the enemy. When his vessels were cleared for action, he knelt upon the deck of the "Saratoga" "near one of her heaviest guns, and with his chief officers around him, implored the aid of the Almighty. Then the sharp naval conflict began. At

the outset a shot from a British vessel demolished a hen coop on board the "Saratoga," when a young game cock, which the sailors had brought from the shore, released from confinement and startled by the sound of the great guns, flew upon a gun slide, and flapping his wings, crowed lustily and defiantly.

The incident was regarded by the sailors as ominous of victory and their courage was strengthened. The battle lasted two hours and twenty minutes and was won by the Americans. In his report of the fight, Macdonough wrote: "There was not a mast in either squadron that could stand to make a sail on." Our masts, yards, and sails were so shattered," wrote a British Officer, "that one looked like so many bundles of matches, and the other like so many bundles of rags." The fight was witnessed by hundreds of spectators on the Vermont shore and is said to have been a sublime sight. The British Commodore, Downie, was killed, and his remains were buried at Plattsburg. The loss of the Americans was 110; that of the British was over two hundred. In his "History of the Naval Exploits of the War of 1812," J. Fennimore Cooper, says:

"The Navy came out of the struggle with a vast increase in reputation. The brilliant style in which the ships had been carried into action, the steadiness and rapidity with which they handled, and the fatal accuracy of their fire, on nearly every occasion, produced a new era in naval warfare. It is not easy to say in which nation this unlooked for result created the most surprise. The ablest and wisest captain of the English fleet was ready to admit, that a new power was about to appear on the ocean and that it was not improbable that the battle for the mastery of the seas would have to be fought over again." The triumph of the American were themes for oratory, toast and song. The following ode to "The American Tar" was very popular at the close of the war:

"The Goddess of Freedom, borne down by oppression,
In Europe's famed regions no longer found rest;
She wept at the heart-rending wide desolation,
And languishing looked for relief from the West.
She heard that Columbia was rearing a temple,
Where she would be worshipped in peace and in war.
Old Neptune confirmed it, cried, 'Here is a sample,'
Presenting with pride 'An American Tar.'"

Daniel Webster and His Home in Boston

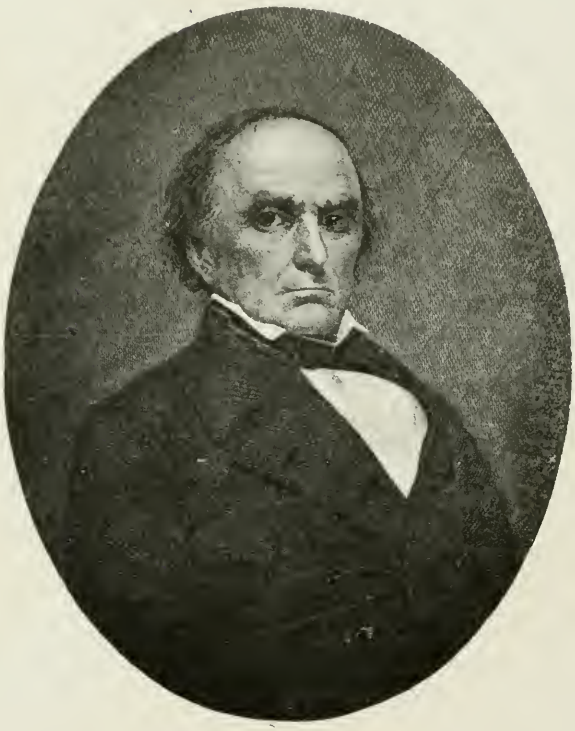
Mr. Webster's first residence in Boston was at 57 Mt. Vernon Street and from there he removed to Somerset Street. That site is now covered by the Suffolk County Court House, Pemberton Square. The cut represents his last home in Boston, on the corner of Summer and High Streets, as it looked in 1825. After Mr. Webster acquired national fame he sold his residence in Boston and purchased a country home in Marshfield and resided there until his death. When he visited Boston he stopped at either the Revere or Tremont House.

Bostonians of this generation and strangers visiting Boston, and walking down Summer Street to the South Terminal, cannot imagine that this busy mart of trade was once a quiet and aristocratic residential quarter of the city. Massive elm trees lined the street on either side, their long branches making a green arch overhead, affording a grateful shade in the hot summer days. The houses were of brick, large and stately and set well back from the sidewalk, and nearly every estate had a beautiful garden. This house of Webster's gives a fair idea of the prevailing style of residence of that period.

A writer in the Boston Post says: "Owners of the houses on Summer Street supplied their guests with cider made from apples grown in their gardens. Peaches and pears were grown in profusion and the pears of Samuel T. Gardner excelled any grown today." In this house on Summer Street, Webster received the distinguished Frenchman, Marquis De Lafayette, when he visited America in 1824-25, and who came to Boston to be present at the laying of the corner stone of Bunker Hill Monument, at the celebration of the fiftieth anniversary of the battle of Bunker Hill. It was feared that Lafayette would not be present on that occasion, and there was great delight in the hearts of the people when he presented himself at the State House the day before the celebration. He was met by the Governor, members of the Legislature and City

Officials, who gave him a heartfelt welcome and in reply to their addresses, said that "Bunker Hill had been the pole star upon which his eyes had been fixed."

While in Boston, he was the guest of Senator Lloyd in Pemberton Square. The Chief Marshal that day of the parade was General Lyman, and at the head of the proces-



Daniel Webster

sion were two hundred officers and soldiers of the Revolution and forty veterans who had taken part in the battle of Bunker Hill. Some of them wore the same cartridge boxes they used on that memorable 17th of June, and one old veteran carried the same drum that he had beat in that fight. Mayor Josiah Quincy was Master of Ceremonies, and he introduced the survivors of the battle to Lafayette,

and to that sympathetic Frenchman it must have been a memorable occasion. His carriage was drawn by six white horses. It was a long procession, for we are told that the head of the procession reached the monument before the rear had left the Common. A cane made from one of the timbers that covered the monument was presented to the gallant Frenchman, who, at the age of 19, offered his services and risked his life to help the Colonies in their fight against

Daniel Webster's Home, Corner Summer and High Streets

oppression. Lafayette laid the cornerstone according to Masonic ritual. He occupied a front seat on the platform in the ampitheatre on the northeast side of the hill where the addresses were made; the survivors of the battle were behind him, and he was the last surviving Major General of the Revolutionary Army. The prayer was made by Dr. Dexter, who was in the battle, and Daniel Webster followed with one of his wonderful orations, in which he paid Lafayette the following beautiful tribute: "With what measure of devotion will you not thank God for the circumstances of your extraordinary life! You are connected

with both hemispheres and with two generations. Heaven saw fit to ordain that the electric spark of liberty should be conducted through you from the New World to the Old, and we, who are now here, in this day of patriotism, have all of us long ago received it in charge from our fathers to cherish your name and your virtues. You see the outlines of the little redoubt thrown up through the incredible diligence of Prescott, and defended to the last extremity by his lion-hearted valor and within which, the corner stone of our monument has now taken position. You see where Warren fell and where Parker, Gardner, McCleary, Moore and other sturdy patriots fell with him. Those who survived that day, and whose lives have been prolonged to the present hour are now around you. Behold, they now stretch forth their feeble arms to embrace you. Behold they raise their trembling voices to invoke the blessing of God on you, and yours forever."

At the banquet immediately following the addresses, Lafayette proposed his well known toast. His words were: "Bunker Hill, and that holy resistance to oppression, which has already enfranchised the American hemisphere. The anniversary toast at the jubilee of the next half century will be, to Europe freed." Daniel Webster gave Lafayette a grand reception at his Summer Street home. There were so many invited guests that a door was cut into the adjoining house of Israel Thorndike to accommodate them. "The General also attended a Reception at the house of Mr. R. C. Derby, and was there introduced to a lady with whom he had danced a minuet forty-seven years before." There was an arch built across Washington Street with an inscription, the last two lines of which were:

"We bow not the neck, and we bend not the knee;
But our hearts, Lafayette, we surrender to thee."

In Medford he was the guest of Governor Brooks, and an arch over the meeting house in that town had on it these words: "General Lafayette. Welcome to our Hills and Brooks."

Webster had a fine garden in the rear of his Summer Street home, and here we love to picture him, seated in a comfortable chair in the summer twilight, surrounded by

his family and neighbors in social conversation. From his front windows he could look over to the New South Church on Church Green, corner of Summer and Bedford Streets. Fifty years later it was torn down to give place to a mercantile block. There are many old residents who remember the Summer Street of 1850 to 1860, the old mansions, the trees and the flowers, the square granite tower of Trinity, the Mariner's Church on the corner of Summer and Federal Streets, the site of the Brown Building, 185 Summer Street. Not a single building now remains on Summer Street of all those which Webster saw in his daily walks to and from his law office on Court Street. Only one building remains of those that were there in 1860, and that is the one occupied by the firm of C. F. Hovey & Co., which came unscathed through the terrible conflagration of 1872.

And Webster, that man of commanding presence and mighty intellect has passed on and joined the great Army of the Immortals. He had his prayer answered and did not live to see the land he loved "drenched in fraternal blood." There are still a few living who saw Webster and heard him speak. His massive frame, his deep set eyes and craggy brow, attracted immediate attention and bespoke at once the greatness of the man. His duty as one of the Commissioners of the United States to settle the North Eastern boundary, called him to England, and he created a profound impression whenever and wherever he appeared on the streets of London.

Sydney Smith exclaimed when he first saw Webster, "Good heavens, he is a small cathedral by himself." It was common to speak of him as the "God-like Daniel," so majestic and noble was his physique and intellect. Among American orators and statesmen he stands without a peer. He stood in the highest rank as a Constitutional lawyer and won some great and notable cases.

His next great effort, after the oration on Bunker Hill was his eulogy on Adams and Jefferson, which was pronounced in Faneuil Hall, at the request of the City of Boston. He said in part: "No two men now live, fellow citizens, perhaps it may be doubted whether any two men have ever lived in any age, who, more than these we now commemorate, have impressed upon mankind their own sentiments in regard to politics and government, infused their

own opinions more deeply into the opinions of others, or given a more lasting direction to the current of human thought. Their work shall not perish with them. The tree which they assisted to plant will flourish, although they water and protect it no longer, for it has struck its roots deep, it has sent them to the very centre; no storm, but of storm to burst the orb, can overturn it; its branches spread wide; they stretch their protecting arms broader and broader, and its top is destined to reach the heavens. Marble columns may, indeed, crumble into dust, time may erase all impress from the crumbling stone, but their fame remains, for with American liberty, it rose, and with American liberty, only, can it perish. Their bodies are buried in peace, but their names live evermore." This eulogy contained the "supposed speech of John Adams," so often declaimed in the public schools. George Ticknor, who heard Webster's eulogy said: "His bearing as he stood before that vast multitude was that of absolute dignity and power."

In 1827 Webster was advanced to the United States Senate. In 1830 he made his memorable reply to Senator Hayne of South Carolina, who affirmed the right of a State to nullify an Act of Congress, and Senator Hayne made a violent attack on Massachusetts, indulging in offensive personalities. This speech is considered as Webster's masterpiece and a defence of the Constitution and the integrity of the Union. "It occupied four hours and was practically extemporaneous.' "It was Tuesday, January 26, 1830, a day to be hereafter forever memorable in Senatorial annals, that the Senate resumed the consideration of Foote's Resolution. There was never before, in the city an occasion of so much excitement. To witness this great intellectual contest, multitudes of strangers had, for two or three days previous, been rushing into the city, and the hotels overflowed. As early as nine of this morning, crowds poured into the Capitol in hot haste; at twelve o'clock, the hour of meeting the Senate Chamber, its gallery, floor and even lobbies, were filled to their utmost capacity. Mr. Webster rose and addressed the Senate. His exordium is known by heart everywhere. As he spoke every head was inclined closer towards him, every ear turned in the direction of his voice, and that deep, sudden, mysterious silence followed, which always attends fullness of emotion. From the sea of upturned faces before him, the orator beheld his thoughts, reflected as from a mirror. Ah, who can ever forget, that was

present to hear, the tremendous, the awful burst of eloquence with which the orator spoke of Massachusetts: "There she is, behold her and judge for yourselves! There is her history; the world knows it by heart. The Past, at least, is secure. There is Boston and Concord, and Lexington and Bunker Hill and there they will remain forever! The bones of her sons, fallen in the great struggle for independence, now lie mingled with the soil of every state, from New England to Georgia; and there they will lie forever."

There was scarcely a dry eye in the Senate; all hearts were overcome. Grave judges and men grown old in dignified life turned aside their heads to conceal the evidences of their emotion.

Webster was the son of a Revolutionary soldier of the Granite State; he knew personally many of the veterans of the War for Independence; he was their firm friend and defender on all occasions. He stirred all hearts by his fervid patriotism, and the people felt for him the same veneration as they did for the Fathers of the Republic. Whenever a day of trial came to the nation there was felt the steadying control of his gigantic arm."

James Russell Lowell tells a story of Webster which illustrates the power of his presence. "It was at a time in Massachusetts when it was proposed to break up the Whig Party. Webster came home to Faneuil Hall to protest, and four thousand Whigs came out to meet him. He lifted up his majestic presence before that sea of human faces, his brow charged with thunder, and said: "Gentlemen, I am a Whig; a Massachusetts Whig; a Revolutionary Whig; a Constitutional Whig; a Faneuil Hall Whig; and if you break up the Whig party where am I to go?" "And," says Lowell, "we all held our breath, thinking where he could go." "But," says Lowell, "if he had been five feet three, we should have said, "Confound you, who do you suppose cares where you go?"

Webster's two sons laid down their lives in the service of their country. Captain Edward Webster died in 1848 in the Mexican War. Colonel Fletcher Webster, commanding the 12th Massachusetts Volunteers, was killed in the second battle of Bull Run, August 30, 1862.

Webster cherished the hope of being nominated by the Whigs for the Presidency in 1852, but received only 30

votes in the Convention. Deeply disappointed he retired to his estate at Marshfield where he died October 24, 1852. His last words, "I still live," have assumed a symbolical importance.

On the northwest corner of Summer and High Streets, there is a tablet bearing this inscription

The Home of

DANIEL WEBSTER.

Hon. Rufus Choate

Rufus Choate's House, Otis Street

The Visit of Lafayette to America in 1824-25

The noble service rendered by the Marquis De Lafayette in the war of Independence, placed our nation under an everlasting debt of gratitude to that noble Frenchman.—"The story of the wrongs of America, and the struggle of the colonists for their rights, inflamed his young heart with ardent sympathy and a passionate desire to help them." At the age of nineteen, he had married the daughter of the Duke de Noailles, a beautiful, accomplished, and rich maiden. He openly espoused the cause of the colonists and resolved to hasten to their support. Offering his services to the American Commissioners in Paris, he said: "Hitherto I have only cherished your cause; now I am going to support it." The young queen, Marie Antoinette, cheered him with her good wishes. King Louis expressed his disapprobation, for he hated republicans. Lafayette's young wife bade him go, for the sympathies of her heart were in unison with his. He sailed for America in a ship fitted out at his own expense, accompanied by eleven French and Polish officers, who sought employment in the American army. Among these was the Baron DeKalb and Count Pulaski. Kosciusko had joined the patriots a year previous and was highly esteemed as an Engineer. Lafayette and his friends arrived at Georgetown, South Carolina, whence they proceeded overland to Philadelphia. He offered his services to Congress as a volunteer, in any capacity, and without pay. These terms were so different from the other foreign officers, that Congress accepted them, and on the last day of July, commissioned him a Major General in the Continental Army. As such he was introduced to Washington at a dinner party in Philadelphia, when the latter "invited the young general to become a member of his military family, which Lafayette accepted." The young and gallant Frenchman cherished a deep and ardent affection for Washington, who, in turn, loved him and treated him as a son.

In 1779 Lafayette visited France, where he performed most important services for the American cause, by induc-

ing King Louis to order a French Army to America, under the command of Count Rochambeau, to assist the republicans in their struggle. He had been received in France on

The Marquis De Lafayette

his return home, early in the year, with intense enthusiasm, for his fame as a soldier was universally known. His personal magnetism was wonderful. Whenever he appeared on the streets crowds followed him. When his name was

mentioned in the theatres, it was greeted with wildest applause. His persuasions at court were irresistible.

Old Count Maurepas, who was at the head of the French Ministry, said: "It is fortunate for the King that Lafayette did not take it into his head to strip Versailles of its furniture, to send to his dear America, as his majesty would have been unable to refuse it." The gallant service of that other Frenchman, Count Rochambeau, at Yorktown, the closing battle of the Revolution, can never be forgotten.

To accomplish that victory, the French provided thirty-seven ships of the line, and seven thousand men.

The visit of Lafayette to the land he helped to redeem, was one of the most important national events in the nineteenth century. Lafayette, at this time, was sixty-seven years of age and travelled nearly five thousand miles, in order to lay the cornerstone of Bunker Hill Monument, on the occasion of the Fiftieth Anniversary of the battle of Bunker Hill. Congress, by a public act, had invited him to be the nation's guest. On the 15th of August, 1824, he arrived in New York. The great heart of the country, that longed for his presence, was thrilled when the announcement was made known. Wherever the post coaches, in their slow circuits, carried the news, the people came together, and rang out their welcome to the companion of Washington. It recalled to their memories, souvenirs of seventy-six, and crippled men through twenty-four States, going about on wooden legs or crutches, felt the tears rush unbidden to their eyes, at the mention of Lafayette's name. His companions in battle were scattered all over the bosom of the Republic, and when boys and girls and young men, who did not remember him—although they had read of what he had done,—saw these scarred relics of the great Army of Independence, thep caught the fire, and it blazed from the Atlantic to the last verge of our homes on the Western frontier.

THE RECEPTION

He stood in the City Hall in New York, and all who could come, pressed from all quarters to do him reverence. The great cities sent their delegates in haste, and a sight was witnessed in that Hall, such as was never before seen in the history of nations. All the passage ways were thronged,

and when Lafayette appeaed on the balcony, he looked upon an ocean of faces, and into eyes dimmed with tears of love, pride and sympathy.

HIS TRIUMPHAL PROGRESS.

In a few days the guest of the nation left New York on a tour through the country. He went to Connecticut, Rhode Island, Boston, and as far east as Portsmouth, New Hampshire, and everywhere the great masses of the people, came forth to greet him, while from forts and arsenals, great guns thundered the glad salute, which was due to his supreme rank in the American army. On his return to New York, the city gave him a grand fete at Castle Garden. Wherever he went, his journey was one grand triumphal march. He returned to Washington. Congress was in session and voted him a sum of money, $200,000, and a township of land, which he located in Florida. He went on to North Carolina, South Carolina, Mississippi, and Louisiana. He came back through Kentucky, Ohio, Pennsylvania and New York, and thence to Boston, where he arrived in time to participate in the imposing ceremonies of laying the cornerstone of Bunker Hill Monument. Lafayette was careful to remember all his old friends.

"Colonel Neville was Lafayette's aid when he served in our army; and when Lafayette sent to France for arms and equipments, Neville, who was then a rich Virginia planter, raised money and sent for the equipment of a whole regiment. He was on very friendly terms with Lafayette, who knew his wife and family. On his visit to America he inquired them out, and visited them in Cincinnati. He asked Mrs. Neville if her husband had been reimbursed for his outlays. She told him no, and that there was still a mortgage of many thousand dollars on their property. After Lafayette had left Cincinnati, she found all her mortgages had been paid off, but he never spoke of it or alluded to it. The widow's property, however, was clear and unencumbered."

"When he was in his carriage on the day of the parade in honor of the laying of the cornerstone of the monument, he asked one of the gentlemen in the carriage with him where Mrs. Hancock was, and ascertained that she was residing in a not particularly fashionable quarter, she having moved from her home on Beacon Hill after the death of

Governor Hancock. She was at the time of Lafayette's visit, Mrs. Scott, having married again. Lafayette was informed, that she would probably witness the parade, from the window of a house on Tremont Street, opposite the Common, the home of a friend. He begged they would be on the lookout for her and let him know if she was there, and if so, stop the carriage at that point. The surmise proved to be correct, and Mrs. Scott was there watching for the approach of Lafayette, and she was pointed out to him. Motioning the driver to stop, he rose from his seat, removed his chapeau, and placing his hand on his heart, made a profound bow, afterwards kissing his hand to her. She was delighted and thought it wonderful that he should have recognized her, and bursting into tears, said, "I have lived long enough."

Another pleasing incident of that same parade, is told. His carriage stopped in front of the site of the Old Liberty Tree, on the corner of Wshington and Essex Streets. A young girl, with a red, white and blue sash across her shoulders, came down the steps of the Lafayette Hotel, opposite, bearing on a silver salver, two goblets and a bottle of old wine from France. Lafayette drank the wine she gave him, with great gallantry. Later, in speaking of the Liberty Tree, he said, "The world should never forget where once stood the Liberty Tree, so famous in your annals."

On his return to Washington, one of his last acts was to bend his steps to Mount Vernon, where he gave the tribute of his tears to the Man of all ages. In Lossing's Home of Washington, we have a very touching account of this visit of the General to Mount Vernon, the home of his dear friend. "For more than 25 years, the mortal remains of that friend had been lying in the tomb, yet the memory of his love was as fresh in the heart of the Marquis, as when on November, 1784, they parted, to see each other no more on earth. On this occasion Lafayette was presented with a most touching memorial of the man he delighted to call father. The adopted son of that father, the late Mr. Custis, with many others, accompanied the Marquis to the tomb of Washington, where the tears of the venerable Frenchman flowed freely. While standing there, Mr. Custis, after appropriate remarks, presented to Lafayette, a massive gold ring containing a lock of Washington's hair. It was a most grateful gift, and those who were present, have spoken

of the occurrence as one of the most interesting and touching they had ever experienced. Lafayette was so overcome by the reception which the Congress of the United States extended to him, by public enactment, as well as by voluntary adoration, that he could no longer sustain the pressure on his heart and feelings. On the day of his

DEPARTURE FROM AMERICA

"The authorities of Washington, Georgetown and Alexandria, the principal officers of the National Government, civil, military and naval, members of Congress and many distinguished strangers, assembled at the White House, the President's Home, to take their final leave of the illustrious guest." He entered the spacious reception room, in silence, leaning on the arm of the Marshal of the District, and on the arm of one of the sons of the President. The President of the United States, John Quincy Adams, advanced with simple and courtly dignity to meet Lafayette, and with deep emotion addressed him. It was a most eloquent and touching oration, worthy of the occasion, and of all who were participants. Among other things Mr. Adams said: "The ship is now prepared for your reception and equipped for sea. From the moment of her departure, the prayers of millions will ascend to heaven, that her passage may be prosperous, and the return to the bosom of your family, as propitious to your happiness, as this visit to the scene of your youthful glory has been to that of the American people. Go, then, our beloved friend, return to the land of brilliant genius, of generous sentiment, of heroic valor, to that beautiful France, the nursing mother of the Twelfth Louis, and the Fourth Henry, to the native soil of Bayard and Coligni, and Turenne, and Calcrat, and D'Aguesseau. In that illustrious list of names which she claims, as of her children, and, with honest pride, holds up to the admiration of other nations, the name of Lafayette has already, for centuries, been enrolled. You are ours by that unshaken sentiment of gratitude for your services, which is a precious portion of our inheritance. Ours, by that tie of love, stronger than death, which has linked your name, for the endless ages of time, with the name of Washington. Speaking in the name of the whole people of the United States, and at loss, only for language to give utterance to that feeling of attachment with which the heart of the na-

tion beats, as the heart of one man, I bid you a reluctant and affectionate farewell!"

General Lafayette made the following reply: "Amidst all my obligations to the general Government, and particularly to you, sir, its respected chief magistrate, I have most thankfully to acknowledge the opportunity given me, at this solemn and painful moment, to present the people of the United States with a parting tribute of profound, inexpressible gratitude. To have been, in the infant and critical days of these States, adopted by them as a favorite son; to have participated in the toils and perils of our unspotted struggle for independence, freedom and equal rights; and in the foundation of the American era, of a new social order, which has already pervaded this, and must, for the dignity and happiness of mankind, successively pervade every part of the other hemisphere; to have received at every stage of the Revolution, and during forty years after that period, from the people of the United States, and their representatives at home and abroad, continued marks of their confidence and kindness, has been the pride, the encouragement, the support of a long and eventful life. In the rapid prosperity and in the insured security of the people; in the practice of good order, the appendage of true freedom, and a national good sense, the final arbiter of all difficulties, I have proudly to recognize a result of the republican principles, for which we have fought, and a glorious demonstration to the most timid and unprejudiced minds, of the superiority over degrading aristocracy or despotism, of popular institutions founded on the plain rights of man, and where the local rights of every section are preserved under a constitutional bond of union. I cordially confirm every one of the sentiments which I have had daily opportunities publicly to utter, from the time when your venerable predecessor, my old brother in arms and friend, transmitted to me the honorable invitation of Congress, to this day, when you, my dear sir, whose friendly connections with me dates from your earliest youth, are going to consign me to the protection, across the Atlantic, of the heroic national flag, on board the splendid ship, the name of which has not been the least flattering and kind among the numberless favors conferred upon me. God bless you, sir, and all who surround us. God bless the American people, each of the States and the Federal Gov-

ernment. Accept this patriotic farewell of an overflowing heart; such will be its last throb when it ceases to beat."

Says one of the annalists of the times: "As the last sentence was pronounced, the General advanced, and while the tears poured down his venerable cheeks again took the President in his arms. He retired a few paces, but overcome by his feelings, again returned, and uttering in broken accents, "God bless you!" fell once more on the neck of Mr. Adams. It was a scene at once, solemn and moving, as the sighs and stealing tears of many who witnessed bore testimony. Having recovered his self-possession, the General stretched out his hands, and was in a momnt surrounded by the greetings of the whole assembly, who pressed upon him, each eager to seize, perhaps for the last time, that beloved hand, which was opened so freely for our aid, when aid was so precious, and which grasped, with firm and undeviating hold, the steel which so bravely helped to achieve our deliverance. The expression which now beamed from the face of this exalted man was of the finest and most touching kind. The hero was lost in the father and the friend: dignity melted into subdued affection, and the friend of Washington, seemed to linger with a mournful delight among the sons of his adopted country. On reaching the bank of the Potomac, near where the Mount Vernon steam vessel was in waiting, all the carriages in the procession, except the General's, wheeled off, and the citizens in them assembled on foot around that of the General. The whole military body then passed him in review, as he stood in the barouche of the President, attended by the Secretaries of State, of the Treasury and of the Navy. After the reunion, the General proceeded to the steam vessel under a salute of artillery, surrounded by as many citizens, all eager to catch the last look, as could press on the large wharf, and at four o'clock this great, and good, and extraordinary man trod for the last time the soil of America, followed by the blessings of every patriotic heart that lived on it. Lafayette sailed for France on the United States Frigate Brandywine, a new vessel whose name commemorated a celebrated battle of the Revolution, in which Lafayette bore a distinguished part.

Lafayette died in Paris, May 20th, 1834, at the age of 77. His end came naturally and beautifully in the quiet of his home, surrounded by a company of loving friends.

THE DEPARTURE OF LAFAYETTE FROM AMERICA.

O, may yon heavenly star conduct you
To that dear land which gave thee birth;
And may the soft and surging billows
Safe land thee on thy parent Earth.

'Tis now he leaves the shores of freemen,
And bids a long and sad farewell.
The "Brandywine" so proud shall bear him
The tale of freemen's glory tell.

O, may he reap the just reward
Which we, as freemen can bestow,
And hearts like ours shall ne'er regret
All honors done to Lafayette.

Now he has gone and left behind
A name which we shall ne'er forget.
The crown which we to him resign
No thorns or thistles shall beset.

And now we take the cordial hand,
Bid him farewell, and with regret.
In yonder world we hope to meet,
Our Washington and Lafayette.

The above verses were written by the late Nehemiah P. Mann of Boston, when only twenty-one years of age. He had the pleasure of seeing Lafayette when he visited America in 1825, and being of Revolutionary descent, Mr. Mann was thoroughly patriotic and joined in the great enthusiasm accorded the distinguished Frenchman.

The Anti-Slavery Struggle and the Abolition Leaders in Massachusetts

A generation before the Civil War, a young New England journalist, William Lloyd Garrison, accepted a position in Baltimore. That city was one of the centres of the domestic slave trade. The scenes which he witnessed there surprised and shocked him and he publicly protested against such a great wrong. For this he was cast into prison, and on the walls of his cell he wrote, with his pencil, the following lines:

"A martyr's crown is richer than a King's.
Think it an honor with thy Lord to bleed,
And glory midst intensest sufferings;
Though beat, imprisoned, put to open shame,
Time shall embalm and glorify thy name!"

In the course of years this prophecy was literally fulfilled in his case. In 1831 Garrison commenced the publication of a paper called the "Liberator," at his printing office on the corner of Congress and Water Streets. A tablet on Hornblower & Weeks' Building marks the spot. While engaged in this work he lodged for a time in the house of Rev. William Collier, No. 30 Federal Street. In a Memorial Poem, James Russell Lowell, thus alludes to this period in Garrison's life:—

"In a small chamber, friendless and unseen,
Toiled o'er his types, one poor unlearned young man.
The place was dark, unfurnitured, and mean,
Yet there the freedom of a race began."

But Garrison was not entirely friendless at that time. John G. Whittier, the poet, who at that time was editing "The Manufacturer," was a fellow lodger at Mr. Collier's, and he became a devoted and life long friend of Garrison. Whittier was present at Park Street Church in 1829 when Garrison

delivered his first Anti-Slavery address. While Whittier was serving in the Legislature in 1835, he witnessed the breaking up of the meeting of the Female Anti-Slavery Society by a mob, and the riot at the office of the Liberator. Theodore Lyman was Mayor at that time and when he heard of the riot he went at once to Garrison's office with officers, and standing

William Lloyd Garrison

on the staircase, held it and kept the mob back. He then went up stairs and persuaded Garrison to escape by the rear passage of the building. Garrison got out of the rear window, and on to a shed hoping to get into Wilson's Lane (now new Devonshire Street). The crowd discovered him, dragged him to a window with the intention of throwing him to the ground,

but they decided not to kill him outright, so a few of the leaders tied a rope around his body and lowered him down a ladder into the hands of the angry mob. They then put the rope around his neck and dragged him in shirt sleeves into State Street in the rear of the Old State House.

The crowd intended to give him a "ducking" in the Frog Pond, and perhaps would have maltreated him more seriously, but at this point he was rescued by the few officers and some of his friends and taken into the rooms of the City in the Old State House. Mayor Lyman then addressed the crowd and told them that the law must be maintained, and if it was necessary he would lay down his life, then and there, to preserve order. Then by order of Mayor Lyman, Sheriff Parkinson took Garrison to Leverett Street Jail in a carriage. The rioters followed the carriage, trying to hold the horses and hung on to the wheels, and tried to pull Garrison out of the window. But the driver had a good pair of horses and applied his long whip vigorously, without partiality on horses and crowd, and distanced his opponents. Meanwhile the Mayor had run ahead on foot and arrived at the jail just before the carriage. The crowd meant mischief, for they had erected a gallows in front of Garrison's door.

It should be stated in this connection that at that time Boston had no organized police force, only a few officers, watchmen or constables, as they were called. It is said that the action of the rioters was witnessed by Wendell Phillips, a young man of high moral character, and of unusual endowments, who then resolved to devote his energies, and his life, if need be, to the abolition of African Slavery in the United States.

In a poem, given at a celebration of Emancipation, Whittier writes of the early days, when he and Garrison were coworkers in the Anti-Slavery Crusade:—

> "Thenceforth our life, a fight became,
> The air we breathed was hot with flame,
> We bore, as Freedom's hope forlorn,
> The private hate, the public scorn."

In the early colonial days, slavery existed in the Province of Massachusetts. Slaves were bought and sold here in 1767. In 1779 there were 2,000 slaves owned and living in Boston, but by the Bill of Rights, passed by the Legislature, October 25, 1781, all slaves in the State were freed and the institution

abolished. William Lloyd Garrison was the founder of the American Anti-Slavery Society in 1832 and its President from 1843 to 1865. The first Anti-Slavery Society in America was formed in Boston, January 6, 1832, in a schoolhouse under the African Baptist Church. Persecution, added to Garrison's strong personality, made him a great moral power and Anti-Slavery Societies multiplied all over the North.

"William Lloyd Garrison hated War no less than Slavery, yet the words, 'I will not equivocate I will not excuse, I will not retreat a single inch and I will be heard,' did not arise from the throat of a cowardly Sentimentalist. He was assailed for his lack of religious orthodoxy; he was dragged through the streets by a mob of gentlemen of standing, but he lived to see the cause he championed stir a nation to its very depths and to see the triumph of moral force."—Uncle Dudley in the Boston Globe.

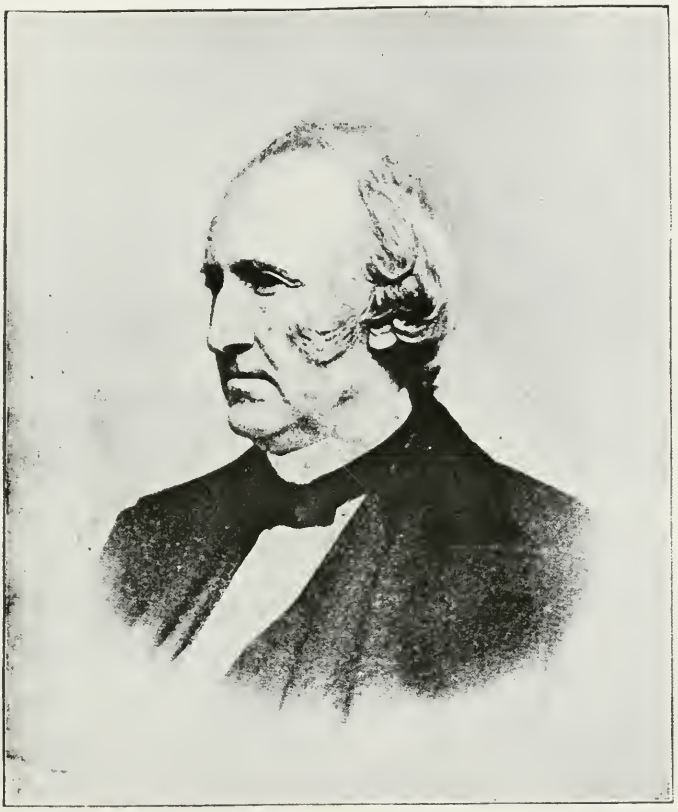
In 1868 Garrison was presented with a generous sum of money as a national tribute to his great efforts in the abolition of slavery. He died in Boston May 24, 1879, in his 75th year. His funeral services which took place on the 28th of May were most impressive and were held in the church at Eliot Square, Roxbury. An eloquent address, commemorative of his life and services, was given by his life-long friend and co-worker, Wendell Phillips, and there were other addresses by Lucy Stone, Theodore P. Weld and the Reverends Samuel May and Samuel Johnson. Appropriate music was furnished by a quartette of colored people.

The decision of Chief Justice Shaw in the case of George Latimer, a fugitive slave, that the Statutes of the United States authorized the owner of the fugitive to arrest him in any State to which he might have fled, roused the Spirit of the Revolution all over the North. The result was the growing sense of the wrong of the Institution of Slavery, and some of the most eloquent and brilliant young men of Boston joined the ranks of the Abolitionists. Foremost among these were Wendell Phillips, Theodore Parker, Dr. Samuel G. Howe, John G. Whittier, Charles Sumner and Richard H. Dana, Jr.

WENDELL PHILLIPS

was the son of John Phillips, the first Mayor of Boston, and was born November 10, 1811, in the house on the corner of Walnut and Beacon Streets, and the house is still standing.

The house which John Phillips built in 1804 at the corner of Beacon and Walnut Streets, was the first one built on Beacon Street under the Copley title, Mr. Phillips having acquired his land from Jeremiah Mason. Mason was one of the Mt. Vernon Proprietors, and had improved a large por-

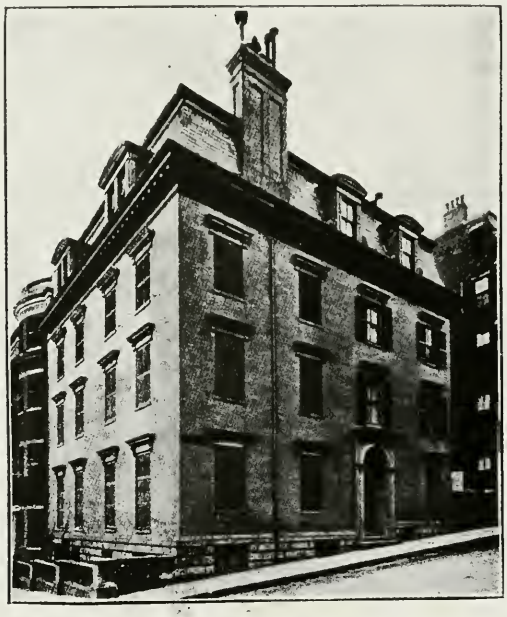


Wendell Phillips

tion of Beacon Hill at the beginning of the nineteenth century. Mr. Phillips occupied the house until his death in 1823, and it was here that his distinguished son, Wendell Phillips, was born in 1811. After Mr. Phillips's death the estate was sold in 1825 by his heirs to Thomas Lindall Win-

throp, Lieutenant-Governor of Massachusetts from 1826 to 1832. About 1861 the Phillips mansion was purchased by Robert M. Mason, who occupied it until his death in 1879. It is now in the possession of his family.

One can form some idea of the size of Boston, in the early years of the nineteenth century, when we state that Mayor Phillips incurred considerable ridicule and chaffing from some

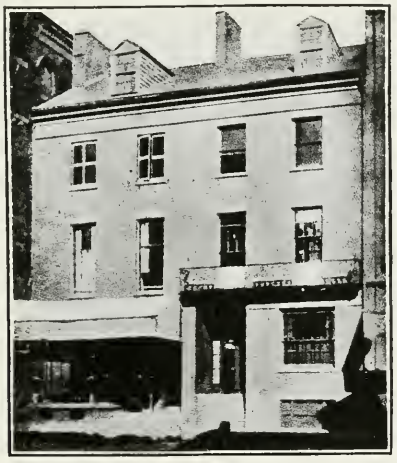


Birthplace of Wendell Phillips, Corner of Beacon and Walnut Streets

of his friends for building his home in so remote a spot, it being generally regarded as quite out of town." His near neighbor was Dr. John Joy, who built a house on the corner of Joy and Beacon Streets. "He was an apothecary, who had his store on the corner of Spring Lane and Washington Street. He was advised by his family physician to take his invalid wife into the country and from the contaminating air of the city, so he removed to Beacon Hill. As a boy, Wendell Phillips saw many a load of hay cut on the Joy estate. It is a "far cry" from the days when that location was out of town,

to the present when business men come daily to Boston from homes as far distant as Worcester, Haverhill and Newburyport."—Boston Post.

Wendell Phillips's attention was early attracted to the Institution of Slavery. "At a public meeting in Faneuil Hall, he was present when Hon. James T. Austin, a former Attorney General of Massachusetts, and a bitter opponent of the Abolitionists, likened slaves to animals, and extolled the mob which killed Owen Lovejoy, the Illinois Abolitionist. Wendell Phillips, a youth of only 18, was present and rose to reply. He had never before spoken in public in Boston, but no one who heard him that day will ever forget the scene or his wonderful speech. It was full of fiery eloquence and of un-



Wendell Phillips' House, Essex Street

answerable logic. From an unknown youth he suddenly sprang into fame as a most gifted orator. He stood in the front rank and at a time when such men as Webster, Choate and Everett were in the zenith of their fame." Phillips was the great and matchless orator of the Anti-Slavery cause. When he became interested in it, he abandoned his chosen profession of the law, as he could not conscientiously subscribe to the Constitution of the United States which then countenanced the Institution of Slavery. In acting as the

champion of the slave, he made a sacrifice of social position and ambitious prospects such as few young men have ever made in any country.

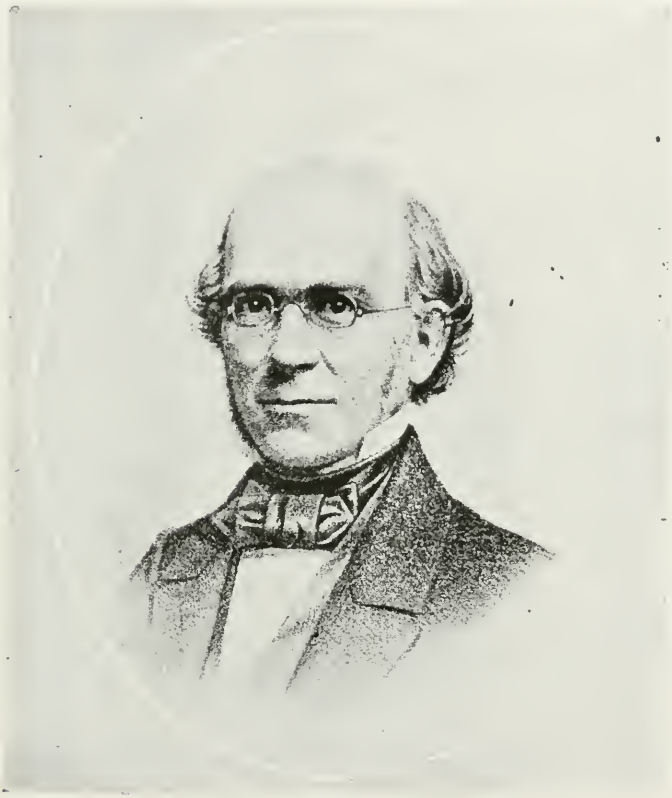
"The averted glances of former friends and their refined cruelty were borne with high hearted cheerfulness." As one has said: "With Phillips, the Abolition Movement was a religion, and no half and half measures were to be tolerated. He opposed every proposal that savored of compromise." He said: "We do not play politics; anti-slavery is no half-way jest with us; it is a terrible earnest struggle with life and death, worse than life or death on the issue." He considered agitation one of the best methods of effecting political reforms. He declared that he had taken Daniel O'Connell as his model in his own work of agitation. He was a great admirer of O'Connell, whom he met when on a visit to England.

"Wendell Phillips was the orator of all others, by the charm of a powerful logic, a wit that played about his theme with the purity and power of the sunbeam, and a command of the English language that showed him familiar with the works of every master. It may be doubted whether America has ever produced his equal as an orator. Only those who had the good fotune to hear him in the decade preceding the Civil War can realize what a power he was in arousing the slumbering conscience of the North, and in forming and moulding public opinion as to the hideous wrong of slavery. He was often hissed and hooted at, and was sometimes when on the platform the target for missiles, but he faced the howling mob with dauntless courage, and with a firmness and a dignity worthy a noble Roman. Thousands of young men flocked to hear him. Some of them came to "scoff," but they were swept away by his logic and his eloquence, and they enrolled themselves under the "Free Soil Banner." He had a most winsome presence and a serene, undisturbed manner which added to the atractiveness of his words, enabling him to speak before great audiences of his enemies. He was president of the American Anti-Slavery Society from 1865 to its dissolution in 1870. He lived to see African slavery abolished in the United States. After his marriage he lived for forty years on the corner of Essex and a narrow thoroughfare since widened by the Extension of Harrison Avenue.

THE REV. THEODORE PARKER

was born in Lexington, August 24, 1810. His grandfather

was Capt. John Parker, the hero of Lexington, who commanded a company of "Minute men on Lexington Common, on that eventful morning of April 19th, 1775." He fired the first shot at the British in that fight and said to his men:—



Rev. Theodore Parker

"Stand your ground. Don't fire unless fired upon, but if they want a war, let it begin here." Theodore Parker's most cherished treasure was his grandfather's musket. His father was a New England farmer and mechanic of good mind, a great reader and a deep thinker. His mother was a woman of fine mind and imagination, and it was to her, that Theo-

dore confided his thoughts and fancies, sure of her help and sympathy. He labored hard on his father's farm in order to go through Harvard College, at first only going there for examinations. He secured his theological education by teaching school and through the benefit of a fund for helping poor students. His first pastorate was at West Roxbury, where his noble, generous nature, and love for humanity, secured for him the affection of his people. For 14 years he preached in Old Music Hall where he drew an audience of 2000 people Sunday after Sunday. He was one of that fearless band of New Englanders who aided escaping fugitive slaves on their way to freedom. One of the cases he aided is worthy of special mention. Two fugitive slaves William Crafts and his wife, had managed to escape to Boston, where they were traced. She traveled in the disguise of a Southern gentleman, and her husband, William, acted as her valet, and in this way they came in safety over 1000 miles. A Boston judge, strong in his belief in property rights, endeavored to find them, that he might send them back to their master. Theodore Parker took them to his home, where he hid them for many days. He stood guard at the door, and besides several fully loaded pistols, he had the beloved musket his grandfather had used at Lexington. He succeeded in getting the Crafts safely off on a ship to England, just as it looked as if they would be captured. "Mr. Parker knew the hiding places of all fugitive slaves in Boston. Upon one occasion a negro had been safely hidden for a year. His wife, on a Southern plantation asked a visitor to try and find him and deliver a message. The gentleman asked several prominent persons in Boston how he could find the man and was finally told that Theodore Parker was the only man who could do this, and sure enough this was the fact, for he went directly among the negroes and asked for the man. The visitor found that they had absolute confidence in Mr. Parker and their adoration for him was touching. In a few hours the man was found, the message was delivered and he was again safely hidden." To crown his work for their cause, it was Theodore Parker who helped largely to raise funds needed by John Brown, in his efforts to liberate the slaves. Mr. Parker did not live to see the consummation of his hopes, the emancipation of the negroes. He died May 10th, 1860, in Florence, Italy, whither he had gone to retain his health. Memorial services in his honor were held in Music Hall, and

there Ralph Waldo Emerson delivered the eulogy on his life and services.

DR. SAMUEL GRIDLEY HOWE

was born in Boston, November 10, 1801, and died in Boston, January 9th, 1876. He graduated at Brown University in 1821. He studied medicine, but did not practice his profession preferring to devote his life to philanthropic movements. He went to Greece and from 1825 to 1827 took an active interest in their struggle for independence, residing in that country for several years. He was subject to arrest in Prussia, for aiding the Polish army. His great heart and soul went out to all classes and races and nations that were struggling to throw off the yoke of oppression, and it was but natural, on his return to America, that he should ally himself with the little band, then a forlorn hope, that was fighting the institution of slavery. He became an active ally and co-worker with Garrison, Phillips and Parker and gave largely of his time and talents to the cause. But Dr. Howe's greatest work were his efforts to educate and uplift the blind, both in this country and in Europe. In 1832 he organized the Perkins Institution for the Blind in South Boston. Of the great work he performed in this direction, we speak elsewhere in this volume.

His wife, Julia Ward Howe, survived him many years and was a woman of remarkable talents and unusual strength of character. Her name was a household word throughout this broad land, and few women have been so loved and revered by all classes. Her noble and inspiring poem, "The Battle Hymn of the Republic," written during the Civil War, stirred every patriotic heart, and will live as long as the Republic stands.

John Greenleaf Whittier was another of that famous quartette of Boston Abolitionists, and the poet whose stirring lines, aroused the conscience of many sleeping patriots and inspired to right and noble action. Although terrible as a prophet of old in his denunciation of wrong and oppression, he had a most loving and gentle spirit. Edwin D. Mead, the Historian, says: "Whittier was pre-eminently the poet of the conflict, and again and again, in his ringing lines, he appeals to the great Boston traditions to enforce his high demands. "By Boston's Mound." "By Warren's

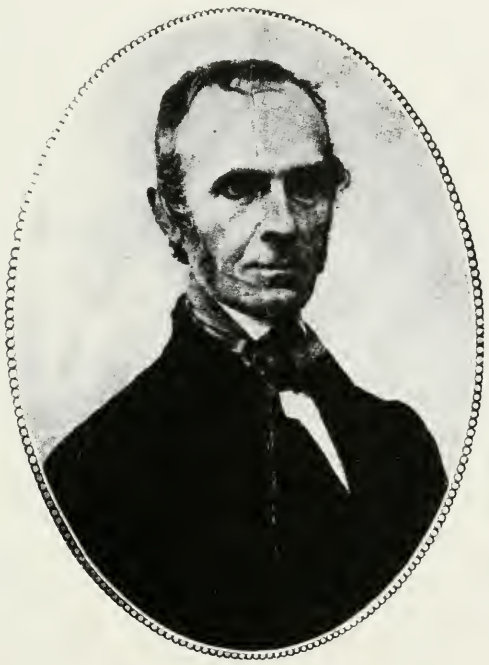
Ghost," he exhorts Massachusetts to heroism. When Virginia storms and threatens, he replies for Massachusetts.

"Forgets she how the Old Bay State in answer to her call,
Of her old House of Burgesses, spoke out from Faneuil Hall
When echoing back her Henry's cry, came pulsing on each breath,
Of Northern winds, the thrilling sound of "Liberty or Death!"

In 1850 the excitement on the slavery question was at fever heat. President Fillmore had signed the Fugitive Slave Law. This one act strengthened and multiplied the hitherto small and insignificant Free Soil Party. There was one clause in that law that was offensive to every sentiment of justice and humanity, and repugnant to the feelings of the people of the Free States. This clause provided "that in no trial or hearing under the act, should the testimony of such alleged fugitive be admitted in evidence, and that the parties claiming the fugitive should not be molested in their work of carrying the person back, by any process issued by any court, judge, magistrate, or other person whatsoever." It was plainly to be seen that under that law free negroes might, by the perjury of kidnappers, and the denial of the common right to defence, allowed the vilest criminal, be carried away into hopeless slavery, beyond the reach of pity, mercy or the law." Against this cruel act there was rebellion in every humane and Christian heart. The perception of possible wrong caused the legislatures of several of the Free States to pass laws for the protection of free colored citizens within their borders, made so by the circumstances of their births or existing laws. Up to this time, abolition in the North, had been, for the most part, a moral, not a political question, although in August 1848, a Free Soil Convention assembled at Buffalo, New York, and nominated Martin Van Buren for President and Charles Francis Adams for Vice-President. But when the slaveholders declared their purpose to carry their peculiar institutions into the territories, and thus increase the number of slave labor states, thousands of voters were added to the rolls of the Republican Party, and the long and bitter and memorable struggle in Congress commenced. Emigrant Aid Societies were organized in the Free States to

assist Northern families in moving to Kansas, then a territory, and establishing themselves there.

A small number of Southerners moved in there with their slaves, but a clear majority of the residents were Free State men. The story of that struggle in Kansas between the friends and foes of slavery is an exciting and interesting



John Greenleaf Whittier

chapter in American history to every student. There was great excitement in Boston when two fugitive slaves who had escaped to this city, were taken by their masters and returned to bondage under the Fugitive Slave Law. Thomas Semmes, a fugitive slave, was arrested April 5, 1851. This action brought to the front, Richard Henry Dana, Jr., a prominent citizen of Cambridge, who had a strong sympathy for the unfortunate slave and a clear conviction against the institution of slavery.

A reference to his letters shows that he was opposed to the extreme measures of the abolitionists, as led by William Lloyd Garrison, but in that great moral crisis he had to array himself on the side of right. He was a lawyer of great ability and came into active life when the abolitionist agitation was at the height of its unpopularity. He came out as a member of the Free Soil Party. As one has said of him: By his social relations and by his strong antipathy to violence of every kind, Dana would naturally have found his place among the men, who, in politics, prefer orderly and regular and especially respectable associations."

"The ultra conservative elements were calmly tolerant of slavery, and under the influence of Daniel Webster were satisfied to compromise." Dana's defence of the fugitive slave, Thomas Semmes, cost him the respect of half of Boston. He conducted the case without charge. The night before Semmes was taken back into slavery, Rev. Daniel Foster and a few others kept vigil with him through the long hours. The ship that was to carry him south was at Long Wharf and there was a large crowd present to witness his departure. It was a solemn time to many of them and in the hush that fell upon every one, Rev. Mr. Foster offered the following notable prayer:

"Almighty God thou seest this poor man one of thy children, borne away by oppression. Thou art the friend of all who suffer wrong and we have no hope but in Thee. That hope still is unshaken. Thy promises endure forever. And now we besech Thee to show Thy power and love in blessing this dear brother who is carried away by force to the land of whips and chains. O, God, make him a missionary of power to awaken a love of justice and liberty that shall result in the speedy overthrow of the accursed system which now creates millions of bleeding hearts. In mercy, Heavenly Father, do thou destroy the wicked power which rules us. Give us righteous men to administer just laws. Forgive the wickedness of our rulers and lead them to true and lasting repentance. Pity this wretched man, who now goes in fetters over the waves. Pity and bless his brethren in chains. Hasten the day when all men shall be free. And thine shall be the glory. Amen.

This beautiful prayer was afterwards translated into several languages. Rev. Daniel Foster was one of seven brothers, graduates of Dartmouth College, six of whom, in-

cluding himself, became Congregational ministers. He became extremely interested in the anti-slavery cause. During the struggle in Kansas, he emigrated there, and carried on his good work for freedom where he frequently preached with a pistol beside his Bible. He laid down his life at last for the cause. During the war he was commissioned a captain of colored troops. In one fight he went back to the pickets of his company to warn them of a retreat, and his form, conspicuous among the blacks, was singled out by the rebel sharpshooters, and thus his valuable life ended. This was at Chapin's Bluff, outside of Richmond. His fellow officers had his remains embalmed and sent home for burial.

A few years after the incident on Long Wharf, at the departure of Semmes, the fugitive slave, Mr. Foster received the following letter from Hon. Charles Sumner:—

"Rev. Daniel Foster,

"My dear Sir:—I wish that I could serve you. May God speed you always! I honored you much, when on that day of shame you made that prayer for the poor slave who was about to be conveyed to bondage. I have honored you since for all that you have done in Kansas. Keep on in your good efforts. The good cause cannot fail.

Faithfully yours,

Charles Sumner."

In 1854, Anthony Burns, a fugitive slave who had escaped, came to Boston, where he was arrested and lodged in jail. It was a case that stirred the entire nation. "It had become a point of honor with the South to get Burns back, and with the North a point of honor to see that he escaped." Mr. Dana took up the defence of Anthony Burns, and such was his earnestness that all Boston was brought to a state of intense feeling. "One man was killed by the Boston mob, in its efforts to rescue Burns from official custody and Mr. Dana, himself, nearly lost his life at the hands of a would-be assassin." Not since the days of the famous Tea Party of 1773 had Boston been in such a turmoil. The Anti-Slavery men at once called a meeting in Faneuil Hall. Theodore Parker, Wendell Phillips and Dr. Howe were there and filled with fiery indignation. The Old Cradle of Liberty fairly rocked wih the intense excitement. Such an influence went out from that meeting that the authorities ordered out the militia to guard the Court House, which they feared would be attacked.

"Mr. Dana's great argument, which was widely quoted, occupied four hours. Even the Marshal's guard was so influenced by it that some of them said frankly that they wished the man would get off. The remarkable fact about Mr. Dana's argument was, that the entire brief was written on the two sides of a piece of small note paper—a mere table of references. He was so inspired by his subject that he did not need to write a single word of his four hours' argument in advance. But notwithstanding Mr. Dana's eloquence and persuasiveness, the case went against Burns. The trial ended on Wednesday, and on Friday came the demonstration in front of the Court House. The soldiers were given orders to fire on any one who dared to cross certain lines.

It was on Friday, the 2d of June, 1854, that Burns was surrendered to his master. He was taken from the cell where he had been confined. The square in front of the Court House was cleared of all civilians and filled instead with troops. "A brass field piece belonging to the Fourth Artillery, was ostentatiously loaded in front of all beholders, and carried by some men of the corps, in the rear of a hollow square. In that hollow square of armed men, was the cause of the whole commotion, a weak, broken colored man, Anthony Burns, the last fugitive slave ever to be caught in Massachusetts and returned to the South.

It was three o'clock that afternoon when Burns walked out of the Court House on that memorable march to Long Wharf. There were no less than 20,000 people, closely packed all the way along Court and State Streets. The side streets were also crowded, and it was a surging, turbulent mass, whose feelings were wrought up to the highest pitch by the injustice of the act being performed. The bells in Boston and in the neighboring towns tolled a solemn dirge. Mayor Smith had said, most emphatically, that the bells of Boston should not ring, but they tolled as if it was a requiem for the dead, and there were no policemen ordered to stop them; they had other work, nearer at hand, requiring all their attention.

The city was feverish with excitement, repressed for the most part, but all the more dangerous on that very account, should it break over the bounds. Many of the shops on the line of march were closed. A number of American flags, draped in black, were displayed. Hanging from a window near the old State House was a black coffin, and on it the

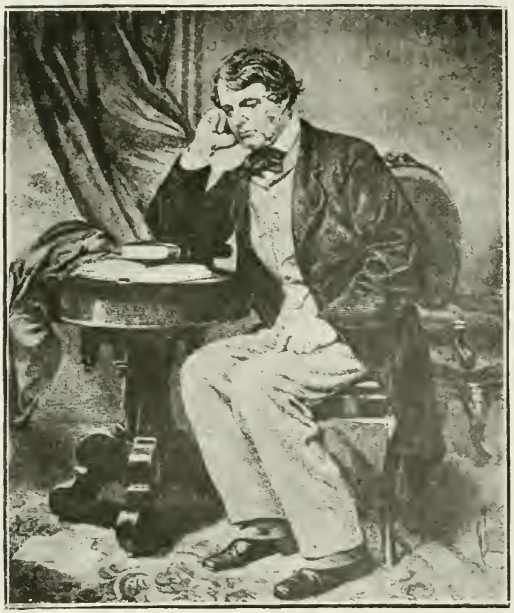
words, "The Funeral of Liberty." There were no cheers as the soldiers marched by, no music, only the dull measured tramp of men of arms, who were greeted with groans and hisses. Women wept and men showed the signs of grief in their countenances. In some cases the dragoons had to clear a passage, especially near the Custom House, riding their houses upon the crowd while the infantry with fixed bayonets charged into them. As one has said: "Anthony Burns had a guard sufficient for Caesar, and an audience of people, in numbers worthy any General that ever returned as victor from a war." The expression of public disapproval on this occasion was so emphatic as to be awe inspiring. For the peace and quiet of the city, it would not have been safe to repeat the scene.

Burns was placed on a United States Revenue Cutter and carried to Virginia." On the evening of that day an attempt was made on Mr. Dana's life. Mr. Dana was born in Cambridge August 1, 1815, with a line of ancestors reaching back to the early days of the Massachusetts Bay Colony. He was the legal associate of the Hon. Joseph H. Choate, the prominent New York lawyer and former Ambassador to Great Britain. The execution of the Fugitive Slave Law was so repugnant to every feeling of liberty and humanity that it brought out in strong relief the hideous wrong of slavery, and it began to press upon the national conscience, so that when the Presidential Campaign of 1856 opened, the Republican party was well organized and the country divided into two political camps, the Democratic and Republican partis. It was at this time that William Lloyd Garrison, Wendell Phillips, Theodore Parker, Dr. Howe and John G. Whittier were at the zenith of their careers. But the great advocate of the Anti-Slavery Crusade in Congress and thus before the whole nation was the

HON. CHARLES SUMNER.

He was born in Boston January 6, 1811, and died in Washington, D. C., March 11, 1871. He graduated at Harvard in 1830, and at the Harvard Law School in 1831. He entered public life in 1851, and although meeting with great opposition, he was elected United States Senator from Massachusetts to succeed Daniel Webster. He began his congressional assault on slavery by a masterly argument for the repeal of the Fugitive Slave Law, entitled "Freedom National, Slavery

Sectional." The phrase was immediately caught up and became the watchword of the Republican party. He became the leader of the political Anti-Slavery movement. So thoroughly did he become identified with it, that his life may truly be said to have become the history of the Anti-Slavery cause in Congress. As one has said: "No other man watched every point so vigilantly, no one suggested so many plans of attack, no man did so much to arouse and inform the political



Charles Sumner

mind, no one enriched the treasury of anti-slavery as he did. Added to this was his unquestioned honesty and fiery enthusiasm." Such a man could not escape personal attacks, and his indignant reply to these brought down upon him the brutal assault of Preston S. Brooks of South Carolina in the Senate Chamber of the United States May 22, 1856. This brutal assault aroused the greatest indignation all over the North, and yet there were not a few citizens of Boston, who sympathized so strongly with the South that they refused to take part in a meeting which was called to protest

against such a dastardly outrage. In consequence of this attack, Mr. Sumner was laid aside from his public duties for quite a long period. When he had nearly regained his health and strength he visited Boston in November, 1856, and was given a great reception by the State Authorities. He was hailed with great enthusiasm by crowds on the streets, but as the procession, escorting Mr. Sumner passed through Beacon Street, the windows of many of the houses had their curtains drawn or blinds closed, to show their indifference and contempt.

There were two notable exceptions, the houses of Mr. Samuel Appleton and of Mr. Wm. H. Prescott, the Historian, and grandson of Colonel William Prescott, the Commander of the American forces at the Battle of Bunker Hill. History has failed to record the names of those persons who sat behind closed blinds or drawn curtains as the Champion of Freedom and Humanity rode by, but what Charles Sumner said and did will live forever in the annals of the Republic.

Mr. Sumner's Boston office was at No. 4 Court Street, where the Sears Building now stands. For twenty years he had as law partner the Hon. George S. Hilliard.

The Visit of the Prince of Wales to Boston

Arrival in Boston

The Prince of Wales and his party reached Boston about 4 o'clock in the afternoon of October 17, 1860. In his suite were Lord Lyons, the British Minister to the United States, the Duke of New Castle, George Frederick Bruce, and the Earl St. Germain. Mayor Frederick W. Lincoln, and a committee of citizens, consisting of Edward Everett, Robert C. Winthrop, Josiah Quincy and Alexander H. Rice, met the party at the Cottage Farm Station, on the Boston and Worcester Road, and welcomed them to the city. The formalities of introduction accomplished, the line of march was taken up for the Revere House, which was, at that time, the leading and most fashionable hotel in the city. There was hearty and spontaneous and continuous cheering along the entire route, which must have convinced the Prince, that he was cordially welcome to the old city of Boston. On the second day, Baron Renfrew, the title assumed by the Prince, for his American visit, and his retinue of dukes, earls and generals, visited the State House and paid their respects to the Governor of the State, Nathaniel P. Banks. Governor Banks, at that time, was at the zenith of his glory and the Waltham "Bobbin Boy," by his grace, his eloquence and his alert manner, made a deep impression upon the visiting party.

Following this call upon His Excellency, was a complimentary parade and review. About 2,000 men were in line, almost the entire military force of the State. After the review, the Prince was escorted to the Revere House, and as he rode in an open barouche slowly through the principal streets, the people had ample opportunity of seeing him. He was then of slight figure, very boyish looking, but bore himself with great composure and dignity. In Boston and elsewhere he made a most agreeable impression. "His form is small and well proportioned, and his bearing is dignified, manly and modest." The Prince's dress varied much of course with the place and occasion, but was always simple, elegant and appropriate. It

is said he had to be careful where he hung his clothes, as the Yankee maidens had a mania for surreptitiously cutting off the buttons for souvenirs of England's future king. The late Charles O. Stickney, in a published article, gave some interesting reminiscences of the Prince's visit to Boston. One incident he relates is the interview which the Prince had with Ralph Farnham, a veteran of the Revolutionary War. "Did you see

The Prince of Wales in 1860

Burgoyne when he surrendered?" asked the Duke of Newcastle of the old veteran, and added rather good humoredly, "you rather had him there." "Well," returned the old soldier, with a chuckle, and evading a direct answer, "To tell the truth, I hear so much said in praise of the Prince, that I begin to fear our people are all turning royalists." The diplomatic and witty reply and Mr. Farnham's manner elicited much laughter in which the Prince heartily joined. He then sent for pen and ink and exchanged autographs with the veteran. Mr. Farnham afterwards spoke of this interview with

the greatest pleasure, remarking, that he wished "to show the boy and his soldiers that he bore no anger for old times." And who can tell but that those kind words of the old revolutionary hero, had something to do, collaterally, in averting a war with the mother country at the time Massachusetts men, as well as their loyal brethren in other states, were engaged in a gigantic Civil War, a few months later? For when Britain was breathing out "threatenings and slaughter over the capture by a Union war vessel of the Confederate emissaries, Mason and Slidell from a British steamer, and the Ministry, especially Palmerston, had formulated an ultimatum, which our Government could not in honor, accept without a fight, the Queen remembered the kindness shown her boy by the people of the North, and through her influence the despatches were so modified as to admit of a peaceful solution of the grave difficulty. The Prince was in the city four days and was constantly on the move. The same day that he reviewed the troops on Boston Common, he attended a Children's Musical entertainment at Music Hall. Twelve hundred school children were arranged on seats sloping from the floor to the ceiling and from the platform one could see two large triangles of boys, and two immense parallelograms of gaily dressed girls, while between them was an orchestra of 90 performers. As the Prince entered, the whole Company rose and the masses of children waved handkerchiefs and clapped hands, producing a fine effect.

It was at the Grand Ball in Boston Theatre in the evening that Boston fairly outdid herself. In splendor that Ball has never been exceeded in America, perhaps never equalled. Mr. Stickney described it as follows: "Imagine the immensity of Boston Theatre, the dancing floor enclosed by a pavilion, each tier, differently and most richly decorated, and crowded with superbly dressed ladies, the royal box all aglow with light, and rich in gilt, purple and azure, the frescoed ceiling with its pendant dome of light, the marque with its groves, flowers, mirrors, arabesque ceiling, its multiform and varied decorations, and its view of Windsor Castle, seen as if from some immense window—if you can imagine this scene, and then crowd it with richly dressed ladies, with gentlemen in every variety of ball costume, while over all the lights streamed their brilliant radiance, mirrors and jewels flashing back and reduplicating the rays, and the soft, sweet swell of the music,

bearing with it the graceful moving throng in a bewildering mass of beauty,—imagine all this if you can, and an adequate idea of the magnificent occasion may possibly be gained."

At that time Boston Theatre was one of the largest and finest in the country, and today, in its general plan and arrangement and its fine acoustic qualities it is not excelled by any of our most modern playhouses. Allusion has been made to the "dome of light"—the great chandelier which hung from the dome of the theatre. It was a magnificent affair and when lighted presented a most brilliant appearance with its hundreds of prisms. At this grand ball there was quite a clash in etiquette, reminding one of the etiquette differences between President Washington and Governor Hancock in 1789, the occasion of Washington's visit to Boston. The question of the hour as regards the ball was "who should dance in the first set with the Prince?" The discussion centred around the wife of the Governor of the State, and the equally worthy helpmeet of the Mayor of the City. "Which lady should have the honor of being the Prince's first partner?" It was finally decided in favor of Mrs. Lincoln, the wife of the Mayor. Mrs. Governor Banks was accorded the honor of the Prince's hand in the second quadrille.

The papers of that date give a very full account of the ball. The royal set in the first quadrille, besides the Prince, was composed of three gentlemen of his suite. The three ladies, besides Mrs. Lincoln were Mrs. Thomas E. Chickering, Miss Sallie Austin and Miss Kitty Fay. The Prince danced seventeen times and the names of the ladies who were his partners are given. He expressed himself as greatly pleased with the Boston ladies. At this ball he remarked slyly to a beautiful belle, who was his partner, "they made me dance with the old chaps in Canada," putting an emphasis on the old. We give here the list of dances and the names of the ladies with whom he danced:—

1. Quadrille, Mrs. F. W. Lincoln, wife of Mayor Lincoln.
2. Quadrille, Mrs. N. P. Banks, wife of Governor Banks.
3. Waltz, Mrs. Wise, wife of Lieut. H. A. Wise, U. S. Navy, and the daughter of the Hon. Edward Everett.
4. Quadrille, Miss Fanny Crowninshield, daughter of Mr. George Crowninshield.
5. Lancers, Miss Susan Amory, daughter of Charles Amory, and grand-niece of Lord Lyndhurst.

6. Polka, Miss Carrie Bigelow, daughter of the Hon. George T. Bigelow, Chief Justice Supreme Judicial Court.
7. Quadrille, Mrs. Thomas E. Chickering.
8. Lancers, Mrs. Ritchie, wife of Major Harrison Ritchie, 2d Battalion of Infantry.
9. Galop, Miss Fannie Peabody, a niece of Mayor Lincoln.
10. Waltz, Miss Fannie Peabody of Salem.
11. Lancers, Miss Kitty Fay, daughter of Mr. R. S. Fay.
12. Miss Mary Crane, daughter of Alderman S. D. Crane.
13. Miss Lily Fay, daughter of Mr. R. S. Fay.
14. Mrs. Chickering, wife of Mr. Charles F. Chickering.
15. Miss Appleton, daughter of Mr. Nathan Appleton.
16. Mrs. Bates, wife of Mr. Isaac C. Bates.
17. Miss Netty Gage, of Old Cambridge, niece of Mr. Henry K. Horton.

Mrs. Joseph Bigelow, Mrs. Whitney of Beacon Street, Mrs. M. P. Brady of New York, Mrs. G. J. F. Bryant, and Mrs. Wilcox, daughter of the late Jonas Chickering, were all elegantly attired. There were many distinguished persons present at the ball, besides the Prince of Wales and his party; among them were Governor Banks, Mayor Lincoln, Professor Henry W. Longfellow, Senator Henry Wilson, Senator John P. Hale, wife and daughter, Dr. Oliver Wendell Holmes, and wife, Hon. Robert Winthrop, Mr. Murray, British Consul at Portland, Maine, Hon. Anson Burlingame, and wife, Mr. Cartier of Montreal, Dr. Henry J. Bigelow, General Andrews, Miss Harriet Hosmer, the sculptress, Josiah Quincy, Colonel Connelly, Ass't Adjt. General of the forces in Canada, Mr. Bogart of the "New York Courier and Express," Mr. Thayer of the "New York Post," Lieut.-Colonel N. H. Bellew of the Governor's Horse Guards of New Hampshire, Dr. Edward Reynolds, A. C. Mayhew, Frank Leslie, Col. J. T Stevenson, Judge Putnam and hosts of other notable people.

It was, without doubt, one of the grandest occasions in all respects that Boston has ever witnessed. Several years ago Mr. Andrew Neilson, who was employed at the Revere House for nearly fifty years, in an interview with a Boston reporter, recounted his experience with the Prince of Wales, when as Baron Renfrew he was a guest at the Hotel for those three days in 1860. Mr. Neilson was the only waiter who was allowed in the presence of the future King, for the latter had his own servants. In this account he says: "The three days

the Prince and his suite remained here were the greatest of my life. I suppose the Prince left the most pronounced impression upon me of any of the most celebrated guests I have waited on. He and his suite arrived here on the 17th of October, 1860. I was the only employe of the house permitted to assist the Prince and I had charge of his entire apartments, thoughout his entire stay in the city. The first and second floors of the house in the west wing were partitioned off for the royal guest and his suite and the keys given me. No one but the Prince's party was permitted to pass. This was a wise thing to do, for otherwise it would have been difficult to keep the public from intruding. Bowdoin Square was packed with people, day and night, and we had to use all kinds of devices to get the Prince in and out, without attracting the attention of the multitude. The day after the Prince arrived he said he wanted some exercise and told me to order his horse. The animal, by the way, was used by Thomas Ball, the sculptor, as a model for his equestrian statute of Washington that is in the Public Garden. It was owned by a gentleman on Beacon Street, who loaned it to the Prince. After the horse had been brought, the Prince looked out of the window and seeing the crowd, turned to me and said, 'Andrew, must I go out in that crowd? Cannot you get me out without their seeing me?' I replied that I would try, and told the hostler to ride the horse off, taking a roundabout way coming back up through Bulfinch Street, where he was to remain until he received a signal from me. I went to the Prince and told him what I had done and in a few minutes he was ready. When I saw the horse in the place I had suggested I gave the signal and the animal was brought to the entrance on the side where the Prince was waiting. Before any one was aware of the fact he had sprung into the saddle, and away he went, cantering up the street. The heir to the British throne was lost one day for over an hour, and I was the only one who knew where he was. The men in his suite who had him in charge were almost frantic. It was none of my business, so I said nothing, but was instrumental in his returning before a general alarm was sent out.

On the fourth day the Prince departed with a clear track ahead for Portland, Maine, where a royal fleet of warships awaited his coming to carry him back to his home in Britain. "We were evidently in a higher atmosphere," wrote the Private Secretary of the Duke of Newcastle, in the published

diary of his trip, when referring to the Boston visit. "The Bostonians," he said, "were anxious that their entertainment should be in better taste than that of the New Yorkers, and they evidently succeeded." The Prince embarked for home on the man-of-war "Hero," on October 20, 1860. "She had only fifteen days' supply of coal and owing to the rough weather and the struggle against adverse seas, this was soon exhausted. The "Hero" was taken in tow by her consort, the "Anadne" and slowly the craft limped across the ocean. The larder, too, as well as the bunkers were poorly stocked, and for the last three or four days, the royal youth, who had subsisted on the choicest fare the American continent could afford, was eating the salt beef of the sailors' mess. He relished the humour of the situation thoroughly and enjoyed the adventure which came from the buffetings of the tempestuous seas. The delay in the arrival of the "Hero" caused great anxiety throughout England and on her arrival at Plymouth Sound she was met by cruisers and despatch boats.

The old town of Boston that turned her back upon George the Third and his ministers, opened her arms in cordial welcome to this young son of England's good queen. He met with a continual ovation in his tour of the States from Detroit to Portland. It was so spontaneous and hearty he could not doubt its sincerity. Many years after this visit to the United States he said to a British official that he wished to have every possible attention shown to Americans who visited England, not only because it was good policy to have their friendship, but especially because he personally was very fond of them and wished to make return for the generous and enthusiastic welcome which they had given to him in his younger days.

On the 6th of May, 1910, the whole world was plunged in deep gloom at the death of this great monarch. In his message of condolence to Her Majesty, Queen Alexandra, President Taft truly voiced the real sentiment of the American people:—

"On the sad occasion of the death of King Edward, I offer to your Majesty and to your son, his illustrious successor, the most profound sympathy of the people and of the government of the United States, whose hearts go out to their British kinsmen in this their national bereavement. To this I add the expression to your Majesty and to the new King of my own personal sympathy and of my appreciation of those high qualities which made the life of the late King so

potent an influence toward peace and justice among the nations."

Almost to the end he refused to take to his bed and the day before his decease was sitting up in a large chair. As he grew weaker he seems to have realized that his end was fast approaching and one of his last utterances was, "Well, it is all over but I think I have done my duty." During his life he had many narrow escapes from death. When 14 years of age, while out shooting with Earl Canning, a bird flying low, between him and the Earl, who aimed point blank at the Prince. Just before the gun was discharged an attendant threw the Prince down, and received portions of the shot in his face. When 16, while climbing a lake mountain he slipped and rolled down the steep side for 100 feet, but escaped with slight injury. While courting the Princess Alexandria at Heidelberg, in September 1861, a chandelier, weighing several hundred pounds, fell upon and demolished the chair he had just vacated. While swimming in the Dead Sea, he was seized with cramps and rescued by an attendant as he was sinking for the last time.

On his accession to the throne the King announced his intention "to walk in his mother's footsteps," but while Queen Victoria lived almost a life of retirement, interesting herself mainly in home affairs, the King's influence throughout his reign was devoted, more to international affairs, by visits to foreign courts and personal action of constitutional character in various directions, making every possible effort to bring the empire into the friendliest relations with other countries, and his efforts were so successful that he has been universally known as "Edward the Peacemaker."

The Standard said of him: "The first of Englishmen has passed away, the monarch, whose name is written among the highest in the roll of England's long line of sovereigns, a patriot, a statesman, a governor, well fitted by the vigor of his intellect, and the engaging charm of his temperament, to be the actual, as well as the ceremonial chief of the peoples he loved so well, and of the empire he ruled with such memorable success."

Senator Chauncey M. Depew said of King Edward, whom he knew well as the Prince of Wales: "King Edward would have made a great American had his lot been cast with this country instead of being born to the English throne. More

than a King, a great factor for peace and good-will among the nations has passed away."

One incident that particularly impressed me was that which took place at a dinner to which the late James G. Blaine had been invited as the guest of the Prince during the former's visit to England, before he had been made a candidate for President. Knowing that the Prince of Wales took especial delight in honoring Americans, others at the dinner were most gracious to Mr. Blaine. The one

King Edward VII.

exception was a duke of the royal house, who had made a reputation for boorishness and lack of tact. During a lull in the conversation after the coffee, this nobleman blurted out, "The greatest outrage in your history was the revolt of your people against King George the Third. There was no justification for it, and there is no excuse now." I believe that was the only time I ever saw the Prince embarrassed. Perhaps no man but Blaine could have carried off the awkward situation. While the entire gathering sat in silence, Blaine, replied, in his carefully modulated voice, "Perhaps, my dear sir, if George the Third, had as much

diplomacy and had as wide a knowledge of his people as his great grandson possesses, America might still be English."

The Prince, at once, turned the subject, to the great relief of all present, and I saw him grip Blaine's hand with a twinkle of admiration in his eye at the end of the function.

He sought continually to secure the views of Americans on Irish Home Rule, then considered by most Englishmen to be a dangerous move and one likely to disrupt the British Empire. He talked continually of the relation between his country and ours, even asking whether British diplomatic representation here was entirely satisfactory.

South Boston in the Early Fifties

The old time residents of the Peninsular Ward were justly proud of "Dorchester Heights."

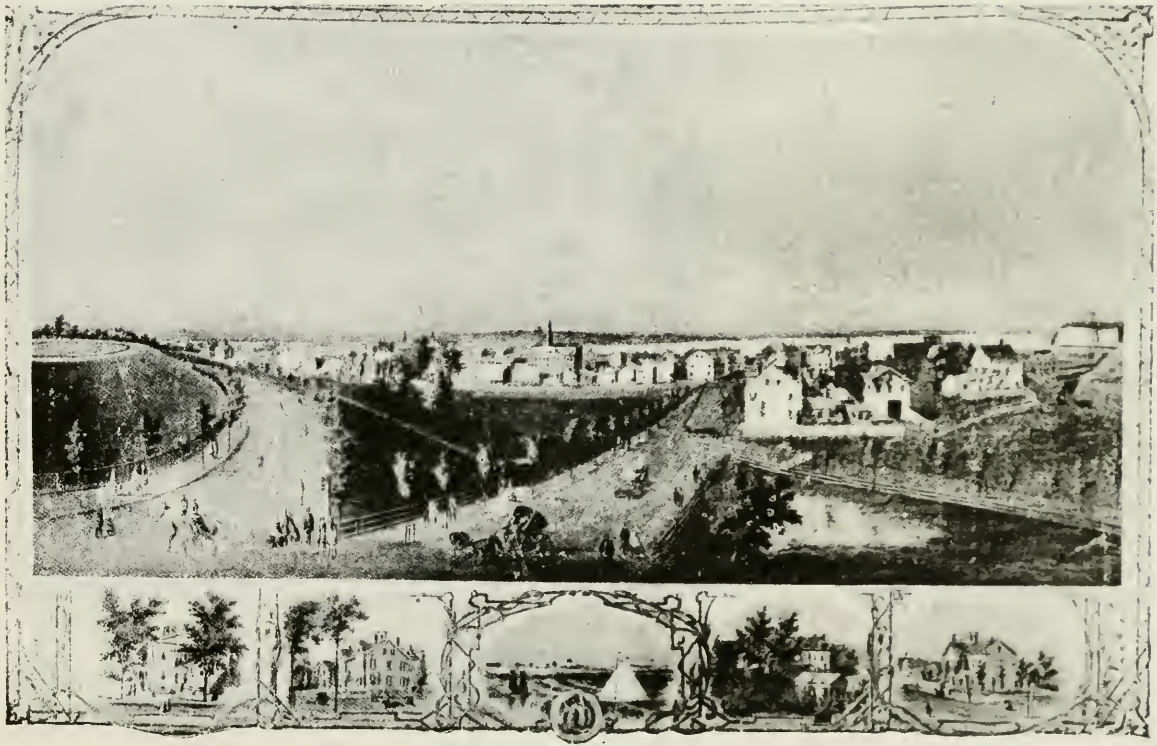
It was a place of great interest to strangers visiting Boston, by reason of the historical associations connected with the spot, also, because of the magnificent and far-reaching view to be obtained from its summit. In 1850, it was a rather isolated spot, retaining much of its natural configuration, the ascent being somewhat steep from all sides, and seemingly designed by nature for the exact purpose for which the genius of Washington utilized it. There remained at that time, some of the earthworks thrown up in the War of 1812, when the citizens feared the entrance of a British fleet into Boston Harbor. These earthworks followed very closely the lines laid out by Gridley, Washington's Engineer in March, 1776. These Heights, situated so near Boston, had complete command of the town and the harbor. The "Parade," the space enclosed by the earthen ramparts, was often used for outdoor meetings. The writer, when quite a lad, accompanied his father to that spot, one Fourth of July morning, to attend a meeting of the Cold Water Army. In 1849, a large granite reservoir for the storage of Cochituate water, was built on the East end of the hill, on the site now occupied by the elegant building of the South Boston High School. The shape of the reservoir was like a segment of an elipse, measuring at its widest part 370 feet and 260 feet at its narrowest. There was a great public demonstration when the water was introduced into this reservoir, November 20, 1849, and it was the writer's privilege to be present on that occasion, and to see the thousands gathered on the hill. A salute was fired by the Washington Guards, there was singing by the school children and an address by the then Mayor of Boston, the Hon. John P. Bigelow.

In 1850 there was much unoccupied land all around the Heights, particularly on the southern slope, extending to the Old Harbor. On one side there were a few very old apple

trees in whose shade we boys would often lounge in the hot summer days, where we had all the freshness and freedom and quiet of the country. The view on every hand was picturesque and pleasing. Across the old harbor was the cow pasture of Dorchester, a salt marsh of many acres, and following the shore line was the dark rounded summit of Savin Hill and Commercial Point and Squantum, with the Blue Hills of Milton as a background. A little distance southeast was Thompson's Island, where was situated the Farm School of Boston, and beyond the towns of Quincy and Weymouth. The view to the north and east, took in the city with its State House Dome, Bunker Hill Monument and numerous church spires, the wharves, the shipping, East Boston and the islands of the harbor. On the west, Dorchester and Roxbury with their many pleasant homes, embowered in green. Directly back of the Heights, at the foot of the hill, was the Old Harbor, and on its edge was a ship yard, where the writer once witnessed the launching of a small vessel.

City Point was a veritable "Sleepy Hollow." Yachting had not then become such a popular pastime. Here and there was a small sail boat, which some resident had anchored off the shore, within sight of his home, but no white-winged fleet such as may be seen today in the summer time, dotting the waters of the pretty bay. The houses in that section were somewhat scattered, but they were pleasant and comfortable looking homes, with large grounds attached to each. In front of the houses were flower gardens, with the old-fashioned flowers, lilacs, pinks, geraniums, holly-hocks and asters, with neat gravelled walks bordered with box. In the rear of the homes were their little fruit orchards, with cherry, apple, pear and plum trees, and grape vines running over an arbor of trellis work. These orchards were surrounded by high board fences, with a row of sharp points as a warning to mischievous urchins or marauders. The residents of the Point had no need to go to the mountains or seashore in the summer time. In no place could they be cooler or more comfortable than in their cosy homes. At the extreme end of the Point and facing Fort Independence, was a little earth-work, where guns were mounted in the war of 1812. The stone semi-circles, upon which the gun carriages revolved, were still to be seen in the early days of which we speak.

The old Blake House, of which we give quite a lengthy



Dorchester Heights in 1850

account in the "Settlement of Dorchester," stood not far from this earthwork.

At the foot of K Street, now known as "Bay View," was Pow-Wow Point, where may be seen a tablet with the following inscription:

> Here the Indians gathered and held
> Great Feasts. Near this spot, below High
> Water Mark, was the Great Spring.

It was unfortunate for the best interest and growth of South Boston in the right direction that so many penal, reformatory and other institutions of the City of Boston should have been located at the Point. By natural situation and surroundings it was an ideal location for fine residences.

It was the most beautiful spot in the whole city. In summer it was swept by the cool breezes of the ocean and the bay. A boulevard encircling the Point, with fine residences facing the harbor and Dorchester Bay, would have made it one of the most beautiful drives in America, and all within a short distance of the business centre of Boston. There were located in this section, the Insane Asylum, the House of Correction, the House of Reformation, and the Institution for Feeble Minded. These institutions occupied some of the most desirable sites at the Point, and by their close proximity cheapened real estate in their vicinity.

Many large manufacturing concerns took advantage of the low price of land at the Point, and located their factories near the water-front, and thus from 1850 to 1860 there were a number and quite a variety of industrial plants in South Boston. On the harbor side and near Independence Square were the extensive machine shops of

HARRISON LORING

who manufactured large stationary and marine engines, employing 200 men. He built the machinery of the United States steamer John Hancock, which vessel took part in Commodore Perry's expedition to Japan. He was one of the first in the country to build iron steamships, and turned out many fine and substantial specimens of naval architecture.

In 1860 he built and launched the large steamers, the "Mississippi" and the "Merrimac," which were built for the Boston and New Orleans line. The Civil War broke out soon

afterwards and all commerce between the two points was suspended.

They were chartered by the United States Government as transports and they continued in commission nearly four years. It was on the Steamship "Mississippi" that the 45th Massachusetts Regiment made the voyage from Boston to Morehead City, in November, 1862.

Near Loring's shops was the ship yard of

EDWIN AND HARRISON BRIGGS

This firm built many of the famous clipper ships, which in the years 1850-51-52 and 53, made such remarkable voyages around Cape Horn. These vessels rated A1 at Lloyds and carried the American flag into all the great ports of the world, and won the admiration of all seafaring men. We recall the names of some of those fine vessels: "Winged Arrow," "Fair Wind," "Starlight," "Grace Darling," "Bonita," "Cyclone," "Saracen," "Cossack," "Mameluke," "Meteor," "Alarm" and "Northern Light." The "Northern Light" made the fastest passage ever known for a sailing vessel from San Francisco to Boston, making the voyage in seventy-three days, and for ten days of the passage, she was becalmed off the coast of Chili. Those were the golden days of the American merchant marine, and from that excellent training school for sailors, the United States Navy in the Civil War, drew thousands of brave and hardy seamen. England could well afford to pay the Alabama Claims award of $15,000,000 for allowing English built cruisers, manned largely by English seamen, to slip out of her ports, under command of a Confederate officer, to prey upon American commerce. There is no doubt but that England saw the end from the beginning, and counted the cost. Her history proves that she allows nothing to stand in the way of her own interest. Force or diplomacy, or both, are used to remove every obstacle. Her methods may have changed since 1776, but her principles remain the same.

At the foot of Dorchester Street, on the harbor side, were the

BAY STATE ROLLING MILLS

This company did a very large business in the manufacture of T rails. Their product was of a very superior quality and they kept their furnaces running night and day, giving steady

employment to 300 men. Their rails went to all parts of the country, for it was the era of extensive railroad building in the West and it was in this way that Boston capitalists secured large and controlling interests in many of the great trunk lines. The business men of Boston in those days had brains, enterprise and capital, and Boston was the synonym for broad, and aggressive ideas in every line.

One of the most interesting industries of those days were the various glass manufactories.

THE AMERICAN FLINT GLASS WORKS

were located on Second Street, near B Street. Here the work was all done, from the making of the glass to its finished product

THE PHOENIX GLASS WORKS

were established in 1811 and were managed by Mr. Thomas Cains, an old and highly respected citizen of the ward. The buildings were several times destroyed by fire, but new structures always emerged from the ashes of the old, and they truly merited the name of "Phoenix," the name originally given them.

THE CHAIN FACTORY OF COTTON, HILL & CO.

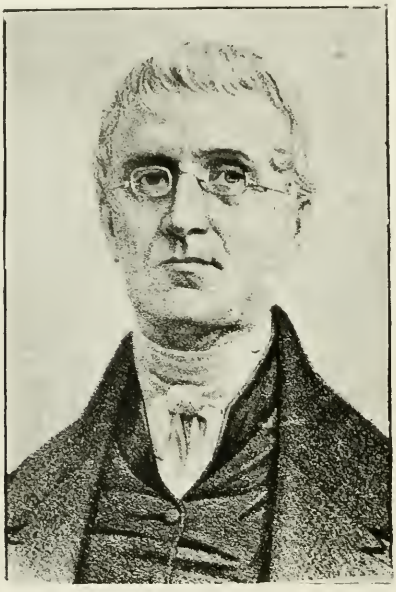
was located on F Street, a little off of Broadway, on the northerly side. It was always an interesting place to the boys, to watch the molten metal hammered by strong arms into chains and anchors, which were to hold the good ships safe at anchor when the waves should roll high, and the storm should beat furiously. Their work was of a high quality and the ship owners could say with Longfellow:

> "What anvils rang, what hammers beat
> In what a forge, and what a heat
> Were shaped the anchors of thy hope!"

The manager, Deacon Samuel Hill, was one of the best men and most highly respected citizens of South Boston. His heart and his purse were open to every good and worthy object. On the water side of Dorchester Avenue, about midway between Broadway and Washington Village, were located the Wire Works, which were founded and carried on for many years by the Hon. Henry S. Washburn. Here were manufactured many thousand miles of wire for telegraph and

other purposes. The high flame of the works, throwing its glare over the city night after night, always attracted the attention of the visiting stranger. The manufacture of wire was a novel and interesting spectacle to the onlooker. The iron, red hot, was hammered into bars, and then, by several processes, drawn into wires of the required size.

The largest manufacturing establishment in the ward in those days was The South Boston Iron Works, under the



Cyrus Alger

management of Cyrus Alger, the originator and principal proprietor, who was in many respects a most remarkable man. No man did more for the development and best interests of South Boston than Mr. Alger.

He gave freely of his time, his counsel and his money to advance its interests. It was largely through his influence that many important industries were located there. His foundry was one of the most perfect iron establishments in the United States, and he was acknowledged to be one of the best iron metallurgists of his day.

By a method entirely his own, he succeeded in so purifying cast iron as to give it more than triple the strength of ordinary cast iron, removing the impurities from the metal while in a fluid state, and causing it to be much more dense, and this gave him great advantage over other iron founders. It also gave him superior skill in the manufacture of cannon, and for many years he made guns for the United States Government, and his guns sustained the most extraordinary endurance, when subject to extreme proof. As a citizen he was universally beloved, and he enjoyed the full confidence of his fellow citizens, who looked up to him as a person to whom they could safely entrust their interests. His kindness to the men in his employ was proverbial, and he often kept men on half pay, when their services were not needed, to prevent the pecuniary distress which would be caused by a discharge.

THE GLOBE LOCOMOTIVE WORKS

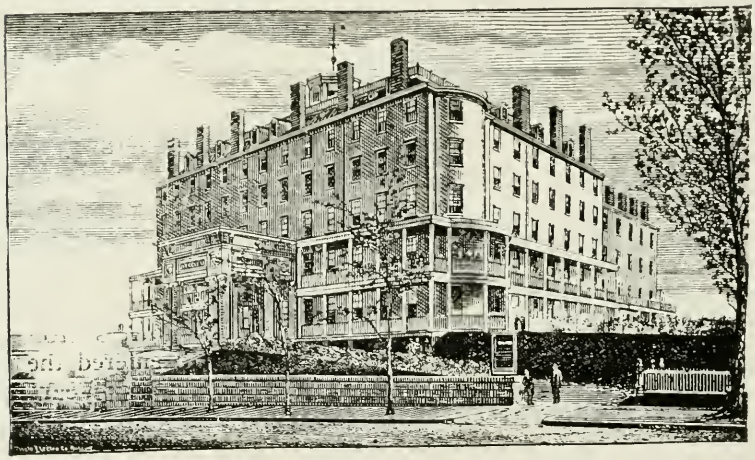
were on the corner of A and First Streets, and were started in 1846. Four years later Mr. John Souther, became sole proprietor.

Mr. Souther was born and educated in South Boston and lived there more than half of his life. He entered the old Hawes School, the year it was opened. At 14 years of age he commenced his apprenticeship as a carpenter and a cabinet maker. He spent some years in Cuba as draughtsman and pattern maker for sugar mill machinery. He entered the employ of the Hinckley Locomotive Works and made every drawing and pattern of all the locomotives they produced. As proprietor of the Globe Locomotive Works he made over 600 locomotives, and other important and up-to-date machinery and also made steam shovels for constructing roads, and these latter were used by nearly all the railroads in the United States and Canada. In 1849 some of his locomotives were shipped to California around Cape Horn.

One institution in South Boston has achieved more than national fame, and such has been its great work in the amelioration of conditions of hundreds of this deeply afflicted class that it is worthy of more than a passing notice.

The idea of a school for the blind may be said to have originated in an Act of the Legislature in 1829, incorporating the "New England Asylum of the Blind." Soon

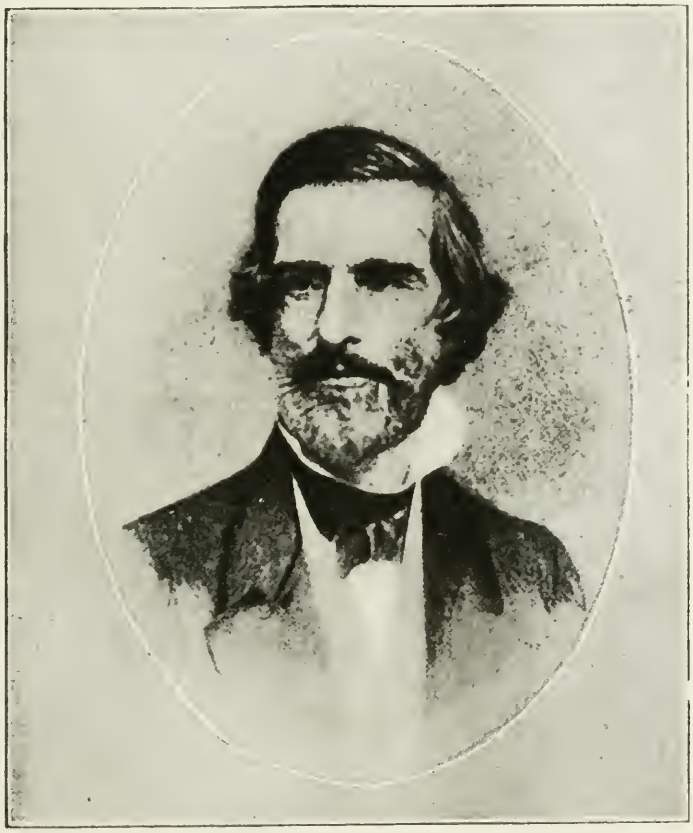
after the passage of this act, Dr. Samuel G. Howe was despatched to Europe to visit the various institutions for the blind in that part of the world, and to gather from them such information as would be necessary to establish a similar institution in Boston. In 1832 he returned, accompanied by a most accomplished young blind man, who was well versed in the classics, in history, in mathematics and knew the secret of being able to impart his knowledge.



Perkins Institution for the Blind

In the organization of this great philanthropic work, Dr. Samuel G. Howe was the leading spirit and tireless worker. He gave to it all the brightness of his keen intellect, all the impulses of his great tender heart. The blind of his day and of all generations will rise up to call him blessed. The growing needs of the institution were met in 1839 when they acquired possession of the Mount Washington House on Broadway, South Boston. It was erected in 1838 by some wealthy men of Boston, who believed that South Boston was destined to be the aristocratic section of the city and they saw a good speculation in the erection of a magnificent Hotel. The Warren Association as they were known, commenced running a line of coaches from the Old State House to the Hotel, charging twenty-five cents a fare, which was

afterwards reduced to six cents. But the Hotel did not pay and the money was lost. The Trustees of the Institution for the Blind were offered this Hotel property in exchange for the estate on Pearl Street.



Dr. Samuel Gridley Howe

The removal of the establishment to South Boston presented the opportunity of connecting the name of Mr. Perkins perpetually with the Institution, and accordingly a vote of the Corporation changed the name to that of the "Perkins Institution and Massachusetts Asylum for the Blind."

Intimately associated with the name of this Institution is that of Laura Bridgman, whose peculiar condition, as regards the loss of bodily senses, attracted the attention and awakened

the sympathy of the humane through the whole civilized world. From earliest childhood she was entirely blind, deaf and dumb and almost deprived of the sense of smell.

In a published statement Dr. Howe gives in detail a most interesting account of the methods employed in teaching her to read and to communicate her own thoughts to others. For a while the process was purely mechanical. She sat in mute amazement and patiently imitated everything her teacher did; but soon the truth began to flash upon her, her intellect began to work, she perceived that there was a way by which she could herself make up a sign of anything that was in her own mind and show to another mind and at once her countenance lighted up with a human expression. It was an immortal spirit eagerly seizing upon a new link of union with other spirits! The Perkins Institution for the Blind will stand a lasting monument to the energy, the devotion, the genius and the broad humanitarianism of Dr. Samuel Gridley Howe. At the memorial exercises in honor of Dr. Howe, Dr. Oliver Wendell Holmes paid him the following beautiful tribute:

"No trustier service claimed the wreath,
For Sparta's bravest son,
No truer soldier sleeps beneath
The mound of Marathon.

Yet not for him the warrior's grave,
In front of angry foes,
To lift, to shield, to help, to save
The holier task he chose.

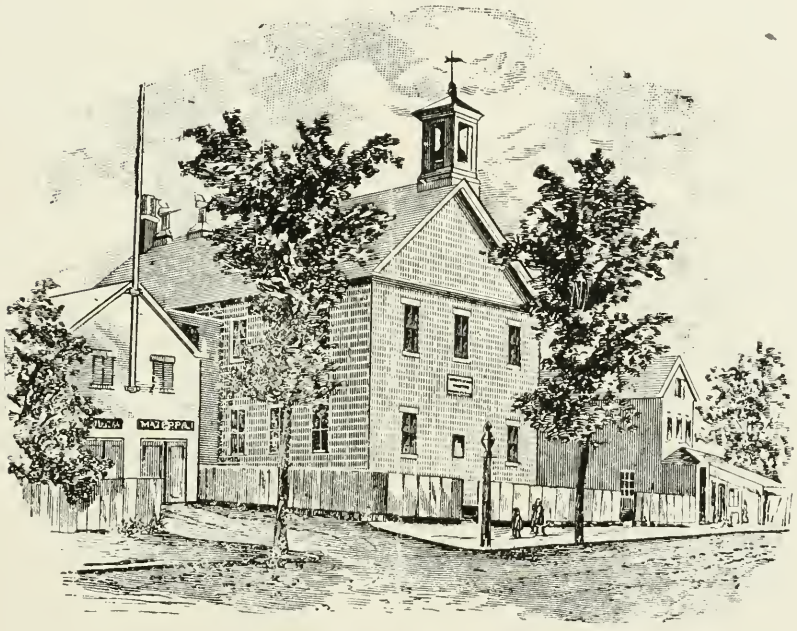
He touched the eyelids of the blind,
And, lo, the veil withdrawn;
As o'er the midnight of the mind,
He led the light of dawn!

Dr. Howe left an able successor in Michael Anagnos who married his eldest daughter Julia.

EDUCATION IN SOUTH BOSTON.

The early settlers of South Boston believed in education and in 1807 they sent a petition to the School Committee, praying for an appropriation for a school, but no attention

was paid to the petition. The town then took the matter up and authorized an appropriation of $300 and the citizens of South Boston subscribed an additional amount and a school building was erected on G Street and this was the first school house in the ward. Mr. Toomey in his excellent history of South Boston, gives the following description of this building, a simple and primitive affair compared with



Hawes Grammar School in 1850

our modern school buildings. It was more like the "little red school house" of song and story.

He says: "The school room was peculiarly arranged. From wall to wall ran a long desk and at this sat the first and second classes. To reach the seats, the children were obliged to climb over the desk itself. At the further end was the master's desk elevated about three feet. From this desk running from east to west, were several shorter desks and couches. There was a narrow aisle running the entire length of the building, in the centre of which was the stove.

The short cross seats and desks were occupied by the girls of the school and the boys of the lower classes. In 1821 the citizens petitioned for a new school house. The annexation act of South Boston (Mattapanock) to Boston, provided that the land proprietors should set apart three lots of land, for a market place, or school house and a burial place. The lot for a market place was deeded to the town by Mr. John Hawes. The citizens of South Boston owe the memory of this good man a great debt of gratitude for his many noble and generous gifts. There being no demand at that time for a market place he granted permission that the land donated by him could be used for the erection of a school house and here was erected the Hawes School Building. The Hawes School was established in 1823 and after considerable delay the city erected the present brick building. It was in this school that the teaching of music in the public schools was first established, and this was largely brought about through the efforts and liberality of Mr. Noah Brooks, a public spirited citizen of the ward.

"When the Hawes School was ready for occupancy the pupils of the school on G street, headed by their teacher, the Rev. Lemuel Capen, marched to the new house and were addressed by the Rev. John Pierpont, pastor of the Hollis Street Church and a member of the Boston School Committee. Since that day it has had many famous masters and teachers, who have been loved and revered by their pupils and respected by all who knew them. It was given up as a grammar school in 1859, but the old building is standing, now nearly 100 years old, a prominent and familiar landmark, near the head of Broadway. It is now a primary school. The graduates of the old Hawes School were scattered far and wide, many of them became famous in their several lines and useful in their day and generation, and all had pleasurable memories of their alma mater. An Association of Hawes School boys and of the girls also was formed many years ago and hold annual gatherings. Today there is a great and crowded population in South Boston and there are many large and modern temples of education scattered all over the ward. A recent addition is the South Boston High School, on Dorchester Heights on the site of the old reservoir, a most elegant and up-to-date school house with its gymnasium, drill room and assembly room with a seating capacity of 1000 and there are practically ten class rooms on

the first floor. Today there are 20 public school houses in the ward and two parochial schools with an enrollment of over 12,000 in the public schools and 2000 in the parochial schools.

THE SOUTH END OF BOSTON

In the early history of the town, the South End comprised all the territory south of Union Street. The main portion of that territory is now the business section of the city. Until 1804 the only thoroughfare from Essex Street to Dover Street was Washington Street. In that year a corporation, known as the Front Street Company, was organized for the purpose of enlarging the limits of Boston. The first improvement was the construction of a street running parallel with Washington Street, as far south as Dover. It was completed in 1805 and called Front Street. In 1841 the name was changed to Harrison Avenue in honor of President Harrison. The Company did not fill in the flats between Harrison Avenue and Washington Street, this was left for the owners to do, and was completed in 1830, and this improvement added to the area of the city nine acres of land suitable for building lots. At that time, what was known as Boston Neck, extended from Beach Street to Dedham Street. The greatest growth of the South End dates back to 1833, when the South Cove Company was incorporated. It was an auxiliary enterprise to the Boston and Worcester Railroad Company for the purpose of giving terminal and yard facilities to the latter. The railroad company agreed to buy a large amount of land and to establish and maintain its terminals thereon, forever. By 1836 the South Cove Company had purchased seventy-three acres of land and had invested $300,000. Material for filling these flats was brought chiefly in boats from the company's gravel pits in Roxbury and Dorchester. The filling was completed in November, 1839, and thus seventy-three acres more were added to the area of the city. The company also began the construction of the United States Hotel on Beach Street, and this undertaking during the strenuous days of the 1837 panic, very nearly wrecked the whole enterprise. The agent of the South Cove Company at that time cited as a sign of hope, the fact that "the Worcester Railroad now transported about 100 passengers daily." This expansion of the city's area went on for over

30 years. Towards the end of the sixties, Shawmut Avenue was extended from Dover Street to the Roxbury line. In 1830, Tremont Street, then known as Common Street, was extended from Pleasant Street to the Roxbury line. For many years Chickering's Piano Forte Factory was the most prominent landmark of the extreme South End. There were but few dwelling houses in its vicinity. Columbus Avenue was not completed until 1871. In 1830 three and three-quarter acres of marshland between Shawmut Avenue and Tremont Street sold for $269.80, or a little over one and a half cents per square foot, for land now assessed at $1.50 per square foot or about 1000 times its original cost." With the filling in of the flats, the streets of the South End were all regularly drawn at right angles. A large circular place was left, which the Committee having the work in charge said would be an ornamental park to be known as Columbia Square. The Columbia Square is now known as Blackstone and Franklin Squares, between Brookline and Newton Streets. Albany Street was laid out and a large amount was filled in southeast of that street. Some of the older citizens will remember a large agricultural fair that was held on the grounds some time in the Fifties. It was like a County Fair in the country, as there were many exhibits of live-stock, horses, cattle, etc. Before Tremont Street was laid out Charles Street was the boundary line of Boston in that direction. Pleasant Street took a roundabout course from Park Square to Washington Street. There were two small streets off of it, Marion and Fayette—which ended at a body of water, where boats and fishermen were often seen. When Columbus Avenue was laid out, it was considered one of the finest avenues in the country. It was lined with fine residences, and here were the homes of many wealthy and influential citizens. It was intended that the Avenue should become a second Beacon Street. Dr. Bundy gives the names and residences at the South End of many old time and well known Bostonians in 1876. He says at: No. 302 Columbus Avenue, was Dr. Conrad Wesselhoeft; 304 Charles W. Slack, editor of "The Commonwealth; 325 Napoleon B. Bryant, Attorney-at-Law; 364 Franklin Snow, the well known fish dealer; 353 Alfred A. Mudge; 404 Moses Merrill; 434 Silas Pierce, Jr.; 438 John C. Haynes of Oliver Ditson & Co.; 504 Rev. George C. Lorimer, Pastor Tremont Temple Church; 508 John A. Ordway; 510 Lansing Millis

of Oak Grove Farm; 518 Hon. A. W. Beard, Collector of Port of Boston; 528 Rev. A. A. Miner, Pastor Columbus Avenue Universalist.

Berwick Park was opened in 1869, and here lived J. B. Holden and Seth A. Fowle.

On Chandler Street, George W. Blatchford, Treasurer of the Boston Museum, Carl Zerrahn, leader of the Handel and Haydn Society, and A. M. McPhail, Piano Forte Manufacturer.

Massachusetts Avenue is a pleasant street ninety feet wide, and runs across the city from Dorchester Five Corners to Harvard Bridge, crossing Commonwealth Avenue, five blocks west of the Hotel Vendome. For many years after it was laid out (1873) it was known east of Washington street as Chester Park. Between Tremont Street and Shawmut Avenue, it broadens into a modest park of one and one-third acres; this was originally known as Chester Square and was a very exclusive and fashionable section of the city. We recall a number of old time residents from Harrison Avenue to Columbus Avenue: Rev. C. D. Bradley, Thomas Riley, the lawyer; John Ritchie, James I. Wingate; C. A. Richards, A. A. Rannel, Thomas B. Wales, H. L. Hallett, Azel Dearborn, Aquila Adams, Samuel D. Crane, Brice S. Evans, Osborn Howes, William G. Ladd, Samuel C. Shapleigh, Wm. P. Tenney, George D. Baldwin, Wm. E. Baker, Nathan Crowell, W. R. Carnes, Mr. Whittier, Dexter H. Follett, Charles O. Rogers, James Fiske, Jr., Mr. Trull, Richard Hapgood, Mr. Allen, Mr. Blanchard, Rev. Dr. Gannett, Sylvester Bowman, Dr. Nichols, Rev. Mr. Atherton, A. N. Cook, Gen. Nathaniel Wales, Stephen Smith.

In 1872 Waltham Street was a comparatively new thoroughfare and was wholly occupied by well to do families from end to end; there were 40 heads of families who lived on that street, among them Doctors Albert Day, G. T. Perkins, J. B. Coolidge and F. H. Brown. There was also Benjamin Lang, the father of B. J. Lang, the musician.

Boston Common

TABLET.
THIS TRACT OF LAND CONTAINING NEARLY
FIFTY ACRES WAS BOUGHT IN 1634
BY GOVERNOR WINTHROP AND OTHERS
FROM WILLIAM BLACKSTONE
AND WAS SET ASIDE FOR COMMON USE AS A
COW PASTURE AND TRAINING FIELD.
BLACKSTONE SOLD HIS TITLE TO THE LAND BY
A RIGHT OF POSSESSION GAINED PRIOR
TO THE SETTLEMENT OF BOSTON IN 1630.

In the heart of the busy city stands this beautiful natural park of 48 acres. It is the oldest public park in the country and there are historical associations connected with nearly every foot of the ground. In April, 1633, the General Court of the Province granted this "training field" or "Common" to William Blackstone to enjoy forever.. The next year Blackstone sold the land to the town of Boston for $150.00, reserving an orchard of 6 acres and his homestead, a small cottage, which occupied the present site of the Puritan Club. At that time the Common extended East as far as Beacon Street at its intersection with Tremont Street, and South as far as Mason Street. At the same time Blackstone relinquished all his right to the peninsula of Boston where he had been a "hermit settler" for several years prior to the Founding of Boston by Winthrop. For two hundred years following the founding of Boston, the Common was used as a training field for the militia and as a pasture ground for cattle. We are apt to think that the time when the Common was used for pasturage was very remote—but it was in 1830, when Harrison Gray Otis, Mayor of Boston, signed the order prohibiting its further use for that purpose. Only recently (1913) an aged lady died, who as a girl drove her neighbor's cows daily from North Street, North End, to the Common. Up to 1646 every Bostonian might pasture his

cows there, but that year a vote was passed at "Town Meeting" that only four men should be allowed the use of the Common for that purpose. For the first 100 years this now beautiful and pleasing Park, was used as a "Dump" where the citizens deposited every conceivable sort of rubbish. There was no Health Department in those early days. A town order required that every houesholder should keep the street in front of his dwelling clean, and should also dispose of the rubbish. The result was that householders hired the farmers, who brought in provisions from the country to carry away their street sweepings, and these country men deposited their loads of refuse on the nearest vacant lot, which of course, was the Common. The Tremont Street Mall was one offensive Dump from one end to the other. As a writer remarked, "with our modern ideas of hygiene we may well stand aghast at the spectacle of some of the things that then menaced the source of the town's milk supply." In the year 1638 an effort was made by some citizens to get possession of this land and cut it up into small tracts for building purposes on the plea "to supply men that want land and have deserved it." They endeavored to get the General Court to sanction the scheme. But Governor Winthrop took prompt and decided action against it, and largely through his influence the Common was saved for all time as a public park. When the town of Boston became a city and the Charter was drawn up, a clause was inserted making the Common public property forever, and thus it is impossible for the city to sell or give it away. Originally there were but few trees on the Common.

People who lived in Boston in 1830 have related that it was then a large field "thickly dotted with daisies and dandelions, that served to attract an army of lovers of greens in the Springtime, with their baskets, who found no limit to the supply of tasty vegetables." Later, walks were laid out, shade trees bordering these walks were planted and the rough and uneven surface was worked over into smooth and undulating lawns. There are now five beautiful walks encircling the Common, known as Park Street, Beacon Street, Charles Street, Boylston Street and Tremont Street Malls. Above these walks rise large and stately elm trees, and there are benches scattered along their entire length, which are well occupied during the hot summer days. One of the cross walks on the Common is known as the "Long Walk," ex-

tending from Joy Street to the Common to the corner of Tremont and Boylston Streets. Near this walk and at the foot of Flag Staff Hill, there stood until the winter 1876, a mammoth tree with wide spreading branches, and known far and wide as the "Old Elm." It was certainly the oldest inhabitant of the "Hub." Its age was never definitely ascertained, but it is believed to have been a large tree when Governor Winthrop founded Boston. In 1755, it was a very old tree, and people then called it decrepit. It was seventy-two feet high, and its trunk measured 22 1-2 feet in circumference, one foot above the ground. It went bravely down to death in that severe winter of 1876. An iron fence surrounds the spot where once it stood, and a shoot of the old tree is now growing there. In 1728, under the Shadow of the Old Elm, a duel was fought with rapiers, in which Henry Phillips, a nephew of Peter Faneuil, killed Benjamin Woodbridge, the quarrel resulting from a love affair. Following this tragedy the Legislature of the Province passed a most stringent law against duelling. Woodbridge was buried in the Granary Burying Ground and near the fence on Tremont Street. There is much of tragedy connected with the history of Boston Common, but once in a while there is a humorous incident, a pleasant relief from much that is gruesome. General Goffe was a Major General in Cromwell's army and was one of the officers who signed the death warrant of King Charles, the First. Upon the restoration of the monarchy in England in 1660, by the accession of Charles the Second to the throne, General Goffe, General Whally and many others fled to America, where they were known as "Regicides." Orders were sent to Massachusetts Bay Colony for their arrest, and officers of the Crown came over from England for that purpose, but the "regicides" had the sympathy and good will of the Colonists, who concealed them for years. Many of the Regicides settled in the little town of Hadley in the Connecticut Valley, and among them General Goffe. At one time when he was in Boston, a fencing master from England, erected a stage on the Common, on which he walked for several days, defying any man to fight him with swords. Goffe accepted the challenge. He procured a huge cheese which he wrapped in a linen cloth to be used as a shield, and arming himself with a mop, filled with muddy water from the gutter, he appeared on the platform. The fencing master made a thrust at him, which Goffe received in the cheese in

which he held the sword, until he had smirched his antagonist with mud. The enraged fencing master caught up a broad sword, when Goffe exclaimed, "Stop, sir, hitherto you see I have only played with you; but if you come at me with the broad sword, know that I will certainly take your life." The alarmed fencing-master cried out, as he dropped his sword. "Who can you be? You must be either Goffe or Whalley, or the Devil, for there were no other men in England who could beat me." In the early days executions were common spectacles and the Common was frequently used for that purpose, the gallows being erected there in 1644. Two criminals were executed there in 1659, and in that same year two young men named William Robertson and Marmaduke Stevenson, were led from the Boston jail, with ropes around their necks, their only crime being that they were Quakers. A young woman, named Mary Dyer, was taken with them to be hanged, for the same offence. She was the daughter of the Secretary of State of Rhode Island. Her son pleaded for her life, and she was reprieved and went away with him. But the next Spring she returned, defied the laws, and was executed on Boston Common. The extreme and cruel severity of the laws towards Quakers caused a reaction in public sentiment, and the people demanded a repeal of the bloody enactments, which was done in 1661, and the Quakers thereby achieved a triumph. The Records show that fourteen persons were executed on the Common for the crimes of robbery and murder. Four British soldiers were shot there for desertion and several persons accused of witchcraft were executed there. In 1740, it was proposed to build a market on the Common, but this was given up and the site of Faneuil Hall chosen. Drake in his "Landmarks of Boston" recalls the fact "that a party of the forces that captured Louisburg assembled on the Common; the troops that conquered Quebec were recruited on the Common by General Amherst; it was the mustering place for the conflicts which ushered in the Revolution; and the fortified camp which held the beleagured town in subjection. In that dreary winter of 1775 there were over 1700 redcoats behind their earthworks on the Common, waiting for Washington to attack the town." On Flagstaff Hill was a square redoubt, and near the Frog Pond, was a Powder House. There were trenches along what is now Charles River Mall,—then, the water front of the Common, and where now the pensive tramp slumbers

on the bench in the warm summer days. Some of the British officers who tented on the Common raised vegetables for their tables there, and it is probable they occasionally milked a cow that was quietly grazing near them, for a part of the Common was occupied by their tents and barracks, most of their time between 1768 and 1776. From the foot of the Common, now the Parade Ground, the British troops embarked in boats to cross the river on their way to Lexington —the night before April 19, 1775. It was during the occupation of the town of Boston that the Boston school boys successfully appealed to General Gage, that their right of coasting on the Common might be restored to them. When the Stamp Act was repealed in 1768 there was a brilliant celebration on the Common, and eighty years later, in 1848, it was the scene of a great celebration when the Cochituate Water was first introduced into Boston. In 1837 a large delegation of the Sacs and Fox Indians from the Far West encamped on the Common, and in all the gorgeousness of paint and feathers, gave exhibitions of their war dances and feats before interested thousands. On the Parade Ground, the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company hold their annual Drum Head Election of Officers on the first Monday in June. It is generally believed that the original parade ground was between the Old Elm and Tremont Street, and that here the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company used to gather and fire at a mark. The first trees on the Common were planted along the Tremont Street Mall as far as West Street. It was called the Great Mall and was the favorite promenade at sundown. The trees on the Beacon Street Mall were set out about the beginning of the 19th century. On this Mall opposite Joy Street was a "Wishing Stone," and the young people used to walk around it nine times, and then stand on it, or sit down on it, and wish their wishes, but they were not to tell their wishes else they would not come true. During those eventful years of the Civil War, many Massachusetts Regiments marched to the Parade Ground of the Common and there received the Colors of the Regiment from the hands of the eloquent and great War Governor, John A. Andrew, and from thence bore them to the front, where they waved in the thickest of the fight, and now they repose quietly and in honor, in the Hall of Flags nearby. On this Parade Ground boys and young men have indulged in athletic sports. The Artillery have boomed forth the City's joy over some

great event, or a welcome to some distinguished guest. Many Bostonians can recall some interesting incident in their lives connected with the Common. Up and down these pleasant shady walks lovers have strolled and told the "old, old story." Old Bostonians can recall the scenes on the Common on the Fourth of July fifty years or more ago. It was the Mecca for the residents of the rural districts for miles around. The Park was given over to them and resembled a "County Fair." Booths lined all the Malls. Merry-Go-Rounds were set up and the voice of the "Barker" was heard above the din of firecrackers and torpedoes. From 15,000 to 20,000 assembled and remained all day, listening to the Band Concerts and waiting for the Fireworks in the Evening.

MONUMENTS ON THE COMMON

BREWER FOUNTAIN.

This is near the Park Street entrance, and was presented to the city by the late Gardner Brewer, a well-known and wealthy Boston merchant. It was cast in Paris and is a bronze copy of a fountain by Linard of that city. At its base are figures representing Neptune, Amphitrite, Acis and Galatea. Another monument occupying a prominent position on the Tremont Street Mall is the

ATTUCK'S MONUMENT
IN MEMORY OF CRISPUS ATTUCKS, THE BRAVE AND PATRIOTIC COLORED MAN WHO WAS KILLED IN THE BOSTON MASSACRE MARCH 5. 1770.

THE SOLDIER'S MONUMENT

One of the finest in the country, stands on Flagstaff Hill, Boston Common, and was dedicated September 17, 1877, on the 247th Anniversary of the Settlement of Boston. The monument is of white granite and is over 70 feet high. The foundation is of solid masonry, cruciform in shape, built up from a depth of 16 feet to the ground level. On this is a platform of stone, covering an area of 38 feet square, and reached by three steps. From this platform rises a plinth nine feet high with projecting pedestals on each of the four corners. These pedestals are ornamented upon the sides and front with carved wreaths of laurel. Upon them stand

four bronze figures, each eight feet high,—Peace—History—The Army—and The Navy. The Statue of Peace represents a female figure robed in classic drapery, seated on a stone; her right arm is raised and extended, and in her hand she holds an olive branch, toward the South. The figure representing the Muse of History also occupies a sitting position and is clad in simple Greek costume. Her left hand holds a tablet which rests upon the knee; in the right hand is a stylus. A wreath of laurel encircles the head. The face is turned slightly away, and upward, as if in meditation.

THE STATUE OF THE SAILOR Faces the Sea. It is in an easy attitude, the right hand resting on a drawn cutlas whose point touches the ground, the left hand supported by the hip. The naval costume is well executed. The Army is represented by the figure of a soldier standing at ease, with overcoat, belt and accoutrements. His musket rests upon the ground. One hand clasps its barrel, the other rests upon the muzzle. On the four sides of the plinth between the pedestals are bronze-mezzo relievos, 5 feet 6 inches in height, by 2 feet 6 inches in width, symbolical of incidents of the war. That on the front of the monument represents the departure of troops for the war and introduces the portraits of Governor Andrew, Archbishop Williams, A. H. Vinton, D. D., Phillips Brooks, D. D., Wendell Phillips, Henry W. Longfellow and others,—standing on the State House steps, while with the troops marching by, are General Butler, Colonel Cass, Colonel Shaw and General Charles Russell Lowell. The Relief symbolizing the work of the Sanitary Commission has two parts; one, showing the present members of the Commission, from Boston, in consultation; the other representing the work in the field. Portraits are given of Governor Rice, James Russell Lowell, Ezra H. Gannett, D. D., E. R. Mudge, George Ticknor, Marshall P. Eilder, Colonel W. W. Clapp, Rev. Edward Everett Hale and several ladies. "The Return from the War" is the most elaborate relief. It represents a regiment drawn up in front of the State House. On the steps are Governor Andrew, Dr. Edward Reynolds, Henry Wilson, Governor Claflin, Mayor Shurtleff, Judge Putnam, Charles Sumner and others. Generals Banks, Devon, Bartlett and Underwood are on horseback. The Fourth Relief commemorates the achievements of the Navy, and has two parts. The left-hand portion shows a group of eleven figures and represents the departure of sailors from home;

while on the right is a view of a naval engagement. On the plinth rests the pedestal proper, 14 feet 5 inches in height, terminating in a sub-base. The sides of the die are panelled. On that facing the South is cut the following inscription, written by Charles W. Eliot, President of Harvard University:

TO THE MEN OF BOSTON
WHO DIED FOR THEIR COUNTRY
ON LAND AND SEA IN THE WAR
WHICH KEPT THE UNION WHOLE,
DESTROYED SLAVERY
AND MAINTAINED THE CONSTITUTION
THE GRATEFUL CITY
HAS BUILT THIS MONUMENT THAT
THEIR EXAMPLE MAY SPEAK TO
COMING GENERATIONS.

From the sub-base of the pedestal rises the granite shaft which is of the Roman Doric order. About its base are grouped figures in alto relievos, representing the four sections of the Union, North, South, East and West. Sculptured wreaths surround the shaft at irregular intervals. The capstone is a circular block of granite, 2 feet 11 inches high and 5 feet in diameter. On the block stands the bronze ideal statue of the Genius of America, which was cast in Philadelphia, and is 11 feet high, representing a female dressed in a flowing robe. Over the robe is a loose tunic, bound with a girdle at the waist. A heavy mantle, clasped at the throat, is thrown back over the shoulder, and falls the full length of the figure behind. On the head is a crown with 13 stars. In the right hand which rests on the hilt of one unsheathed sword are two laurel wreaths. The left hand holds a banner draped about a staff which reaches to a height of 6 feet above the head. The face fronts towards the South, and the head is slightly bowed. The cost of the entire monument was $75,000.00. Martin Millmore, of Boston, was the sculptor. It is without doubt one of the finest and most artistic Soldiers' Monuments in the country and Bostonians are particularly proud of it.

The Dedication Exercises were particularly impressive. Over 25,000 men marched in the procession, including the

militia of the State, the veterans of the Grand Army of the Republic, the leading generals of the Civil War, the State and city officials, civic societies, school children, etc. The procession marched over a route more than six miles long, and was four hours in pasing a given point. The principal feature of the dedication ceremonies was the oration by General Charles Devens.

Soldiers' Monument, Boston Common.

Boston Libraries

In the number, variety and value of its Libraries, Boston leads all American cities and will compare favorably with European capitals. It is well named the "Modern Athens," for these libraries make it the seat of literature and science, a

The Boston Public Library

most desirable centre for the student and scholar. In these libraries there are not only many thousands of books, but also several hundred thousand pamphlets. Access to all of the libraries may easily be obtained by any one desiring to use them. The oldest library is that of the "Massachusetts Historical Society, located at 1154 Boylston Street. This library was founded in 1791, and its object was to preserve for reference, all books, pamphlets and manuscripts containing historical facts. In 1856, Mr. Thomas Dowse presented the Society with 5,000 finely bound volumes, and many choice works. The library contains many local histories, and many histories

of the Civil War. While the membership is limited to 100, the library may be used by anyone.

For many years the Society had its headquarters in the attic of Faneuil Hall, but it is now well housed on Boylston Street. In its rooms the visitor may see many relics of great historic interest. There are the swords of Myles Standish, Governor Carver, Governor Brooks, Colonel Prescott, Sir William Pepperell, Captain Linzee and Colonel Church. There also is a silk flag presented by Governor John Hancock, to a colored company called the "Bucks of America"; King Philip's samp bowl; the desk used for many years by the Speaker of the House of Representatives in the Old State House; an oak chair made in London in 1614, and brought over in the "Mayflower" by Edward Winslow. There are portraits of Governors Winthrop, Endicott, Winslow, Dummer, Belcher, Hutchinson, Story Gore and others. The librarian is Dr. Samuel A. Green.

THE BOSTON ATHENAEUM

The Boston Athenaeum occupies a fine building on Beacon Street. It grew out of a Reading Club, established by a number of Boston gentlemen in 1807. At first it included a museum of natural history and an art gallery, but later on, the curios and collections were transferred to societies devoted to these different objects. The right to use the library is confined to the stockholders and their families. These stockholders pay annual assessments which entitles them to take books from the building. About 3000 volumes are added to the library every year. It was originally located on Congress Street but in 1849, it erected and moved into the handsome building on the south side of Beacon Street, between Bowdoin and Somerset streets. In 1848 the corporation purchased the library of George Washington at a cost of $4,000. There are many interesting and valuable collections on its shelves.

THE BOSTON PUBLIC LIBRARY

The Boston Public Library was authorized in 1848, and was first opened in 1854 on Mason Street, the Hon. Edward Everett being the first president of the board of trustees. He made a gift of 1,000 books to the Library. Today the library

is one of the largeset in the country having over 900,000 books. For many years after leaving Mason Street, it was located on Boylston Street, directly opposite the Common, in a fine brick building erected by the city. In 1852, Joshua Bates of London gave the Library $50,000, and $50,000 worth of books. Mr. George Ticknor, a well-known Bostonian, for many years at the "Old Corner Bookstore," gave the library nearly 7,500 books, including his very valuable Spanish collection. The sons of Nathaniel Bowditch, gave their father's library of over 2500 books and manuscripts. Abbott Lawrence, Mary P. Townsend, and Jonathan Phillips, made liberal bequests, amounting to nearly $50,000. The Prince collection, which, in 1758 was deeded to the Old South Church, is now on the shelves of the Library. Several years ago it secured a fine collection of 12,000 volumes including the best Shakesperian collection in the country. It has many branches in different sections of the city, in South Boston, East Boston, North End, South End, Roxbury, Charlestown, Brighton, Jamaica Plain and Dorchester. Its advantages are open to all, and is much appreciated by all classes of citizens, and ranks as one of the largest libraries in the world for free circulation. The Library now occupies the magnificent building on Dartmouth Street between Huntington Avenue and Boylston Street. On the front is this inscription "Built by the people and dedicated to the advancement of learning." It ranks among the very finest library buildings in the world and stands second only to the Congressional Library in Washington, D. C.

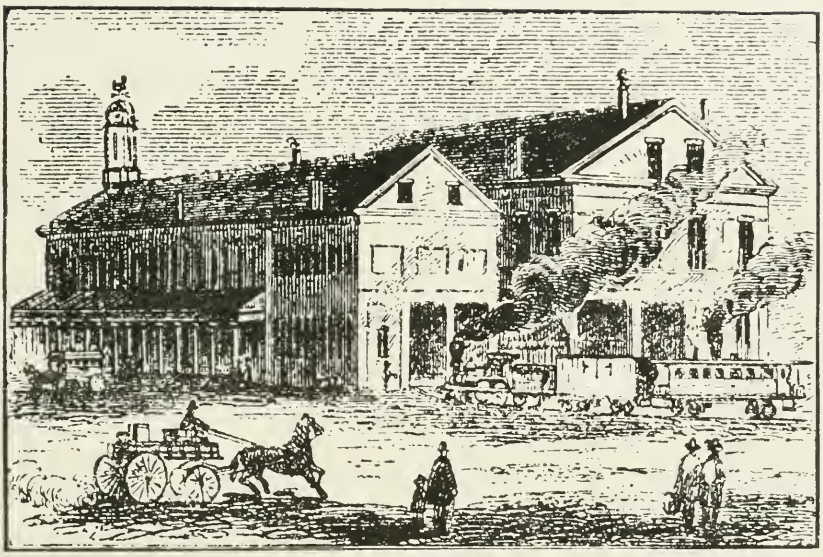
The City of Boston has six million dollars invested in its public library system. The cost of maintenance approaches $400,000 annually, and it grows year by year.

"As an investment it shows returns whose value cannot be computed in dollars and cents, but whose influence upon popular enlightenment and whose contribution to popular entertainment are manifest. More than 800,000 volumes are collected and classified in the Central Library; more than a quarter of a million are placed in the 13 branch libraries. There are 17 reading rooms, open to all, each of which is a delivery station, with some 2,000 periodicals and newspapers, available for those who come there. The Public Library statistics are impressive of its value. In 1913, our people were supplied with books to read to the number of 1,848,973."

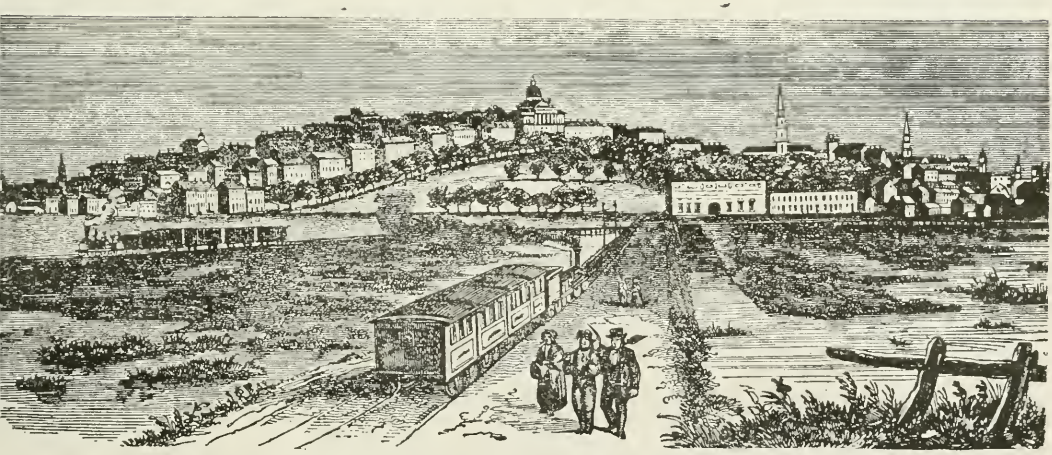
Union Bank Building
40 State Street, 1850

Built about 1810. Here was the house and dry goods shop of Anthony Stoddard, the richest Bostonian and greatest real estate operator of his time. The record of his death in 1687 says: "He was the ancientist shopkeeper in towne." Stoddard's house seems to have been the State's Arms Tavern, where the Magistrates of the town dined, and was succeeded by the Royal Custom House. The Stock Exchange was here in the early fifties. This corner was starting point for first regular stage-coach to New York City in 1772.—From Historic Prints, published by the State Street Trust Company.

Union Bank Building, 40 *State Street*—1850



Old Boston & Albany R. R. Depot, 1850



A view of Boston in 1840 *from the Back Bay.*

The Merchants' Exchange, State Street

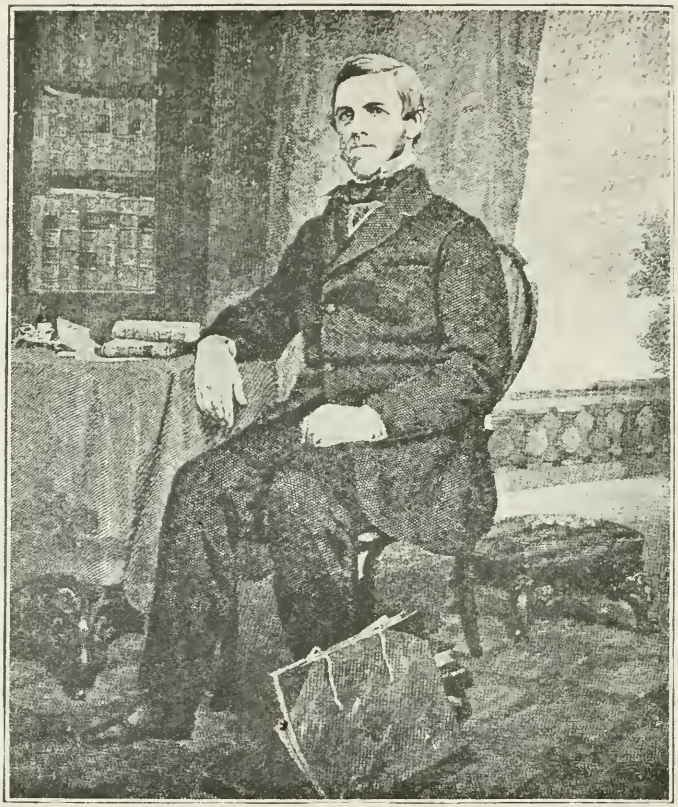
The large building in the foreground is the Merchants' Exchange as it looked in 1850 to 1860. It was built in 1841 and was for many years a most imposing structure. In the centre of the front was a large and magnificent piece of carving in Quincy granite of a Horn of Plenty, and as the writer has been informed was done at the State Prison. On the lower floor of the building the Boston Post Office was located for many years. On the second floor was the Merchants' Exchange where were files of home and foreign papers, and many items of interest to merchants. The building on the extreme right of the cut with the arched windows was the home of the Washington Bank. In the three-story building on the corner of State and Kilby Streets were the offices of the Firemen's Fund Insurance Company, on the second floor were the Banking rooms of the Bank of North America, and the top floor was the office of the Boston Clearing House.

Merchants Exchange Building, State Street, 1850

Dr. Oliver Wendell Holmes

"The year 1809 was the birth year of a large number of famous and brilliant men. William E. Gladstone, the grand old statesman; Chopin and Mendelssohn, masters in music; Charles Darwin, the great modern scientist; Samuel F. Smith, the author of our great national hymn "America;" Alfred Tennyson, England's great poet; and Abraham Lincoln, the grandest figure of modern times." In that same year our genial and gifted Oliver Wendell Holmes, known the world over as the "Autocrat of the Breakfast Table," was born August 29, in an old gambrel roof house on Massachusetts Avenue, Cambridge, under the shadow of Harvard University. His father was a minister, his mother was the daughter of Judge Wendell, a noted Revolutionary patriot. New England claims Oliver Wendell Holmes particularly as her own. As one has said, "He passed his life among her cities, and gently rolling hills, which he dearly loved; he supported her best impulses, her foremost institutions, he knew, in short, no other world." In thinking of him we look at his literary genius and ability, and almost forget that he was a most capable physician. After studying medicine very thoroughly in Boston, he went to Paris and finished there. Returning to America he commenced his practice in Boston. He won four Boylston prizes in two years as Professor of Anatomy at Dartmouth, and later became the Professor of Anatomy at the Harvard Medical School. He was a skillful dissecter, a life long medical educator and revolutionized the treatment of a most dangerous epidemic fever. In his genial humor he often referred to his chair of medicine as his "settee." For many years he was a constant contributor to the "Boston Medical and Surgical Journal," which was published by that well known Boston printer, David Clapp, whose office was on the north corner of Franklin and Washington Streets. Dr. Holmes and Mr. Clapp were warm personal friends. In an article entitled "The Evolution of the South End," published some years ago in the "Boston Globe" and written by

Dr. Bundy an old time resident and physician in that section, he relates a little personal experience showing the humorous side of Dr. Holmes' nature. In 1860, Dr. Bundy was a student at the Harvard Medical School, and his special instructor was Dr. Holmes. He says: "the genial doctor was famous for his practical jokes, and I shall always



Oliver Wendell Holmes

remember an incident of which I was an innocent victim. The doctor once gave me a skull as a home lesson, with instructions to find out all I could about it and give a recitation or statement of the result of my study. Well, I took the skull home and pondered over it all the evening. I no-

ticed all the points I could think of, until I regarded myself as 'letter perfect' for my examination. Returning the next day, with my not cheerful companion, the skull, Dr. Holmes, at the recitation room took down from a near by shelf another skull and he said to me, 'Bundy, tell us what you know about that skull.'" Well, I began and told all I thought I knew about it and I flattered myself I had done very well for a student.

"Now, Bundy," said Dr. Holmes, pointing to a hole in the top of skull number two, "what foramen (a technical term for a cavity) is that?" "I was puzzled," said Dr. Bundy, "for that hole was not in the skull which I took home." "I was deeply meditating what that particular aperture in that particular place could be, when I detected a twinkle in the eyes of the autocrat." "Well, Bundy," said Dr. Holmes, "that foramen is simply the screw hole that was bored, for the purpose of hanging the skeleton to which this skull was once attached in its own closet." That joke was on me, as the latter day vernacular has it, and many a time has Dr. Holmes and myself, especially the former, had a good laugh over it." Dr. Holmes, by his writings and his songs and his genial manner, became dearly loved by all New England, and he won the love of all mankind. "Now genial, with humor, he sympathized with the foibles of a brother. Now, deeply touched with loss, he mourned a departed friend. Now, welling up with furious indignation, he pours out a stirring protest against an unpatriotic desecration."

"Oh Carolina, Carolina, child of the sun,
We can never forget that our hearts have been one,
Our foreheads both sprinkled in Liberty's name,
From the fountain of blood with the finger of fame,
Go, then, our rash sister, afar and aloof,
Run wild in the sunshine, away from our roof,
But when your heart aches, and your feet have grown sore,
Remember the pathway that leads to our door."

"With the simple imagery of a sea shell in one of the most beautiful passages of all verse, he proclaimed his belief in the immortality of the soul."

"Build thee more stately mansions, O my soul,
As the swift seasons roll!

Let each new temple, nobler than the last,
Shut thee from heaven with a dome more vast,
Till thou, at length art free,
Leaving thine outgrown shell, by life's unresting sea."

For over fifty years his stirring lines on "Old Ironsides" have been declaimed by thousands of school boys. They were written when he was quite a young man, a student in the Harvard Medical School. He was greatly beloved by his classmates at Harvard and his talents were always in demand, and cheerfully given at the class reunions. He wrote 44 poems for those occasions. That class of 1829 was a famous one, and their reunions have been immortalized by the tender and graceful verses of Dr. Holmes. His class poem, "The Boys" is a fine specimen of his quaint and genial humor.

"Has any old fellow got mixed with the boys?
If there has, take him out, without making a noise.
Hang the almanac's cheat, and the catalogue's spite!
Old Time is a liar! We're 20 tonight!"

Writing to Julia Ward Howe on her 70th birthday, he says: "To be seventy years young is some times far more cheerful and hopeful than to be forty years old." He had three Boston homes: in Montgomery Place where he lived eighteen years; then on the river side of Charles Street and from 1870 on the river side of Beacon Street. His summers were spent in Beverly. On one occasion, his old friend, James T. Fields, the author and publisher, wrote him from "Manchester-by-the-Sea," and Holmes, in his answer termed his summer town "Beverly, by the Depot."

"There is a humorous vein that runs through most of his poems, always wholesome and mirth provoking and reflecting the kind and sunny temperament of the man, but he once wrote, 'It would be one of the most agreeable reflections to me if I could feel that I left a few hymns worthy to be rememberd after me.' When Lowell started the 'Atlantic Monthly' in 1859, he secured Dr. Holmes as one of his first contributors."

In the first number of that magazine appeared the first installment of the "Autocrat of the Breakfast Table," pa-

pers. They were always full of bright and witty sayings and of wisdom too. We give just a few quotations.

"Sin has many tools, but a lie is a handle that fits them all."

"Everybody likes and respects self-made men. It is a great deal better to be made in that way, than not to be made at all."

"I find the great thing in this world is not so much where we stand, as in what direction we are moving."

"If you would be happy in Berkshire you must carry mountains in your brain; and if you would enjoy Nahant, you must have an ocean in your soul. Nature plays at dominoes with you. You must match her piece or she will never give it up to you."

"Give us the luxuries of life and we will dispense with the necessaries."

He was intensely proud of Boston and of all her traditions. He carried Boston on his heart and on his tongue and had terrible maledictions for those who attempted to sneer at her. This love of Boston runs all through his "Autocrat Papers."

"Boston is the place to be born in, but if you can't fix it so as to be born here you can come and live here."

"A man can see further, Sir, from the top of the State House, and see more that is worth seeing, than from all the pyramids and turrets and steeples in all the places of the world."

"All that I claim for Boston is that it is the thinking centre of the continent and therefore of the planet."

"The heart of the world beats under the three hills of Boston, sir."

"This is the great macadamizing place, always cracking up something."

"Boston's State House is the hub of the solar system. You couldn't pry that out of a Boston man if you had the tire of all creation straightened out for a crowbar."

"How high is Boston's 'meetinghouse?' As high as the first steps of the stairs that lead to the New Jerusalem. Isn't that high enough?"

"Full of crooked little streets; but I tell you, Boston has opened and kept open more turnpikes that lead straight to free thought and free speech and free deeds than any other

city of live men or dead men, I don't care how broad their streets, nor how high their steeples."

One of his most stirring and patriotic poems was entitled "Union and Liberty" and written about the time of the Civil War.

UNION AND LIBERTY.

By Oliver Wendell Holmes.

Flag of the heroes who left us their glory,
Borne through their battle-fields' thunder and flame,
Blazoned in song and illumined in story,
Wave o'er us all who inherit their fame!
Up with our banner bright,
Sprinkled with starry light,
Spread its fair emblems from mountain to shore,
While through the sounding sky
Loud rings the Nation's cry,—
Union and Liberty! One evermore!

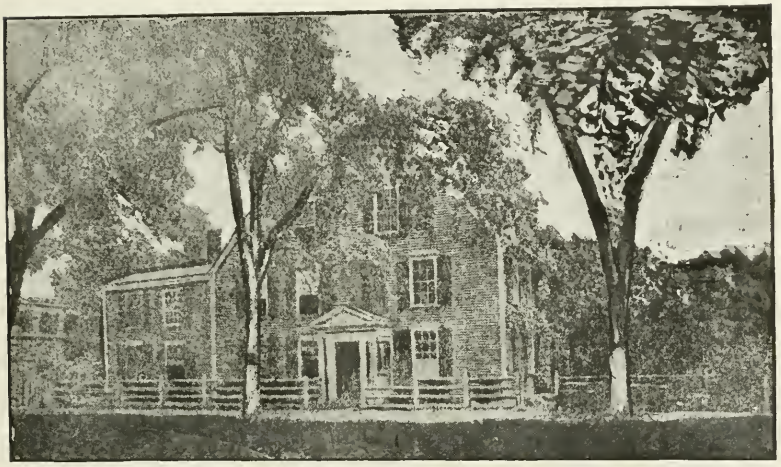
Light of our firmament, guide of our Nation,
Pride of her children, and honored afar,
Let the wide beams of thy full constellation
Scatter each cloud that would darken a star!

Empire unsceptred! what foe shall assail thee,
Bearing the standard of Liberty's van?
Think not the God of thy fathers shall fail thee,
Striving with men for the birthright of man!

Yet if, by madness and treachery blighted,
Dawns the dark hour when the sword thou must draw,
Then with the arms of thy millions united,
Smite the bold traitors to Freedom and Law!

Lord of the Universe! shield us and guide us,
Trusting Thee always, through shadow and sun!
Thou hast united us, who shall divide us?
Keep us, oh keep us, the Many in One!
Up with our banner bright,
Sprinkled with starry light,
Spread its fair emblems from mountain to shore,
While through the sounding sky
Loud rings the Nation's cry,—
Union and Liberty! One evermore!

On the 3rd of December, 1879, a notable gathering was held at Hotel Brunswick. It was a breakfast given by the proprietors of the "Atlantic Monthly" in honor of Oliver Wendell Holmes who, on August 29th previous, had attained his 70th birthday. We have spoken of the many poems written by Dr. Holmes for his class reunions. One of the last and the most touching of them all was that written for the reunion of 1889, and entitled



Birthplace of Oliver Wendell Holmes, Cambridge

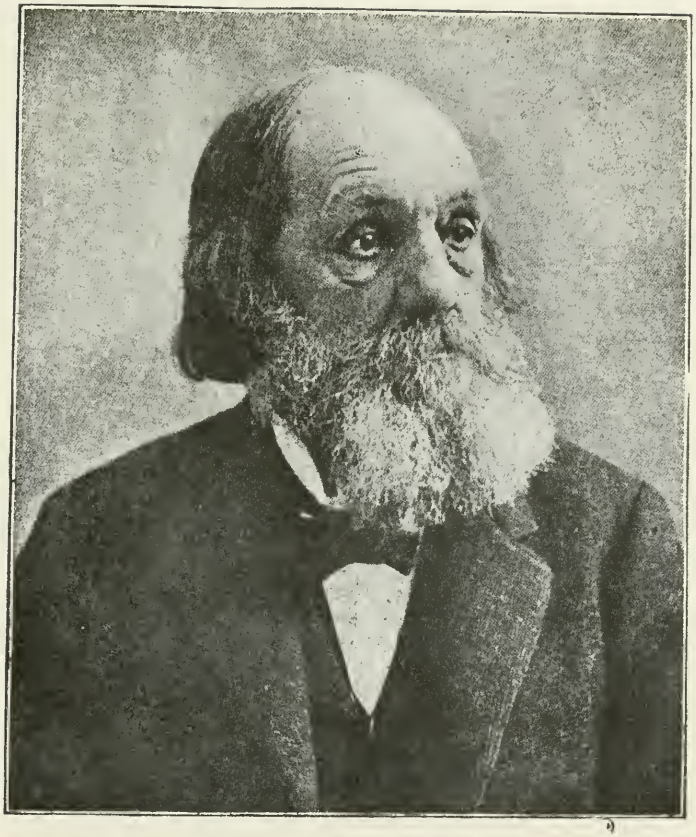
AFER THE CURFEW.

"So ends 'The Boys'—a lifelong play,
We, too, must hear the prompter's call.
To fairer scene, and brighter day,
Farewell! I let the curtain fall!"

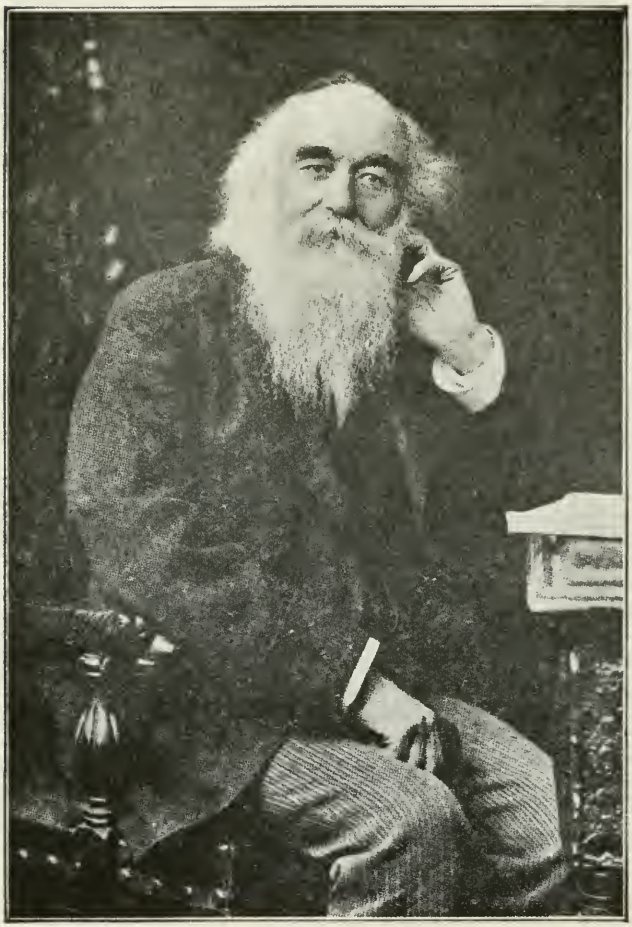
Rev. Edward Everett Hale, D. D.

Boston's "Grand Old Man" came of a distinguished New England family. He was born in Boston, April 3, 1822, and died June 10, 1909, and was the son of Nathan Hale, the editor of the Boston Daily Advertiser, in its day the leading business paper in New England, which had the honor of publishing the first daily paper in the country. Dr. Hale's early home in Boston was on School Street, near the Parker House, and in his autobiography he gives an interesting account of home life in the Hale homestead, of his early friends and the social life of Boston in those days. His father was not only prominent in business circles, but of great influence politically, and entertained as guests at his home many of the great men of the country. Young Hale had rare opportunities of meeting and studying the men at close range and in this way formed not a few lasting friendships with some of them. He received a liberal education, graduating from Harvard in 1839. While there he was associated with some brilliant young men who became distinguished in after life in the various professions. His life of James Russell Lowell is a beautiful tribute to a dear and life-long college friend as well as a record of great achievements. After his graduation from Harvard he took a theological course, having chosen the ministry for his profession, and later became pastor of the Church of the Unity in Worcester, where he remained for ten years. In 1856 he returned to Boston and assumed the pastorate of the South Congregational Church and remained in that position until his death.

He became eminent as a preacher and "was also a voluminous writer, writing many books, and some of his stories, notably 'The Man without a Country,' have become classics." Dr. Hale was a sympathetic, broad-minded man, and active in many organizations for the uplift of humanity, and his death was deeply mourned by the entire community. He was chaplain of the United States Senate at the time of his death.



Rev. Edward Everett Hale, D. D.



George E. McNeill, Boston's Great Labor Reformer

George E. McNeill

"George E. McNeill was born in the town of Amesbury, Mass., on August 4, 1837, and died at Somerville, May 19, 1906. At an early age Mr. McNeill was imbued with a strong love of liberty; a hatred of oppression of every sort, and with an earnest desire to aid in the bettering of the down-trodden. It would be impossible, in the space allotted to this brief sketch, to even enumerate the many reform movements in which Mr. McNeill took an active part. He was a broad-minded, many-sided man, whose advice and counsel was sought by men in various walks of life. Insurance people looked to him as an insurance man whose principle of justice and equity was the ruling feature of his career. Laborers and working men looked to him as a friend in time of need. The weak, when oppressed by the strong, came to him for protection, and never came in vain. His voice and pen were always ready to protect the oppressed against the oppressor, not only at home but in foreign lands.

The early life of George E. McNeill was one of toil and trial. In his pocket there was poverty at the start, which he later, through frugality, turned into plenty for his moderate desires. In his heart there was always a riotous wealth of riches, which he never squandered, never even lessened: indeed, while he was prodigal in the use of the graces which his heart always possessed, so apt was he in finding good in everything and everybody, that he was ever accumulating, while always dispensing, goodness. At the age of ten he began to work in a woolen mill in his native town of Amesbury. Afterwards he worked in a shoemaker's shop mornings, nights, Saturdays and holidays, attending school between times, and graduating from the grammar school of Amesbury. For the work he did in the shoemaker's shop, he received a kit of shoemaker's tools. When about twenty years of age, young McNeill came to Boston and obtained employment as mailing clerk in a newspaper office. At about this time, he began writing for newspapers on political and labor subjects. He had a deep sympathy for the working men. He felt the injustice of long hours of labor with no chance for advancement, and was continually interested in the shortening of the hours of labor, so that the working people would have an opportunity for moral and intellectual advancement. He found-

ed a great many labor organizations of one sort and another, and was really, as he has often been called, the "father of the eight-hour law," for which he began work in Governor Claflin's administration. He was the editor of the "Labor Movement—the Problem of Today," which is acknowledged as one of the text books of the labor movement. Mr. McNeill was a member of many commissions appointed by the Legislature and Governor of Massachusetts, having to do with labor and tax laws. As a public speaker, he was fluent, forceful and eminently persuasive. When thoroughly aroused, he possessed a native eloquence which was irresistible. He addressed public meetings all over the country in behalf of better labor laws. Some years ago he went to Washington to address a public meeting, and was escorted from the railroad station to the place of speaking by over ten thousand laboring men and nine bands of music. At one time when he spoke in Chicago, 13,000 laboring men came to hear him. His reputation had become international by this time. His positive convictions, his persistent energy, made him a figure which could not be overlooked. In all affairs he was sagacious, prudent and honorable. Mr. McNeill's interest in safeguarding laboring men and women from accidents, his desire to establish ways and means for the prevention of accidents, probably led him to establish in 1883, the accident insurance company, now known as the Massachusetts Accident Company, of which he was manager up to the time of his death. His conception of the responsibility of those conducting the insurance business is manifested in the following extract from the last article ever penned by his hand:

"The insurance business in all its branches is more than a commercial enterprise. It is primarily an institution for the relief of humanity in times of distress; it holds its protecting shield over the widow and orphan; it soothes the mental anguish on the bed of pain; it gives courage to those weakened by disaster; it encourages and expresses sympathy; it is Christian in that it cares for the disabled ones; it lessens some of the burdens of life by a system of distribution of loss. Whoever forgets these primary purposes of insurance is guilty not only of self debasement, but of the debasement of his associates."

Mr. G. Leonard McNeill, for many years its most efficient secretary, is now the president of the Massachusetts Accident

Company and is "a most worthy son of a noble sire." The Rev. Frank O. Hall, who delivered Mr. McNeill's euolgy, truly said, that he was a man "who by his loving, helpful life and the sweetness and simplicity of his character, and the keenness of his thought, proved himself worthy both of respect and affection. It is impossible to estimate how much he did for the advancement of the common people, and although his energy and his work accomplished much, the influence of his character and of his personality accomplished more. No man could stand for long in the presence of Mr. McNeill, or look into his wonderful face without being struck by the fact that he was a remarkable man. One instantly recognized that he was a man of character, and that in him he had found a friend" At the Convention of the Interntional Association of Accident Underwriters, held at Frontenac, Thousand Islands, in July, 1907, Mr. Max Cohen of Washington, D. C., suggested the propriety of the association commemorating the services of the late George E. McNeill, and at the same time expressing its appreciation of acts of heroism in annually awarding one, or more medals. The suggestion met with instant approval and was referred to the Executive Committee. A design prepared by Tiffany & Co. was accepted and it was voted to award from one to three medals annually. Several of these Medals have already been awarded with appropriate exercises.

Mr. McNeill was a poet of fine imagination, and a few years before his death published a little volume of poems. One of them he sent to many of his friends on the Christmas preceding his death and is especially tender and beautiful.

"Would we but follow where the Christ star leads,
Through deserts wide of poverty and want,
Through swamps of sin and over rocks of pride,
To humble mangers where the poor are housed—
Then in our souls exultingly would sound
The Christmas song of 'peace, good will to man.'

Our gold, and frankincense, and myrrh, we lay
At the dear feet of Him, who came to save.
Follow ye, the Master, in word and deed,—
Lift up the fallen, welcome the straying,
Soothe the disconsolate with hope and cheer—
Welcome, then, Christmas song 'Peace and good will!'"

Temple Place

In studying the growth of Boston, it will be found that not a few of the business streets of today were originally, narrow alleys. In 1708, Temple Place was known as "Turn-again Alley" and for a hundred years it remained obscure and neglected. The only carriage entrance was from Tremont Street. People coming from Tremont Street descended a flight of wooden steps to reach Washington Street. All this was changed in 1830, when the Masonic Temple was erected on the site now occupied by the store of R. H. Stearns & Co. After that it was lined with handsome residences occupied by the most aristocratic families in Boston. One of the prominent of these was the Hon. Thomas H. Perkins, one of the most public spirited and generous citi- quite an amusing episode and Sheriff Greenleaf and Colonel tate on Pearl Street, which he gave for a Blind Asylum when it was proposed to start an Institution for the care and education of these unfortunates. This institution, which today is of national and worldwide reputation, still bears his honored name. He erected on Temple Place one of the finest dwelling houses in Boston. "The large front door was made of wood from the frigate Constitution." The elegant house is now occupied by the Provident Savings Institution, and various business offices. We have elsewhere alluded to the Washington Gardens, that famous place of resort for old time Bostonians. They were located on the southern corner of Tremont Street and Temple Place. In Revolutionary days, the house of Stephen Greenleaf, the Sheriff of Suffolk County, stood there.

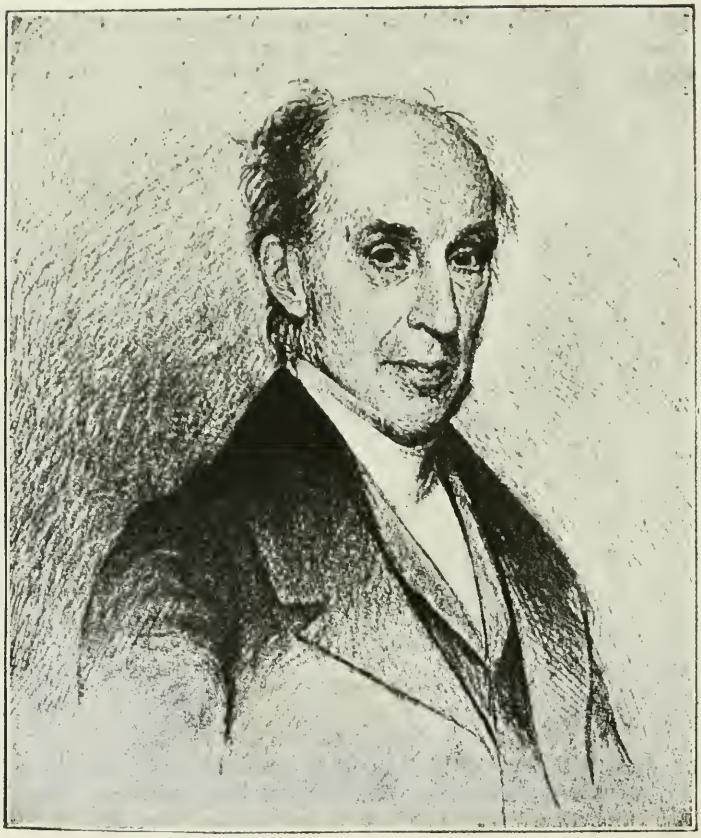
He was a stanch loyalist, and with his friends, the Royal Governor and British officers, was badly worsted, when he came into collision with some citizens of Boston in 1768, in the days of the Stamp Act.

In an effort to forcibly enter and take possession of a large house occupied by many tenants, Greenleaf and his aids, were trapped into a cellar and there confined until relieved by a file of British soldiers from the Common. It was quite an amusing episode and Sheriff Greeleaf and Colonel Dalrymple, became the laughing stock of the town, and all the more enjoyable was it to the citizens, because Colonel Dalrymple was a most haughty and overbearing man. Much

to his regret, he, and his regiment were ordered to Castle William (Fort Independence) by Governor Hutchinson, in response to the demands of the citizens of Boston, led by Samuel Adams. The building where Greenleaf and his friends were confined was the Manufacturing House, which stood on Hamilton Place and was torn down in 1804. The house of Greenleaf's was torn down and a block built on Tremont Street to West Street and that portion of Tremont Street was known as "Cape Cod Row."

Temple Place, 1850

In those days the large hall of the Masonic Building was used for concerts, being well adapted for the purpose as it was centrally located and had excellent acoustic properties, and many celebrated musicians were heard there. The cut represents Temple Place in 1865 at the close of the Civil War, before it had become such a business centre. Winter Street and Temple Place, for their length, are two of the busiest streets in Boston. The tide of travel through these streets surges daily in an almost irresistible and ceaseless flow. "It is surprising how in one generation the encroachments of trade have drawn every family from Tremont Street, extending from Court Street to Boylston Street," a street that was once occupied by wealthy residents.



Charles Bulfinch, Architect of the State House

Parker's Restaurant and the Parker House

Mr. Harvey D. Parker was born in Temple, Maine, May 10, 1805. He came of good old English stock, being descended from Thomas Parker, who came to America in 1636. This pioneer Parker was one of the incorporators of the town of Reading, when it was cut off from Lynn. When Harvey D. Parker was quite a lad, the family moved from Temple to Paris, Maine, and here he "mowed and hoed and held the plough" until he was 20 years of age. Then, with a stout heart and $4.00 in his pocket, he started on foot for Boston to carve out his fortune. He soon found employment, and for eight years he led a busy life in the great city, living prudently, carefully guarding his surplus earnings, that he might carry out the cherished desire of his heart, that of "providing people with necessary facilities for eating well." At twenty-eight years of age he commenced his famous career as a restaurateur in a basement, No. 4 Court Square, corner of Court Street. A portion of Young's Hotel now covers the spot. It was a small room, rather low and dark, and by no means attractive, but the quality of the food was most excellent and the prices very reasonable. This he named "Parker's Restaurant." He seemed to understand just what kind of food the people wanted and just how they liked to have it cooked. Arrayed in white apron, he personally served his customers, and he aimed to make the service in his restaurant, and later in the hotel, as near perfect as possible. His fame spread throughout the city and even far beyond the city limits. His patronage grew constantly and "Parker's Restaurant" became the best patronized and most popular dining room in Boston.

An old Bill of Fare, a relic of that good old restaurant, is an interesting study for epicures. For 12 1-2 cents one could get fresh eggs, boiled, fried or scrambled, or a lobster salad, or a welsh rarebit. Soups were 12 1-2 cents, with the exception of green turtle, which was 37 1-2 cents. Fried cod, perch or mackerel was 25 cents. For 37 1-2 cents one could have an order of boiled halibut, broiled mutton, corned beef, roast chicken, beef, pig, lamb, or green goose, with a variety of

vegetables. Lobsters were cheap in those days, and were fresh from the lobster pots of Boston Harbor. A generous order of plain, or salad for 25 cents, but a 12 1-2 cent order would satisfy an ordinary appetite. A choice tenderloin steak, with nice bread and butter, and vegetables was 37 1-2 cents. Oysters

Parker House, Boston

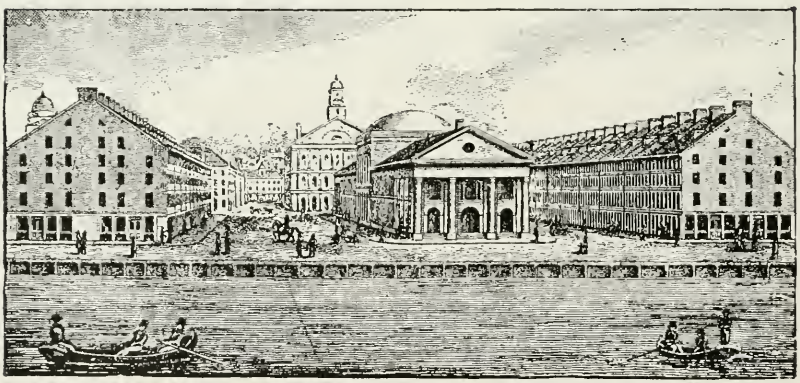
were high in those days, being 37 1-2 cents a dozen on the half shell. On the back of this old bill of fare, Mr. Parker informs his patrons who pay by the week that they "can order only from the dishes already cooked, and that each dish includes vegetables, etc." This fractional currency was made possible by the Spanish silver coins then in circulation, such as "four pence ha' penny" or 6 1-4 cents, and nine pence, 12 1-2 cents.

A quarter of a dollar and a "nine pence", or three nine pences, would amount to 37 1-2 cents.

Mr. John A. Remick, who was a regular patron, writing concerning it says: "Parker's establishment was always furnished with an outfit of solid silver ware, till the Civil War advanced the price of silver nearly three fold, when he sold all his silver at a handsome profit, and ever after used the best plated ware." Mr. Parker remained in his original location several years, but his business had outgrown the room and he must have larger quarters to accommodate his patrons. So he began looking around for a location, and chose the Boylston Estate on School Street and "in 1854 built a large building that was both a hotel and a restaurant, and called it the Parker House. This was the first attempt made in Boston to conduct a hotel, without a fixed hour for meals, and it met with immediate success." The Parker House became as popular as the Restaurant, and four years later he was obliged to double the size of the house, and in two years that was crowded. The fame of the Parker House is world wide and its founder was a leader in the American hotel business, and a thorough master in all the details of a hotel. He was the inventor of the so-called 'American plan where everything is provided in the cost of a day.' He was quick to perceive, prompt to act, and he had sound judgment." During the war certain well known military commanders were always welcome guests at the Parker House without charge, the prestige of their presence having been regarded as an advertisement that much more than compensated for what they ate or drank. This same custom was followed by his successor, J. Reed Whipple, who entertained President McKinley in most royal manner at the Hotel Touraine on the occasion of his last visit to Boston.

After years of watchful waiting the Parker House secured the lot on the corner of School and Tremont Streets and erected a beautiful building on its site, as an addition to the hotel.

Boston Custom House, 1830



Quincy Market, 1840

Musical Festivals

The decade following the Civil War was marked by two great events which substantiated the claim of Boston as the great musical center of the country. In 1869, under the direction of that great organizer and musician, Patick S. Gilmore, was held the

NATIONAL PEACE JUBILEE

Application was made for the use of the Common on which to erect a temporary Peace Jubilee Building, or Coliseum, but as strong opposition was made to it, it was decided to build it in the Back Bay. The Coliseum occupied part of the site where Trinity Church now stands, and extended to the lot of the old Art Museum.

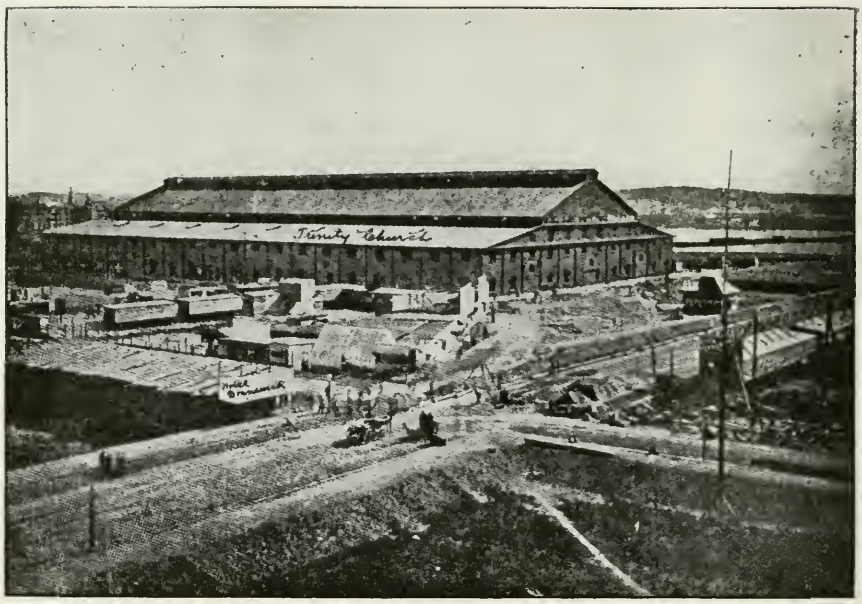
A recent writer in the Boston Post says: "The Coliseum was a stupendous enterprise for a city the size of Boston in 1869, a city still suffering from the incalculable losses of the Civil War. When filled, the great wooden building held 50,000 people, and was the largest structure in the country. But the mere size is not so astounding as the fact that the building was constructed, solely, for a musical festival to last but five days. Yet so musically mad were the public, that the receipts for the five days, not only paid the expenses, which amounted to over a quarter of a million dollars, but yielded a profit of $10,000.

The peace jubilee was carried to a successful conclusion by the enthusiastic determination of Patrick S. Gilmore, a popular bandmaster, who refused to be defeated by rebuffs or scoffing. He was fortunate in securing the alliance of many public spirited business men, who continued to pour money into the treasury, when it seemed as though the gigantic enterprise was doomed to absolute failure."

The Festival was held June 1-19, 1869. We know of no excitement of recent years that can begin to compare with that which raged in and about the Coliseum during those five days. In the audience were people from every State in the Union, and there was the wildest applause and enthusiasm after every selection.

Many Bostonians now living were in that audience day after day as members of that chorus of 10,000 voices, and to their dying day will never forget the wonderful scenes which they witnessed there. The great musical artists, Ole Bull and Carl Rosa, were first violinists to the orchestra of 1000 pieces, and the two greatest singers of the day, Parepa-Rosa and Adelaide Phillips, leaders of the great chorus.

When the closing strains of "The Star Spangled Ban-



The Coliseum

ner" and "America" were sung, bells all over the city were rung, and the guns of a battery near the Coliseum were booming. When the "Anvil Chorus" was given, 1000 red-coated firemen gave the resounding clang on as many anvils.

Nearly every seat was occupied at every performance. Many distinguished guests were present, among them President Grant and Admiral Farragut. It was thought by many that such a volume of sound would be deafening, but

such was not the fact, the great orchestra and the tremendous chorus kept excellent time, and the whole effect was most pleasing.

The whole undertaking was a remarkable success, and as we have already said, excited the most unrestrained enthusiasm both on account of its musical features and its patriotic tendency.

The year 1872 was also an eventful year in the same line. From June 17th to July 7th the second grand

MUSICAL FESTIVAL

was held and attended by 30,000 to 100,000 people daily. It was held in a temporary Coliseum of vast size, and special national musical features were introduced by bands from England, France, Germany and other countries.

Johann Strauss led the orchestra, while it played his own waltzes, among others, the "Beautiful Blue Danube."

In connection with the Festival, a grand ball was given and General U. S. Grant was present. Athough the Festival was a grand success from a musical point of view fully equalling the peace jubilee of 1869, it was not remunerative, financially, to the projectors and shareholders.

The Old South Church

The first edifice of the Old South Society was erected in 1669 on the corner of Washington and Milk Streets. This site was originally the garden of Governor Winthrop, adjoining his house which stood on Washington Street directly opposite School Street. The Church worshipped in the old wooden building until 1729, when that was taken down and the present brick structure was erected. There are more historical traditions and associations centered in that old brick house of worship than in any other church building in America. If Faneuil Hall is the "Cradle of Liberty," the Old South may well be called the "Sanctuary of Freedom."

Tablet.

OLD SOUTH MEETING HOUSE

On this site was built A. D., 1670, in the garden originally granted to John Winthrop, the first Meeting House of the Third or South Church, in which Benjamin Franklin was baptized on the day of his birth, January 17th, 1706.

The present structure was built in 1729.

Here were held many of the Town Meetings from 1761 to 1775.

Here Otis, Adams, Hancock and Warren helped to mould public opinion.

Here on March 6, 1770, after the Boston Massacre, by unanimous vote the Town People demanded the removal of the King's Regiments.

December 16, 1773, was held the meeting which preceded the Destruction of the Tea.

Here were delivered from 1771 to 1775 the Annual Orations By Lowell, Warren, Church and Hancock,

which kept the memory of the Massacre fresh in the minds of the people.

This Building is a Landmark

When Faneuil Hall could not contain the crowd of liberty loving Americans, they adjourned to the Old South Meeting

House. It stands by the side of Old Faneuil Hall as a forum of free speech. Here was uttered the prayer, the efficiency of which piety and faith do not doubt, for the deliverance of New England from the formidable French Armada that threatened its destruction in 1746. In the old pulpit such great divines as Thatcher, Willard, Sewall, Prince, Hunt-

Old South in Revolutionary Times

ington, Wesner, Blagden and Manning, have stood and preached the Word of God, and by their lives illustrated the sincerity of their preaching. That great apostle of Christianity, George Whitefield, preached in its pulpit. Benjamin Franklin, who was born directly opposite the church, was baptized at its font, and worshipped in this church during his

residence in Boston. Its walls have resounded with denunciations of British tyranny, and with stirring appeals to patriotic action by such leaders as Samuel Adams, John Hancock, Josiah Quincy, Wm. Molineaux and Dr. Joseph Warren. As one writer has said, "The great Town Meetings in the Old South Meeting House proved more than a match for the British Parliament. Here Otis, 'that flame of fire,' protested against the imprisonment of seamen and other oppressive measures of the mother country." On the Fifth of March, 1775, the fourth anniversary of the Boston Massacre, Dr. Joseph Warren delivered a great commemorate address from its pulpit. There is quite a little history attached to this event. The day came on Sunday, and the patriots decided to have their celebration on Monday. There was a large force of British soldiers in the town and more on their way, for it was the time of the Boston Port Bill. There were fortifications everywhere and the citizens were treated as residents of a conquered town. The Governor did all he could to crush the spirit of the people, but they were adroit and worked in secret. An order went forth prohibiting the calling of town meetings. The people evaded this order from time to time so they called no new meeting, perplexing the Governor, who did not dare to take a bold stand and break up a meeting while in session. When the time drew near for this celebration of the Fifth of March, the rumor went out, "that any making an ovation at that time, and especially anyone making any reflection upon the royal family, was liable to arrest and capital punishment." This threat failed to frighten the patriots, who selected as the orator of the occasion that brave and gifted leader, Dr. Joseph Warren. On Monday morning the people met at Faneuil Hall, where they had voted to have the oration, but the crowd was so great they adjourned to the Old South. Dr. Warren was then living on Hanover Street, where the American House now is, and a committee waited on him asking him to give the oration at half past eleven that morning.

Behind the pulpit in the Old South were the leaders of the people, ready to act as a body guard to Dr. Warren should there be an outbreak on the part of the British soldiery. Forty of these British red coats were present, sitting in front of the pulpit and on the steps. They were given this prominent position by Samuel Adams, the leader

of the day, and it was a stage setting worthy of a master in the theatrical art. Adams knew that they had threatened to break up the meeting, so with great politeness he placed them where they could be closely watched by the audience and every movement noted. Meanwhile the church was packed to its utmost capacity. At last Warren arrived, and having arrayed himself in the gown worn by orators of that time, he started to enter the church, but so great was the crowd around the entrance it was impossible to squeeze through without causing a disturbance, which might have proved disastrous, so delicate was the situation. Some of his friends procured a ladder and by means of it he entered an open window back of the pulpit, and in a moment more he was facing his audience. It was a spirited and courageous speech, in which he boldly defended the citizens of Boston from the charge of rebellion—they only asked their rights as British freemen. As he was talking the British soldiers coughed and hemmed and tried to interrupt him by all sorts of noises, but he kept on. One historian describing the scene, says: "While he was speaking and exhorting the people to stand fast by their colors, a young officer who was upon the pulpit stairs, took a handful of bullets out of his pocket, and held them up for the orator and anybody else to see. It was as much as to say, 'Talk as much as you please; we have these, and they will say the last word.' Warren saw him; he merely dropped his handkerchief upon the bullets and covered them with it, and went on with his oration." Only a few weeks later this great and gallant man laid down his life at the Battle of Bunker Hill. On that memorable night, December 16, 1773, a large audience had gathered in the Old South to hear the report of the committee appointed to interview the Consignees of the tea of the East India Company. The report was adverse to the patriotic demands. It was then that Samuel Adams arose and uttered those fateful words: "This meeting can do nothing more to save the country." Immediately the war whoop sounded at the church doors, and a band of men disguised as Indians, made a bee line for Griffin's Wharf, followed by a large portion of the audience, and the Boston Tea Party was that night written in the annals of American history.

During the occupation of Boston by the British in 1775 and 1776, they desecrated the sacred edifice by using it as

a Riding School and they set up a bar within its walls for the sale of intoxicating liquors. They destroyed the valuable library of the pastor, using the books to kindle their fires with. Standing next to the church was the old frame house of Governor Winthrop. This they tore down and used the material for fuel. From the side entrance on Milk Street they ran out a long pole and over this the British cavalrymen leaped their horses. In 1782 the church was refitted for public worship. In August, 1863, the yard of the church was used as one of the recruiting stations for volunteers in the Union Army. A tent, for enlistments in the Forty-fifth Massachusetts Regiment, was set up in the yard, where is now the entrance to the subway. The surgeon had his quarters in the tower, where he made the physical examination of recruits.

The active pastor of the church during the Civil War was the Rev. Jacob M. Manning, D. D., one of Boston's most eloquent and patriotic pastors. Many Bostonians, now living, can recall his timely and helpful sermons during the great struggle, especially those delivered on Fast Days and Thanksgiving Days. It was the writer's privilege to hear him on several occasions, and one sermon, especially, made a deep impression on his mind. It was from the words, "Speak unto the Children of Israel that they go forward." It was during that very dark period of the Civil War when the Union cause was meeting with such terrible reverses, and a deep gloom spread over the hearts of the loyal North. In the light of subsequent events, his words on that occasion sounded prophetic. Throughout his pastorate he sustained the patriotic traditions of the Old South. When the Forty-third Massachusetts Regiment was recruited he entered that regiment and served as its chaplain during its term of nine months. In the same Military Department, and in the same brigade was the Rev. Andrew L. Stone, D. D., of Park Street Church, who was the chaplain of the Forty-fifth Massachusetts Regiment.

These two reverend gentlemen, pastors of the leading Congregational Churches in Boston, rendered most effective service. They were with the Army on the expedition to Goldsborough in December, 1862; a full account of which is given by John S. C. Abbott, the historian, in an article entitled "Heroic Deeds of Heroic Men," published in Harper's Monthly Magazine of December, 1864. They helped and en-

couraged the men on the march, assisted the ambulance corps in bearing off the wounded from the field of battle, and ministered to the wounded and dying. Always carrying themselves as true Christian gentlemen, they won the love and respect of the men. At Kinston, Chaplain Manning had the sad privilege of ministering to Elbridge Graves, of the 45th Massachusetts Regiment, a member of his own church, who received his death wound in that battle. It was by rare good fortune that this revered and valuable landmark was saved from destruction in that great Boston fire of 1872. How it was saved was told very graphically in a Boston paper, a few years ago, and I quote from it: "It was due to the efforts of the Kearsarge Engine Company of Portsmouth, New Hampshire. At half past one that fateful Sunday morning, the captain of the night watch of Portsmouth, received a telegram from Mayor Thomas E. O. Marvin of Portsmouth, asking for assistance. At five minutes past two an alarm was sounded at Portsmouth, and a large detail of firemen to accompany the Kearsarge Engine, a practically new steamer, to Boston. A large detail was made, as it was necessary to draw the engine by hand, as a horse distemper was prevailing at that time throughout New England. They arrived in Boston at 4.45 A. M. and at once proceeded up Washington Street. Not knowing that the call was for out of town service, the men came dressed in their working clothes, in some cases overalls and jumpers, and their nondescript appearance caused a shout from the crowd, "Look at the Haymakers." The Kearsarge was stationed at a Reservoir on Court Square, and a line of hose ran through Court Square, City Hall Avenue, School Street and Washington Street to the Transcript Building. The steamer played through 1,000 feet of hose, and word was given to reach the roof of the Old South, which the steamer Kearsarge did, causing a round of cheers from the Boston firemen and citizens. This extinguished the blaze on the roof, after several other steamers had failed to reach it. After the fire the Old South was closed as a place of worship and for a short time it was occupied as a Post Office.

The Old South Congregation moved into its new and elegant edifice on the corner of Dartmouth and Boylston Streets, which is now known as the "New Old South." The old bell that called so many generations of church goers to worship hangs in the tower of the new edifice.

May the Old South Meeting House stand for generations yet to come, in the busy mart of trade, an inspiration and an object lesson to the youth of Boston, and of all America!

Old South Church, 1916.

In 1876 the old church property had a high value for business purposes, and the church considered the question of selling it, in which case the building would have been torn down, and another great historical landmark would have van-

ished and have become only a memory. This alarming prospect aroused the public spirited citizens of Boston, who protested against it, and Oliver Wendell Holmes wrote a stir-

New Old South Church, 1916.

ring appeal, reminding one of another appeal of his, written in his youthful days, when it was proposed to destroy the historic frigate, the Constitution.

"Woe to the three hilled town
When through the land, the tale is told,

The brave Old South is down.
Here while his brethren stood aloof
The Herald's blast was blown;
That shook St. Stephen's pillared roof
And rocked King George's throne!
The spire still greets the morning sun,
Say, shall it stand or fall?
Help, ere the spoiler has begun,
Help each, and God help all!"

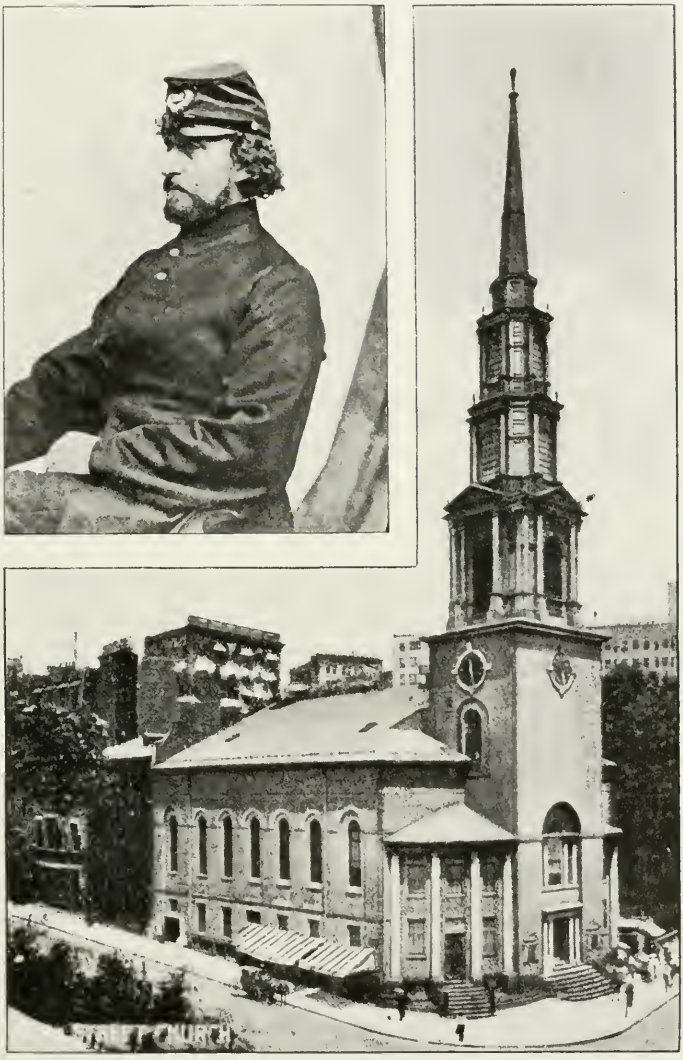
The help came and sufficient funds were raised to save it from destruction. This fine old specimen of Colonial Church Architecture still remains with us and fulfills Whittier's prophecy:

"So long as Boston shall Boston be,
And her bay tides rise and fall,
Shall freedom stand in the Old South Church
And plead for the rights of all!"

Within its walls may now be found many articles of great interest to the visiting stranger, whose pilgrimage would not be complete until he had stood within its walls, his mind reviewing all the memorable scenes that had been enacted there, looking up into the gallery where the majestic form of Washington once stood, and feeling a thrill of patriotism through his whole being.

The present pastor of the New Old South Church, Rev. George A. Gordon, D. D., has shown himself to be especially adapted to this field of labor, and every Sabbath the large audience room is well filled to hear his plain and powerful preaching, and his labors have been very successful in winning the attention of thoughtful men and women and of the young people of this city.

Dr. Gordon is possessed of a clear and logical mind, with great powers of argumentation, and is perfectly fearless in his enunciation of what he conceives to be the truth, and he occupies a foremost position among the preachers of Boston.



Park Street Church and its former pastor, Rev. A. L. Stone, who was Chaplain during the Civil War.

Park Street Church

This church edifice is in the heart of the down town district of Boston, on what is known to Bostonians of fifty years or more ago, as "Brimstone Corner." It stands on the site of the "Old Granary," of Colonial and Revolutionary days. In that "Old Granary" were made the sails of the famous frigate "Constitution." The Park Street Church edifice is one of the most beautiful and symmetrical specimens of New England Church architecture of earlier days. Its location is most commanding and for over one hundred years it has stood as one of the great landmarks of Boston. Under its shadow many thousands of people pass daily as they enter or emerge from the subway station directly opposite on the Common. For many years the building was painted all uniform in color, as were many other venerable buildings in the city, but recently it has been restored to its original appearance, and the result of the architect's work has been most pleasing. "The color and texture of the old brick work is remarkably fine and mellow." An architect, speaking of the restoration says: "The feature has been the vividness with which the return of the walls to brick red, has thrown the fine detail of the building into prominence. When it was painted all uniform in color, one missed the deftness with which the windows were placed in slightly recessed arches, and the pillars and emblatures were made to outline the two bays to right and left of the tower. Now these parts of the design are restored to their original values, and the building seems to have a grace and dignity which are entirely new to beholders of this generation."

The Park Street Church was organized in 1809. Nine members of the "Old South," which was then the only Evangelical Congregational Church in Boston, came out from the parent church, under the promptings of a revival meeting. It was begotten in a revival and has enjoyed many in its history. The church edifice was erected in 1810. The church has had a long line of able and distinguished men as pastors, among them E. D. Griffin, S. E. Dwight, Edward Beecher,

H. Lindsley, Silas Aiken, A. L. Stone, W. H. H. Murray, J. L. Withrow and Dr. Gregg. The present pastor, Rev. Dr. A. Z. Conrad, is a very able preacher and one of the leaders in the denomination in New England. He is an earnest and devoted pastor and in full accord with all reforms for the uplifting and benefitting humanity. Perhaps the Rev. Dr. A. L. Stone was the most widely known in the list of her pastors. He occupied the pulpit during the period of the Civil War. He was extremely patriotic, a most fluent and eloquent speaker, and exerted a great influence in Boston, especially among the young men. During his pastorate, he obtained leave of absence from the church and served as chaplain of the Forty-Fifth Regiment, Massachusetts Volunteer Militia, in its campaign in North Carolina. The Park Street Church has been the mother of several churches and has always been noted for its zeal in missionary enterprises. Its donations to foreign missions for a long period of years amounted to $4000 annually, and frequently exceeded that amount. It has a fine and capacious audience room, and here anti-slavery agitators, temperance reformers and other pleaders for good and charitable objects, have gathered and proclaimed their views without let or hindrance. It has been a forum, in many respects like the "Old South" of early days, for the inauguration and encouragement of great movements. It was one of the first places of public worship that opened its doors to William Lloyd Garrison, in those early days of the anti-slavery struggle, at the very time when that great reformer was mobbed and dragged through the streets of Boston, with a rope around his neck and his life in imminent peril, at the hands of a howling, infuriated mob. It was at a children's celebration held in Park Street Church, July 4th, 1832, that our national hymn, "America," written by Rev. Dr. Samuel F. Smith, was first sung. We have alluded to the service of Rev. A. L. Stone, as chaplain, in the 45th Massachusetts Regiment during the Civil War. After that service he gave a very interesting address on "War, the Romance and the Reality." The closing sentences of that address are remarkably fine and eloquent, showing the beauty of his rhetoric and are eminently worthy of preservation. He said: "My own faith in the victorious issue of our cause never for a moment faltered. I never believed that God put the fate of this great nation into the hands of rebels, nor that instead of a broad, free republic, he meant to rear here on the ruins of the Re-

public and the neck of the African, a column of despotism. When the war broke out there stood on Shackelford Island, off the coast of North Carolina in the midst of a thinly scattered and disloyal population, a tall flag pole on which, before the days of treason, the Stars and Stripes had been given to the breeze. Of course the sacred banner was torn down and the new ensign fluttered in its place. But the pole was surmounted by a carved and gilded eagle. That was too national an emblem to be suffered to remain. An expert climber reached it and brought it down, and it was ignominiously buried in the ground. Scarce was the ceremony ended, when there was heard the rush of lordly wings, and a live eagle came sailing over and alighted on the desolate staff. The marksmen brought out their rifles and bullet after bullet was sent aloft at the kingly visitant. But he only plumed his wings in contempt, or rose a few feet into the air, and then defiantly resumed his perch, until the riflemen, with reason superstitious, forbore to fire. Then the royal bird spread his pinions again and rose in slow gyrations to the topmost bough of a monarch pine near by, a hundred feet higher in the air than his gilded counterfeit had shone. So shall it be with our own eagle of empire and destiny. Its symbols may be desecrated and profaned. Itself may be the target of treason's murderous aims. But out of the tumult and out of the smoke of unnatural war it shall soar unharmed, with a broader sweep and to a lordlier height in the serene blue of heaven."

Like a little green valley surrounded by high hills is the "Old Granary Burying Ground." It adjoins the church building and extends along Tremont Street, northerly to the Tremont Building. Here lie buried many great and mighty men of the past. Men, who counted not their lives dear to them if they might save this country to freedom and pass it down, a priceless heritage to coming generations.

Here are the graves of John Hancock, Samuel Adams and Robert Treat Paine, three signers of the Declaration of Independence; Paul Revere, the hero of the midnight ride; John Phillips, the first Mayor of Boston and the father of Wendell Phillips; Richard Bellingham, William Dummer, James Sullivan, Christopher Gore, James Bowman and Increase Sumner, all Governors of Massachusetts; Thomas Cushing, Lieutenant-Governor; Samuel Sewall, Chief Justice of Massachusetts; John Baily, Samuel Willard, Jeremy Belknap and John Lathrop, Ministers of the town of Boston.

The Baptists in Boston

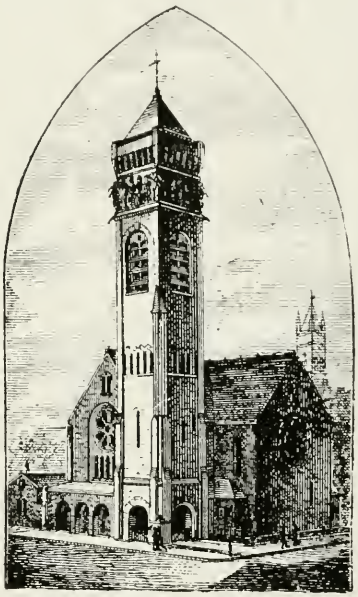
The First Baptist Church.

It is evident that there were a few Baptists in early days in the Bay Colony, for the Puritan leaders took extreme measures to stamp out the "heresy," as they termed it. The Puritan idea was a theocracy, modelled after the ancient Jewish order, in which the State should be absorbed in the Church. Religious intolerance drove many of them from the mother country, and soon after landing on these shores they set up a little hierarchy of their own.

They drove Roger Williams, the Baptist, into exile. They deposed Henry Dunster, the Baptist, from the presidency of Harvard College. They imprisoned Thomas Gould a man of spotless character, the first pastor of the First Baptist Church, and the sufferings he there endured brought about his early death. The beloved Rev. John Clarke, a Baptist, an eminent scholar, statesman and divine, was seized by the Puritan magistrates, while in the discharge of his pastoral duties, was imprisoned in a Boston jail and fined thirty pounds for preaching the gospel. Mr. Obadiah Holmes, a prominent Baptist, was fined thirty pounds. Refusing to pay the same, he was imprisoned for two months, and, after a prayer meeting, taken out and publicly whipped. In 1665, the First Baptist Church was formed very quietly, holding their meetings secretly, after the manner of the Early Christians in the days of the Roman persecution. Four men were baptized and joined the church the first day of its history. Every one of these four men suffered severely, because of their faith, at the hands of the Puritan authorities. In 1668, the Great and General Court of Massachusetts was so angry at the bravery and steadfastness of these Baptists that they issued an edict of banishment against each and every one of them, but these despised ones kept right on in the even tenor of theiri way. Being reviled, they reviled not again, and the edict was never carried into effect. In 1678, they built a very unpretentious House of Worship on Sheafe Street on land donated by two of the members. Soon afterwards the General

Court ordered the doors nailed up, forbidding worship there, posting the order on the church doors. A facsimile of this notice may be seen in the vestry of the present First Baptist Church of this city. A few weeks passed and the Baptists withdrew the Puritan nails, opened the doors, and quietly resumed worship there. Since that day, 238 years ago, whatever other persecutions the Baptists may have suffered, they have been allowed to hold their regular ser-

Rev. A. K. De Blois, D. D., Present Pastor.



First Baptist Church Berkeley St. and Commonwealth Ave.

vices without interference from the civil authorities. The pulpit of that church has been filled by able and scholarly men, deep thinkers and devoted Christians. Such men as Winchell, Wayland, Hague and Neale were young and vigorous when they assumed the pastorate, and they exerted a great and abiding influence on the men of their day and generation. Dr. Samuel Stillman was pastor of the church from 1764 to 1807, during all those stormy and eventful days preceding and during the Revolution; and was the most widely known and the most highly venerated of any preacher in New England. Such men as John Hancock and

John Adams delighted to sit under his preaching. He was elected a member of the Massachusetts Convention that voted to adopt the Federal Constitution.

Among the pastors of recent years, who still survive, we may mention the Rev. Nathan E. Wood, D. D., at present the pastor of the First Baptist Church of Arlington. Under his administration the Arlington church has grown rapidly in numbers and usefulness. He is a fine organizer, an able preacher, and of engaging personality, and the Arlington church is one of the strongest in the denomination outside of Boston proper.

The present pastor, Rev. Austin Kennedy de Blois, was born in Wolfville, N. S., December 17, 1866, and has served

Rev. Nathan E. Wood, D.D.

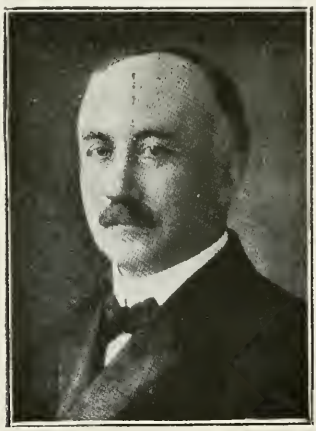
the church since 1911, coming from a nine years' pastorate with the First Church of Chicago. He is a graduate of Acadia College, N. S., and of Brown University, Providence, R. I. He also studied at Berlin and Leipzig, Germany. Traveled in Africa and the Orient in the interest of missions. Has lectured at Newton Theological Seminary and Colgate University on Psychology and Philosophy of Religion and on Pastoral Experience. Author of "Bible Study in American Colleges," "The Pioneer School and Imperialism and Democracy." He is a scholar among scholars, a preacher among preachers, a gentleman among gentleman, a friend among friends.

The church has had several locations in its long history. They left Sheafe Street and built a brick edifice on the corner of Union and Hanover Streets, as many of the members lived in that vicinity. The encroachments of business caused them to make another change, and they built a handsome edifice on Somerset Street. A number of years ago they purchased the elegant church edifice on the corner of Clarendon Street and Commonwealth Avenue which was built for the Brattle Square church. It is one of the finest church edifices in the Back Bay and in a commanding location.

Tremont Temple Baptist Church

Few churches in the country are as widely known to the present generation as Tremont Temple, "The Stranger's Sabbath Home." Its history does not date very far back in the past, but the circumstances attending its origin are most interesting, and its influence has extended far and wide. The beautiful and imposing building at once attracts the eye and commands the admiration of the visiting stranger, and if he attends a Sabbath service in the fine auditorium and mingles with the multitude there gathered, he will carry away pleasant and lasting memories of the day. This religious organization had its inception in the brain and heart of Deacon Timothy Gilbert, a devoted and liberal Baptist of Boston. He felt that the time had arrived for the organization of a church in a central location, where all seats should be free, no pew rentals, but voluntary offerings to meet the expenses of the church. It should be a church of the people where rich and poor, where men of all colors and nationalities might meet on a common level and unite in the worship of God. His heart was pained at the exclusiveness of some churches. As it proved, the time was opportune for such a movement, and a number of Baptists met on the 26th of July, 1838, and voted, to form a Free Baptist Church in Boston, and held their first public service on the 9th of the following December in a hall on the corner of Bromfield and Tremont Street, the church being organized with 82 members. The first pastor was the Rev. Nathaniel Colver, who entered upon his work with zeal and vigor. It was during his pastorate that Elder Jacob Knapp held a series of revival services in Boston. So great and deep were their influences upon the community, that many of the theatres were closed for want of patrons, and among them the Tremont Theatre, which stood opposite the Tremont House. Deacon Gilbert saw the opportunity for the new church to secure a fine central location for its peculiar work and purchased the property for $55,000. The sum of $8,000 was raised to transform it into a suitable church building, and it was dedicated in December,

1843. This building was destroyed by fire in March, 1852. The present Temple Building is the fourth that has occupied that site, two others, besides the original, being burned. In 1864 the church was greatly strengthened by its consolidation with the Union Church of Merrimack Street. It was a great accession to the working force of the Temple and some of those younger men became in later years the strong men of the denomination. One of them still survives, Deacon Oliver M. Wentworth, an active and valuable member, and highly esteemed by all who know him. The

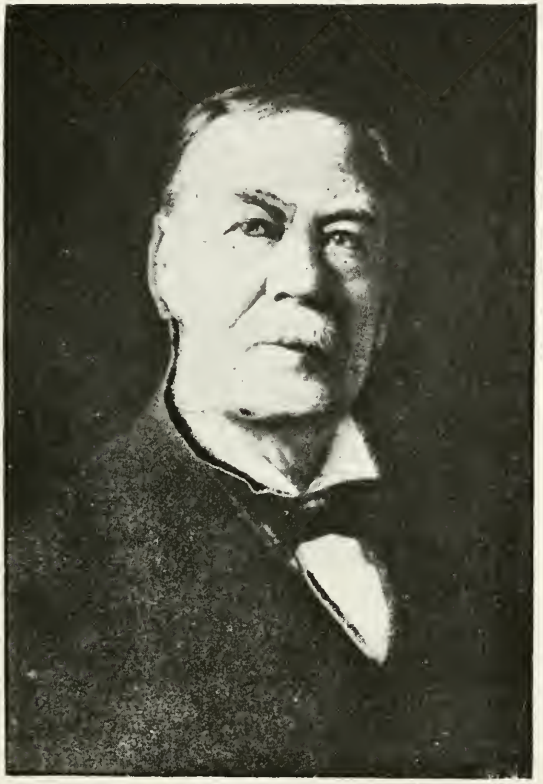


Rev. Cortland Myers, Pastor Tremont Temple

church has had many able and earnest pastors and its large auditorium has been filled every Sunday, year after year, sometimes to overflowing. Such men as Colver, Fulton, Ellis, Haynes and Hanson have exerted a powerful influence on the masses of Greater Boston. No man ever possessed the confidence of the denomination, or occupied a higher rank as a preacher of the gospel, than Dr. George C. Lorimer. Tremont Temple has been a missionary church, contributing largely to the support of foreign and home missions. She has furnished several men of marked ability to the ministry, and is the mother of the Dorchester Temple Church, one of the strong churches of the denomination in Greater Boston.

The present pastor, Rev. Cortland Myers, began his la-

bors in 1909. He was born in Kingston, N. Y., in 1864, graduated at University of Rochester in 1887, and from the Rochester Theological Seminary in 1890. After a pastorate at Syracuse he went to the First Church in Brooklyn, N. Y., where he remained sixteen years, coming to Tremont Tem-



Rev. Robert Stuart MacArthur, D.D., LL. D.

ple from that church. He is doing a good work and the large audience room is filled every Sunday.

REV. ROBERT STUART McARTHUR, D. D., L.L. D.

By Rev. Edmund F. Merriam, D. D.

Dr. MacArthur's ministry has been in New York City, where he was pastor of Calvary Baptist Church for forty-

two years. But he has become well known in Boston as the Summer preacher at the famous Tremont Temple Baptist Church for many successive years.

It used to be difficult to hold the great congregation at the Temple during the Summer vacations of the regular preacher and pastor, but the securing of Dr. MacArthur has solved the problem. The same intellectual ability and eloquence which enabled him to lead a Baptist Church in the metropolis to strength and success for forty-two years, has gripped and held the people of Boston in the great audience hall of Tremont Temple, even in the hot months of the Summer.

In preaching, Dr. MacArthur's manner is peculiarly his own. His discourses are always carefully prepared and contain much worthy of the careful attention of the most thoughtful people. But it is the exquisite finish and persuasive power of the delivery which holds the common mind. To hear a sermon or an address of Dr. MacArthur's is a splendid lesson in oratory. He has the "grand style," which has so largely been lost in these days, and which yet is so pleasing to every hearer, and his success with the people is the best proof of his power as a preacher. At present Dr. MacArthur is President of the Baptist World Alliance, the highest position in the gift of the Baptists in the world.

THE WARREN AVENUE BAPTIST CHURCH.

First Known as the Second Baptist Church and Later as the Baldwin Place Baptist Church.

Rev. Herbert S. Johnson, D. D., Pastor.

Through the years in the midst of conditions which are considered unfavorable to the gathering of great audiences in a Protestant Church, Dr. Johnson has kept his hold on the people of Greater Boston and filled the great audience room of the Warren Avenue Baptist Church with an attentive crowd. It is worthy of notice how largely these audiences are made up of young people. From the thronged boarding houses of the South End and of the Huntington Avenue district, students, clerks, stenographers, working men and women of all classes find their way to Warren Avenue Church every Sunday evening when Dr. Johnson preaches. As a preacher he is intensely dramatic. He has something to say in close touch with the daily lives of the people, and he says it with a power and intensity which is often startling. And

Dr. Johnson's eloquence is not artificial. His earnestness is not assumed. Of ample fortune and independent of salary, he preaches because he loves the people and greatly desires to help those in need. As the members of his congregation well know, he leaves his elegant home in the Back Bay at the cry of distress, and goes to the haunts of poverty and of sin, to seek and to save those who are suffering and dying. His genuineness gives him a hold on the people. He is a tribune of the poor and oppressed. The last two years Dr. Johnson has devoted about half of his time to the Layman's Missionary movement, in behalf of which his powerful appeals have been extremely effective. But his absence has been greatly

Rev. Herbert S. Johnson, D. D.

felt in Boston where he is recognized as one of the ablest, popular preachers."

The record of the Second Baptist Church is quite a remarkable and interesting one. It had its beginning in 1742, when a few members of the First Baptist Church became dissatisfied with the preaching and doctrine of Rev. Jeremiah Condy, pastor of the church. They did not consider his preaching evangelical and they addressed a letter to him and to the members of the church requesting a conference on the matter.

Receiving no reply, they assembled in the house of Mr. James Bownd on the corner of Sheafe and Sparkill Streets,

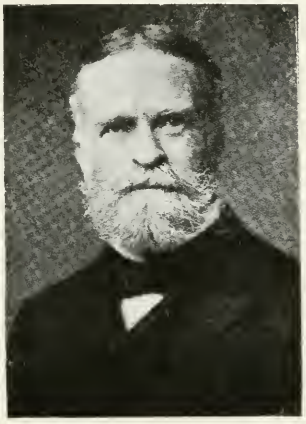
where they conducted worship among themselves, which they continued for several months. As they saw no prospect of a change at the First Church, they withdrew their membership from that church and on July 27, 1743, organized the Second Baptist Church with thirty-three charter members. One hundred years later, in accordance with a joint petition of the church and society to the Legislature, the name was changed to the Baldwin Place Baptist Church and so continued until the removal to its present location on Warren Avenue.

Soon after their organization, the services were held in Mr. Proctor's Schoolhouse, and in 1745 they erected a very modest edifice forty-five by thirty-three feet, with twenty-six pews on the lower floor and six pews in the East gallery. The seats in the West gallery were free and were filled with seafaring men. The best pew in the house, estimated at eighty-five pounds ($425) was owned by Mr. Proctor, and the second best was set apart to be forever the ministerial pew.

Mr. Bownd, the pastor, was considered a strong and interesting preacher and held the pastorate for twenty-two years. In five years the membership had increased to one hundred and thirty. In 1764, the pastor being afflicted with paralysis, an invitation was extended to Rev. Samuel Stillman of Bordentown, New Jersey, to come and assist the pastor for one year, which was accepted, and he proved very able and satisfactory. At the end of the year, the pulpit of the First Church being vacant, Mr. Stillman was induced to become pastor of that church. This was a great blow to the Second Church, for Mr. Stillman was a man of exceptional ability with the power to attract the people, and during his year as assistant at the Second Church, the church prospered greatly. It was five years before the church obtained another pastor and they were years of severe trial. The new man, Rev. Mr. Gair, had a very successful pastorate and the church was obliged to enlarge its house of worship.

The church was fortunate in the choice of the next pastor, Rev. Thomas Baldwin, who came from Canaan, New Hampshire. He was invited to come as a supply and so acceptable were his services that he was elected as pastor by a unanimous vote. The letter of invitation first sent to Mr. Baldwin is quaint and shows also the methods of church committees, and of the compensation of the clergy in those days. It reads: "The church has thought it their duty to engage you at six dollars a week for the first six weeks, and then to increase it

as they shall find themselves able, and also to find you all that part of the dwelling house now occupied by the Widow Gair (excepting the front chamber, together with the improvement of the garden below the gate), and also to allow you fifteen cords of wood delivered to your house." At the end of six months the church raised the salary to eight dollars, and kept on raising it until it amounted to twenty dollars per week, which was paid weekly with punctuality, and all this was done without any hint from the pastor. On November 11, 1790,



Rev. O. P. Gifford, D. D.,
Former Pastor of this Church

Mr. Baldwin was publicly installed as pastor, and the church entered upon a career of material and spiritual prosperity, which continued without interruption for many years. In 1810 the old house, which only a few years before had been repaired and enlarged, was taken down and a substantial brick building erected, eighty-five by seventy feet, with a tower sixty-four feet high, which cost, exclusive of the land, twenty-four thousand dollars. It is said that three thousand people attended the exercises of dedication. Dr. Baldwin continued as pastor until his death in 1825, which occurred at Waterville, Maine, whither he had gone to attend the Commencement Exercises of the College. Few pastors in Boston have ever exerted a wider or more beneficent influence upon the community than Dr. Baldwin. Rev. Dr. Baron Stow, in a centennial address of the church, said of him: "He was a man

of rare excellences and the memory of his virtues will be cherished with affectionate reverence as long as truth and holiness shall have a friend or an advocate."

Dr. Baron Stowe who came from Portsmouth, was the seventh pastor. This ardent and impulsive preacher did a wonderful work, adding nine hundred members to the church, and the house of worship was enlarged. But towards the last of his ministry, through no fault of his, there was a gradual depletion in the membership. By reason of the influx of many foreigners at the North End, the locality was not so desirable for Americans, and many of the active and influential members removed to the South End or to nearby suburbs. Again, nearly 300 members had taken letters of dismissal to form new churches; nearly ten churches were thus assisted, and the Rowe Street Church (the successor of the old Federal Street), having organized, extended a call to Dr. Baron Stowe, which was accepted. The last pastor at Old Baldwin Place was the Rev. Daniel C. Eddy, D. D. It was during his incumbency that the church removed from its old time honored location in Baldwin Place to the present location on the corner of West Canton Street and Warren Avenue.

The new edifice was dedicated October, 1866, the church having a membership at that time of about 400. Dr. Eddy remained with them until 1871, when he accepted a call to Fall River. The new church cost $105,000 and the seating capacity is 1300. Dr. Eddy's successor was the Rev. George Pentecost. His ministry was most fruitful in results, not so much in the numerical additions to the church as in the highly increased spiritual efficiency and religious culture of those already forming its body. Mr. Pentecost, however, was preeminently ordained for the work of an evangelist, and a powerful influence was brought to bear upon him by Mr. Moody to leave the pastorate and take up the evangelistic work. This Mr. Pentecost decided to do, greatly to the regret of the people, by whom he was regarded with the deepsst confidence and affection.

He was succeeded by Rev. O. P. Gifford, D. D., who worthily filled the pulpit which had been rendered famous by the long array of faithful men whose eloquence, piety and faithful labor hallow this church. The Rev. Edward F. Merriam writes of Dr. Gifford: "Dr. Gifford is well known to the people of Greater Boston as well as to multitudes of others through his two pastorates, at Warren Avenue Church, Bos-

ton, and at the Brookline Baptist Church. His success in both these pastorates is also an illustration of the breadth of his culture and the scope of his genius. The Warren Avenue Church is located in a section of the city where the common people are massed. The appeal of a preacher in this locality must be to the masses, and to hear Dr. Gifford the masses came. His church was always thronged by people, not only from the vicinity of the house of worship, but by multitudes from other parts of the city, and from the surrounding towns and cities. In the conservative court end of Boston, his success has been equally pronounced. Large numbers of students and visitors to the city are noticed in the congregations at Brookline. As a preacher Dr. Gifford is brilliant, epigramatic, suggestive and inspiring. He throws his thoughts like sparkling gems at his audience, and the peoople catch them with eagerness like precious pearls.

James Russell Lowell might have had Dr. Gifford in mind when he made Hosea Bigelow define eloquence. Above all, Dr. Gifford is a good man. He is lovable and beloved. A great part of the power of his preaching comes from his personality. He is a winning illustration of the 'man behind the gun,' not in war, but on the purer fields of peace. No Boston preacher is so often or so widely called to speak on various public occasions in all parts of the country. In colleges and at patriotic services he is a favorite speaker. He was chosen as one of the public speakers on the great patriotic day at the Panama Pacific Exposition in San Francisco, which is at once an illustration of the breadth of his popularity and a proof of his power in the nation."

The Brattle Square Church

This church, so long identified with Brattle Square, dated back to 1699. At that time Boston contained less than 10,000 people and as there were already three Congregational church, the erection of a fourth church at that time was regarded by the Puritan Fathers as altogether unnecessary, hence there was strong opposition to the movement. But there were quite a number of Bostonians who objected to the strict and rigid observance of traditional customs, which marked the churches of that day and as they expressed it, they "believed more liberality should be injected into religion." These men bought a lot of land of Thomas Brattle in 1698 and built a wooden house of worship which they dedicated the following year and which was long known as the "Manifest Church" because the founders issued a document declaring their views in answer to the protests of other religious societies. The narrowness of that period is indicated by the action of the parishioners who declined the legacy of two organs provided for in the will of Thomas Brattle, because they "did not think it proper to use an organ in the public worship of God." There were no clocks in the Meeting Houses of those days—but in this church there was a large hour glass, a foot high, which stood beside the pulpit to mark the length of the services—particularly the sermons, which were sure to be an hour long. When the preacher was particularly dry and prosy it was a satisfaction to see the sands nearly run down and to know the end was near, but not infrequently the preacher would calmly turn the glass and start in on the second hour.

This old wooden church was never painted inside or out, and in 1772 a new church building became necessary.

Governor Bowdoin offered the church a site on the corner of Tremont Row and Howard Street, if they would leave their old location.

It was at this time that John Hancock made the church the gift of a bell and a thousand pounds, and the parishioners decided to remain in the old location and build a substantial brick structure. This new building was considered

the city, and here the society worshipped for one hundred years. very handsome in its day and an ornament to that part of

Those were troublous and exciting days for Boston. The revolution was just dawning and a little later several of its members left to take part in the struggle.

The British Commander, General Gage, had no compunctions about using church property for whatever suited his purpose, and during the British occupation of Boston he quartered a part of the 29th Regiment in the church and also used it for the storage of cannon and munitions of war.

During the siege of Boston, the Americans at Cambridge were constantly trying the range of their guns and the Yankee shot was often quite annoying to the British garrison.

The night before the evacuation of Boston, the bombardment was very heavy and one solid shot from the American lines at Lechmere Point struck the church building above and to the left of the entrance.

The iron missile displaced a few bits of stone and mortar and then fell near the entrance of the church.

In 1825 this cannon ball was embedded in the church wall where it struck and there it remained until the building was demolished in 1874. A historical writer said in the Boston Post: "Brattle Square was a favorite rendezvous of the British troops during the siege." General Gage lived across the street from the church, and in the square began the quarrel between the citizens and the soldiers, which culminated in the Boston Massacre.

The officers of the 29th Regiment lodged with Mrs. Apthorp, whose house occupied part of the site now covered by the Quincy House. Pierce Butler, a major in the British regiment, afterwards became an American citizen and a United States Senator from South Carolina. In 1812 he was an advocate of war against his native country. John Adams lived in Brattle Square in 1768 with his infant son, John Quincy Adams. Still later the Square became the starting place for most of the stages, which ran to other states and their arrival and departure excited far more commotion than is known in the locality at present.

In 1813, Edward Everett was ordained as its pastor, being at that time only 19 years of age. Thirteen months later he resigned to accept the Eliot Professorship of Greek Literature at Harvard College. While pastor of Brattle Square

Church, Mr. Everett wrote the famous book "Defence of Christianity." Like many other churches which when erected were in the residential section of the city, business grew up all around this famous church and the church sold the property in 1871.

Final services were held in the old church audience room Sunday, July 30th, 1871. A contemporary account says "It was no common event—that of taking leave of such a church as the Brattle Square Church.

"There were many moist eyes to be seen among the congregation. There were many old niches looked into for a parting thought. There was a historic fact, to many, attaching to every window and every pillar and the pulpit and the organ spoke volumes. .

"There, in 1775, had stood a stack of arms. By that window an officer had hacked at the queer old carvings, and the marks of his sabre were still seen there. There by the pulpit had been grouped the flags of Great Britain. Around everywhere had been scattered the cots of the soldiery. One could trace to the precise spot where the cannon ball had struck and imagine what consternation reigned in the barracks when from the line of the American fortifications shot were fast dropping into the Square, and the dismal portents of a driving rain storm filled the air.

"Thoughts such as these occurred to one sitting in the church, while the congregation was coming in, and there was plenty of time to reflect. At half-past ten o'clock, the organist, I. I. Harwood, seated himself before the sacred instrument and played an appropriate prelude. By this time, the church was crowded to overflowing. The pews, the galleries, the aisles, the doorways were filled completely. In the pulpit sat Rev. Dr. S. K. Lothrop, and by his ide the Rev. Edward Everett Hale. On the table in front were a few flowers and at each end of the large bible was a bouquet of beautiful exotics.

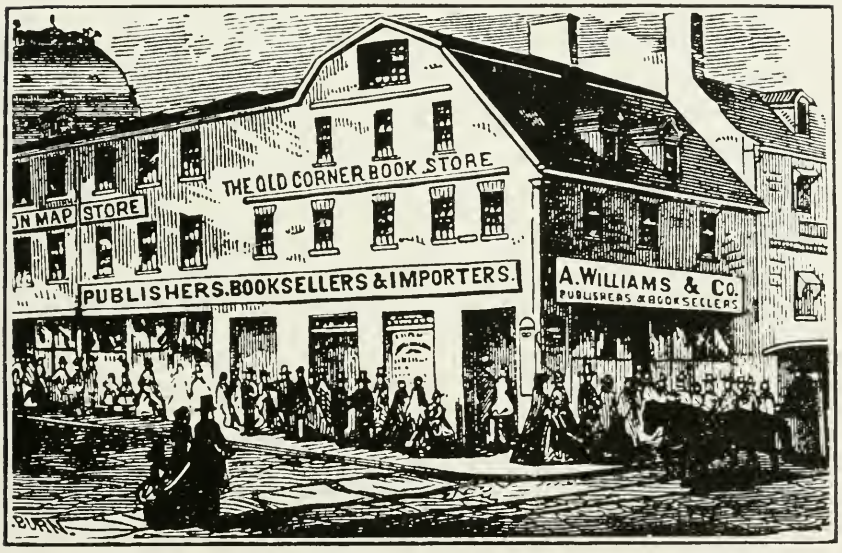
"The musical selections were all in the best taste possible, and were performed with remarkably fine effect.

Besides the organist, the choir consisted of Mrs. J. I. Harwood, soprano; Mrs. J. Hamonett, alto; Mr. D. W. Loring, tenor, and Mr. E. E. Pickett, basso and this quartette was assisted in the chorus passages by Mrs. Tower, soprano, and Mr. Gansett, bass, both former members of the choir. Mr. and Mrs. Harwood came to the city from

York, Maine, where they were passing a summer vacation, for the express purpose of being present at and attending to the music of the farewell service."

In the rooms of the Massachusetts Historical Society may be seen a model of this old church. The church erected an elegant edifice on the corner of Clarendon Street and Commonwealth Avenue. It was built of Roxbury stone, and its tall square tower, with carved figures at each corner, representing four angels blowing gilded trumpets, is very notable and greatly admired.

The Society did not long worship in their new Church Edifice. In a few years they sold the property to the First Baptist Society of Boston, who immediately occupied it, and it has been their church home ever since.



Old Corner Book Store Corner School and Washington Streets

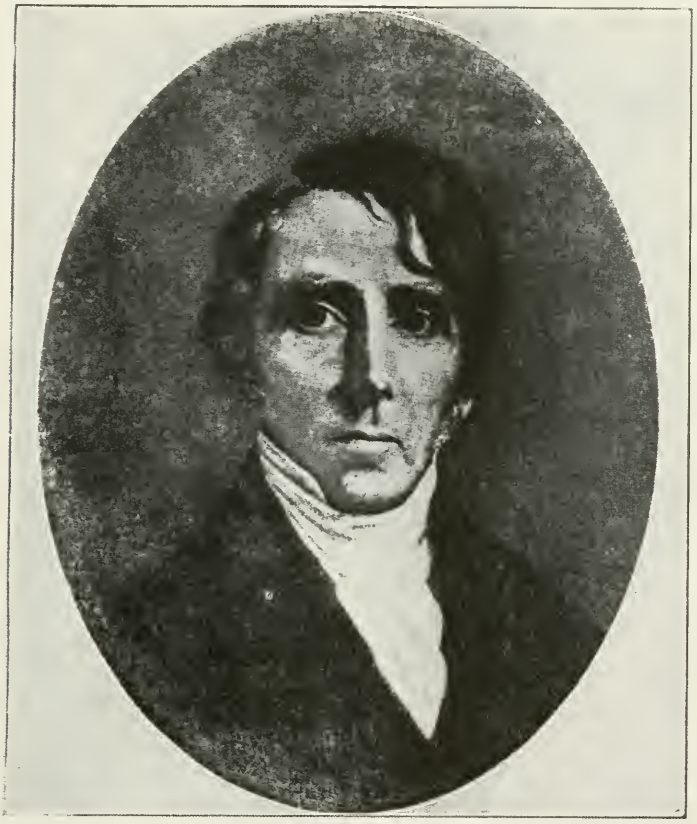
The Arlington Street Church

This church, organized as a Presbyterian Church in 1727, has had quite an eventful history. The society first worshipped in an old barn on Long Lane (now Federal Street) on the corner of Franklin Street, opposite the present First National Bank building. In that location it was known as the Federal Street Church.

In 1744 they erected and dedicated a church building. In 1788, the Massachusetts State Convention, which first assembled in the Old State House, adjourned to the audience room of this church as being more commodious. The object of this convention was to discuss the proposed Federal Constitution, and decide whether it should be adopted by the State. Samuel Adams and John Hancock, those veteran patriots and active champions of the people's rights, were delegates to the convention and took an active part in its deliberations. In commemoration of this event the name of Long Lane was dropped and the Selectmen of the town renamed the street Federal Street, which has been retained ever since.

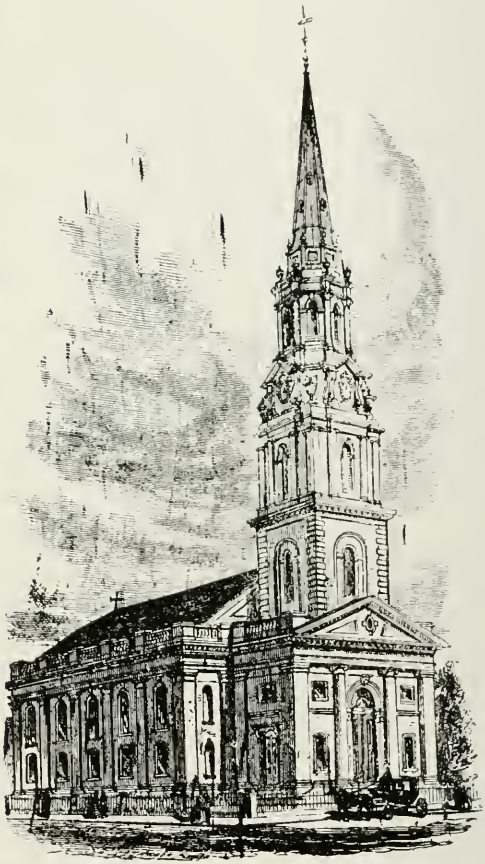
In 1809, a second house of worship was built from plans designed by Charles Bulfinch. Dr. Wm. E. Channing, the pastor, laid the cornerstone. He was a preacher of world-wide reputation, and his church was a great religious centre. His pastorate extended from 1803 to 1842. He was a most accomplished scholar, writer and preacher, and exerted a deep and wide influence on the religious life of his day. Following his graduation from Harvard at the age of 18, he was for two years a tutor in the family of David Mead Randolph of Virginia, where he met Judge Marshall and other great men of that day. At the age of 24 he accepted the call of the Federal Street Church. His whole life was a pure offering to philosophy, humanity and religion. He was an earnest seeker for the right and truth, and religion became the great fact of his life. He brought Christianity to bear on every-day life and under his preaching, religion became a practical and sublime reality.

The growth of the business section of the city, in Federal and adjacent streets, necessitated a change of location, and in 1859 the church sold their property and built the elegant brown stone building on the corner of Arlington and Boylston Streets, which was dedicated in December, 1861. The present pastor of the church is the Rev. Paul Frothingham, a cultured gentleman and of high scholarly attainments.



Rev. William Ellery Channing, D. D.

Memorial to Rev. William E. Channing, D. D., Corner Arlington and Boylston Streets



The Arlington Street Church, 1916

The Birthplace of the Universalist Church

in America was at the Murray Grove Association in New Jersey. Within the grounds is a large stone upon which is a tablet bearing this inscription:

"Near this spot first met Thomas Potter, the Prophet, and John Murray, the Apostle of Universalism."

"The following Sunday, September 30, 1770, in Potter's Meeting House, Murray first preached in America, from the text: 'The Wilderness and the Solitary Place were glad for them."

From this small and humble beginning has arisen a large and influential Christian denomination, having under its control many educational and philanthropical institutions in different parts of the country.

These Academies and Colleges have always been non-sectarian in the sense that students have free choice of churches, and proselyting and religious intolerance are not allowed.

The Second Universalist Church of Boston may well be called a historical church. The Society was incorporated December 13, 1816, at a time when the lines between the religious sects wer tightly drawn, and the welcome extended to the Universalists by the Puritan churches of Boston was by no means a cordial one. The Society endeavored to secure as a location for their church edifice the site on School Street where once stood the old French Huguenot Church. Murray preached in the pulpit of that old church in 1774, and the audience became so angry over his sentiments that they stoned him. The site finally determined upon was adjacent to the lot they desired, being the lot on which the business edifice known as the School Street Block now stands.

The pastor selected by this new society was the Rev. Hosea Ballou. In an historical address given by Rev. Dr. Miner, he speaks of Mr. Ballou as "the most powerful advocate of Universalism in New England or in the United States." He was at that time forty-six years of age and had been twenty-six years in the ministry. He had travelled widely and had oc-

cupied several of the most important places in the denomination. Wherever he preached crowds flocked to hear him. He was the most incisive and the most aggressive warrior in the church militant.

He was installed as pastor Christmas Day, 1817. He had a brilliant career as pastor and under his leadership the church exercised a powerful influence upon the community. A man of his earnestness and aggressiveness could not escape criticism or attack. Charges of heresy were hurled at him, which he repelled with pungency and truth. For a time Mr. Ballou was deemed by the world outside as the arch heretic of the age. But the man himself was most upright in his walk, extremely abstemious in his habits, most reverent towards God and His Holy Word, yet he was denounced as an immoral, intemperate and profane man. All these detractions he preached down and lived down. For twenty-four years he was faithful and unremitting in his labors, and the snows of seventy winters settled upon his head.

In 1846 Rev. E. H. Chapin was installed as Associate Pastor, remaining two years, when he accepted a call to New York, and Rev. A. H. Miner was invited to fill the vacancy, and continued in this position until the death of Dr. Ballou, June 7, 1852. Upon the death of Dr. Ballou he was called to the pastorate. The church stood nobly behind Tufts College, which was founded in 1847.

In its long career, this congregation and its members have given to education, temperance, missions and charities nearly a million and a half of money, of which Tufts College received about one-half. At one time the financial condition of the college was desperate, and it was then that the members of the church came to the rescue. Dr. Miner became President of the institution, devoting a portion of his time to it without salary and without interrupting his connection with the church, and he performed wonderful work there.

He gave the church and the college one sermon each on Sunday and gave instruction in the college four days in the week, attending to parish work in spare hours, and through his efforts large donations of money were made to the college and legacies of some hundreds of thousands. Under the leadership of Dr. Miner the church took advanced ground on the temperance question. The temperance workers in all other churches were glad to welcome to their ranks such an aid to good morals and good citizenship. The church purchased a

lot on the corner of Berkeley Street and Columbus Avenue, and in September, 1871, the cornerstone of an elegant church edifice was laid. The present pastor, Rev. Stephen H. Roblin, was formally installed in January, 1892, and has proved an able successor to such men as Ballou, Chapin, Cushman and Miner. The new edifice cost about one hundred and fifty thousand dollars.

The church has been fortunate in all the years of its existence in having as its Trustees broadminded and liberal-hearted men who built solidly and planned wisely for the future.

The Society still holds the valuable property on School Street, from which they derive a substantial income.

The Roman Catholic Church in Boston

The picture shows the first Catholic Church edifice in New England, the Church of the Holy Cross, which stood on the southeastern corner of Franklin and Devonshire Streets. It is stated that the first Catholic priest to arrive in Boston, was a Jesuit missionary, the Rev. Father Gabriel Druilletes, who landed here in 1650, twenty years after the founding of the town by Winthrop. "He came as the representative of the French Government to induce the Puritans to combine with the other white settlers of America against the savage Iroquois Indians Although intolerant of all other religious creeds, the Puritans appear to have treated the Commissioner kindly." The number of Catholics in Boston and vicinity gradually increased and in 1788, they held their first service in a little brick chapel on School Street, built by the French Huguenots, which had been sold by them to the Congregationalists, and they rented it to the Catholics. Rev. John Thayer of Boston was one of the first priests of this little church, and proved a very popular pastor during his year of service. He was succeeded by the Rev. Francis Anthony Matignon, D. D., who was the well-beloved pastor of Holy Cross Church for twenty-six years.

As the congregations grew in numbers, it became apparent that a larger church was needed, which should belong to the Society, and enough money was raised to purchase a lot on Franklin Street from the Boston Theatre Corporation, the purchase price being $2,500. A new edifice was planned and contributions flowed in readily. Father Matignon was so popular in the community, and so highly esteemed by all classes of citizens, that many Protestants were liberal donors to the Building Fund, among them, John Adams, then President of the United States. It was just at this time, that the Catholic Church in Boston was greatly strengthened by the arrival from France of the Rev. Jean Lefebre De Cheverus. He was born at Mayonne, France, of a distinguished family, and was educated in his native city and in Paris, and was ordained to the

priesthood in the latter city, just before the outbreak of the French Revolution. He left his native land on account of the existing disorder, and, for a while, resided in London. He came to Boston in 1796, largely through the influence of Father Matignon. These two reverend fathers were devoted

Holy Cross Cathedral 1850
Corner Franklin and Devonshire Streets

friends and earnest co-laborers for many years and until the death of Father Matignon in 1818. When it was decided to ordain a Bishop for Boston, Father Matignon shrank from the responsibilities of the Bishopric, but remained in charge

of the church. The choice fell upon Father Cheverus, who was not only revered by the members of his faith, but numbered many leading Protestants, as his warm personal friends, among them Hon. Josiah Quincy and Harrison Gray Otis.

Bishop Cheverus

The death of Father Matignon in 1818, brought sincere sorrow and regret, and the love and esteem in which he was held was made manifest by the elaborate funeral accorded him, in which his remains were escorted to the Granary Burying Ground by a procession headed by acolytes and entombed in

the vault of John Magner. At that time there was no Catholic burying ground in Boston.

As a mark of respect to his devoted friend, and to provide a burial place for Catholics, Bishop Cheverus in 1819 purchased the land now known as St. Augustine's Cemetery in Dorchester Street, South Boston, and immediately arranged for the erection of a small brick chapel in the grounds. To collect funds in those days was no easy matter, but Father Larissey came to the aid of the Bishop, proving a most able and successful assistant and the sum of $1,500 was raised. The land was then purchased, and in a short time a brick chapel, 20 feet by 30 feet was completed and the rest of the land used for burial purposes. St. Augustine was the name of Father Larissey's patron saint, and Bishop Cheverus gave that name to the Chapel, and the burial ground.

The Cemetery was part of a fine old estate. The magnificent elms rose to a great height, and in summer their verdant branches almost covered the little chapel. When the chapel was completed the remains of Father Matignon were removed from the tomb of Mr. Magner and placed in a sepulchre at the right of the altar in St. Augustine Chapel.

A few pews were put in the little chapel, and services were held there. The congregations increased. Catholics, for miles around worshipped there, and in 1838 it was found necessary to enlarge the chapel, giving it a seating capacity of 250. Still the congregations kept on growing, and the chapel became inadequate to hold the large number of worshippers. A large church edifice became necessary in South Boston and the church of S. S. Peter and Paul was the outgrowth of this mission. This fine Gothic structure of dark granite stands on West Broadway between A Street and Dorchester Avenue. It has had able pastors, who won the love of their flocks, and the respect and good will of the citizens of the peninsula ward. Many of them have been deservedly popular, because of their kindly and genial manner, and their deep interest in the moral and religious welfare of that section of the city.

As South Boston became thickly settled, the number of Catholics increased, and the district was divided, and there are now several large and flourishing Catholic churches in that section. Bishop Cheverus remained in New England for twenty-seven years, but the rigorous New England winters finally compelled him to return to France, his native land.

He was made Bishop of Montauban in 1823, Archbishop of Bordeaux in 1826, and a Cardinal in 1830, the year of his decease. "For a second time, the highest honors of the Church have fallen upon a man who has labored here in Boston, but the difference in conditions between the two periods is startling."

The Catholic churches in New England today, are almost numberless. In 1810, there were only three in the most easterly states, the Church of the Holy Cross on Franklin Street, a church in New Castle, Maine, and a log cabin at Pleasant Point, Maine. Salem added the fourth in 1820. During the Civil War the business area of Boston increased rapidly; the residential district of Franklin and Summer streets gave way to mercantile blocks, and in 1870, the Cathedral of the Holy Cross was one of the last of the down town churches, and its parishioners lived a long distance from their House of Worship. Bishop John B. Fitzpatrick was the pastor of the church at that time, and it was decided to sell the property. The amount realized was $115,000. A lot was purchased on the corner of Washington and Malden streets and a new Cathedral of the Holy Cross was erected and dedicated in 1875. The Archbishop of the diocese at that time was the Rev. John J. Williams, a man known far and wide, and respected by all who knew him. The Archbishop's house is a very stately one and stands in the rear of the Cathedral. The Cathedral is the largest and finest Catholic Church in the city. "The building covers over 46,000 square feet, more than an acre of ground. It is larger than the European cathedrals of Strasburg, Venice, Vienna, Salisbury or Dublin. The style of architecture is the early English Gothic, cruciform, with nave, transept, aisle and dorestory, the latter being supported by two rows of clustered metal pillars. The total length of the building is 364 feet, width of the transept is 170 feet, width of nave and aisles, 90 feet, height to the ridge pole 120 feet. There are two main towers in front, and a turret, all of unequal height, and all eventually to be surmounted by spires. The great tower on the southwest corner, with its spire, will be 300 feet high, and the small tower on the northwest corner will be 200 feet high. The gallery contains a Hook & Hastings organ of unsurpassed purity of tone and remarkable power. It has more than 5,000 pipes and 76 stops. The entire interior of the Cathedral is clear space, broken only

by two rows of columns, extending along the nave, and supporting the central roof. The pews accommodate nearly 3500 persons. The arch which separates the spacious vestibule from the church is of brick, taken from the Ursuline Convent of Mount Benedict. The ceiling abounds in carved woods and tracery. The panels and spandrels show three shades of oak, with an outer line of African wood. Every alternate panel is ornamented with emblematical devices. The roof in the transept displays an immense cross of inlaid wood.

On the ceiling of the church are painted angels, representing Faith, Hope, Charity and other virtues on a background of Gold. The frescoing on the walls is very handsome. The rose window over the principal entrance, is, in design, a fine specimen of art. The stained transept windows, each 40 by 22 feet in size, have designs representing the Exaltation of the Cross, by the Emperor Heracilius, and the miracle by which the true cross was verified. The stained windows in the Chancel represent the Crucifixion, the Ascension and the Nativity. These are Memorial Windows, and were gifts to the Church.

The High Altar is formed of rich variegated marbles and is surrounded by a fine canopy. On the Gospel side stands the Episcopal throne, the Cathedra of the Bishop. On the right of the sanctuary is the Chapel of the Blessed Virgin, containing a statue of the Virgin. There are three other chapels, the Chapel of St. Joseph; the Chapel of St. Patrick; and the Chapel of the Blessed Sacrament."

Altogether it is a magnificent structure in its architecture and in all its fittings and appointments, and a great memorial of self-sacrifice and generosity.

Another fine church edifice at the South End which antedates the Cathedral is the Church of the Immaculate Conception, which stands on the corner of Harrison Avenue and Canton Street. It is 228 feet long and 88 feet wide, and was built in 1860, under the auspices of the Jesuit Fathers. The lot upon which the building stands contains 90,000 feet of land and cost $45,000. The building cost over $100,000. The painting behind the Altar, represents the Crucifixion and was painted by Garibaldi of Rome. Near this church is Boston College, a flourishing educational institution of the Catholic Church.

Near Roxbury Crossing, is the Mission Church, which has had quite a remarkable history. The building, with its tall towers, and situated well back from the street, presents an imposing appearance. A very attractive feature of this church in the summer time is the beautiful and well kept lawn in front of the church with a bordering of bright flowers, showing the constant care of a thorough gardener. It attracts the attention and calls for the admiration of every passer by. These three large and costly edifices show the wealth and strength of the Roman Catholic Church in Boston. They have 62 churches in Boston today.

The leaders of the Church are working vigorously and systematically in the temperance cause among the children and youth of their flocks, which is sure to bear good fruit in the next generation.

Cathedral of the Holy Cross, 1916, *Washington Street*

The West End Church

The history of this church dates back to 1736-37 when the first House of Worship was erected there. This old edifice had a very tall and very handsome steeple, which was a prominent landmark at the West End, and easily distinguished at the patriot headquarters in Cambridge, across the Charles. In 1775, during the Siege of Boston, the patriots of the town made use of this Steeple as a Signal Station to their friends in the army. When this fact was ascertained by the British officers, the order was given to raze the steeple, which was done. It was one of the churches that was used at that time as barracks for British troops.

The corner stone of a new brick church edifice was laid April 4, 1806, and was, at that time, one of the largest in the town, and was built to accommodate the flood tide of would be parishioners which set in toward Lynde Street, immediately after the ordination of Rev. Charles Lowell, as pastor. The Rev. Charles Lowell, who was the father of James Russell Lowell, the poet, and brilliant man of letters, became pastor of the West Church in 1806, and continued, nominally, in that position until his death in 1861. "He was a man of rare culture, who to his Harvard training had added a course at the University of Edinburgh. He spent three years in Europe, and Wilberforce and Dugald Stewart were among his friends."

The Rev. Dr. Andrew P. Peabody, who knew him intimately, paid him this high tribute. "Dr. Lowell was, even as compared with Buckminster, Everett and Channing, by far the greatest pulpit orator of Boston, and for prompt, continuous, uniform and intense impression in behalf of fundamental Christian truth and duty, on persons of all varieties of age, culture, conditions and character, I have never seen or heard his equal, nor can I imagine his superior." Rev. Charles A. Bartol was the last pastor of this church, now disbanded, serving it for forty years. The old building still remains and is used as a branch of the Boston Public Library. Among the names of pew

holders of this old church is that of Paul Revere, as well as the names of some less famous patriots of his day. This fact was recently brought to light by an old account book kept by the Sexton of the church which was found in a Boston junk shop.

One reason that has been alleged for Revere's defection from his old church was that the pastor of the Hanover Street Church died in 1777, and the pulpit was vacated for two years. Rev. Simeon Howard, a very patriotic gentleman, pastor of the church, made a statement that he would continue to preach, if the war deprived the church of all but three families, and even though he had to do without any remuneration whatever. "The old account book referred to contains the Sexton's accounts of pew rentals during the years 1777-1778, 1779-1780 and 1781. The rentals there are so large as to stagger the reader at first glance, but an explanation of them is found in the tremendous depreciation of the colonial money during the Revolution. The record shows that Samuel Eliot, a millionaire, and grandfather of the President Emeritus of Harvard University, was assessed ninety-seven pounds, about $470, 13 weeks' rental of pew in 1781. At that time one dollar in hard money was equal to about $75 in Colonial currency, in which the pew rentals were apparently paid.

"Some well known Boston names are found among those old pew holders. Captain John Gill; Benjamin Edes, the Printer on Queen (Court) Street; John Fleet, another printer, on Newspaper Row; Captain Bozom Foster, a merchant prince; Widow Craigie, whose name is perpetuated in Craigie's bridge; John Ridgway, who had a ropewalk opposite the church; Professor John Winthrop of Harvard College, the greatest American mathematician and astronomer of his time; Major James Swan, who had a fine estate on Tremont Street, between Winter and West Streets, who died in a Paris prison, where he was incarcerated for debt; John Avery, whose name is borne by Avery Street, a little south of the Adams House; and Benjamin Coolidge, who lived in Bowdoin Square, whose house was afterwards the home of Charles Sumner when in Boston. Its site is now occupied by the Coolidge Hotel." These men were pretty well scattered over Boston and were prominent in the social, professional and business life of Boston in that day and generation.

N. W. Corner Washington and Court Streets,
Site of Ames Building, 1850

Corner of Summer and Hawley Streets, 1850
Site of Smith, Patterson & Co. Store

The Draft Riot in Boston, July 1863

Early in the month of July, 1863, a most cruel and disgraceful riot broke out in the City of New York. A law of Congress had just been passed, authorizing a draft to fill the ranks of depleted regiments at the front, and the riot was started by persons opposed to the cause of the Union, "Copperheads," they were called, who corresponded to the "Tories" of Revolutionary times. They instigated the lower classes in the city to resist the draft by open rioting and acts of violence. General Butler was called from the front and with some veteran regiments under his command, soon quelled the disorder. The defection and riotous spirit spread to Boston and from what had occurred in New York City the authorities here saw that there might be serious trouble unless prompt and decided action was taken.

The riot started in Boston on the 13th of July when a mob broke into and sacked the gun store of William Reed and Sons in Dock Square, and secur d a quantity of small arms and ammunition together with fifty rounds of six pounder fixed ammunition, it evidently being their design to obtain possession of the guns of the Eleventh Battery at the Cooper Street Armory. The authorities at once made preparations to quell the outbreak. At six o'clock in the morning of July 15th, Colonel Kurtz, then Chief of Police, with Deputy Chief Ham, called at the residence of Major Jones, and informed him that the detectives had discovered that the rioters had planned to force the Armory on Cooper Street, and gain possession of the guns. Verbal orders were given Major Jones to notify the members of his Battery to assemble at once at their Armory and hold themselves subject to orders. Accordingly the Major in the early morning assembled every available officer and man of his command, and then sent out a part of this force for the absentees. In conference with his officers he secured a limited quantity of cannister and shot and made the necessary preparations to meet all emergencies that might

arise, incuding medical and surgical supplies under charge of Dr. John P. Ordway. About ten o'clock in the forenoon Mayor Lincoln made formal requisition on Major Jones for the services of the Battery, then assembled at the Armory in anticipation of coming events. Adjutant General Schouler called on Major Jones at eleven o'clock and promised a detail of infantry support. Meantime Governor Andrew sent his secretary, Colonel Brown, on the City Boat, Henry Morrison, to Fort Warren, with a request to Colonel Dimick for troops to suppress a riot. Major Cabot in his report of the riot says that the Governor's Secretary reported "that the mob were beating the police, and that there was every appearance of serious trouble during the coming night and he wanted all the troops the Colonel could let him have. In 25 minutes from the time Major Cabot received the order from Colonel Dimick he had 166 enlisted men and non-commissioned officers ready to leave the fort. After serving 20 rounds of ammunition to each man this body of troops left Fort Warren for Boston where they arrived at 6.15 p. m. After loading with ball cartridge Major Cabot marched to the State House and reported for duty to Governor Andrew. The Governor instructed him to act under the diection of his Honor, Mayor Lincoln. Under orders from Mayor Lincoln he marched down Union Street en route for the Cooper Street Armory. On his way he detached Captain Neebukr with his officers and 55 men to guard the Armory of the Fusileers on the corner of Union and Marshall Streets. The remainder of the command marched to the Armory of the 11th Militia Battery in Cooper Street, being followed by a crowd of hooting men, women and children. Some stones were thrown but no serious demonstration was made before they reached the Armory. The doors were opened and Major Cabot marched the command into the building and ordered the doors and shutters closed, hoping the crowd would disperse if the soldiers were out of sight. It became apparent in the afternoon of the 14th that an outbreak would be attempted and preparations were made to nip it in the bud.

The following "Special Orders" to Colonel Lee and to Colonel Codman, commanding respectively the "Forty Fourth" and "Forty-Fifth" Regiments, recently returned from the seat of war of which the following is a copy:

"Headquarters, Boston, July 14th, 1863,

Colonel: You are hereby ordered to report with your regiment forthwith for duty at Readville.

By order of the Commander-in-Chief,

WILLIAM SCHOULER,

Adjutant-General.

Whereupon Colonel Codman issued the following order:

Headquarters 45th Massachusetts Volunteer Militia,

Boston, July 14th, 1863.

The 45th Massachusetts Volunteer Militia will rendezvous at Readville, to-morrow morning at sunrise, or as near as possible. Each man will appear in uniform, and will bring his blankets, haversack and canteen. This is in accordance with orders from State Headquarters. The Regiment, though mustered out of the United States service, is in the service of the Commonwealth and prompt obedience is expected to this order.

By order of Colonel Codman,

G. C. WINSOR, Adjutant.

Nothing could exceed the zeal and soldier like promptness with which the military organizations responded to the orders of the Governor. Major Gordon, U. S. A., in command at Fort Independence came up from the fort with a company of his men and offered the services of himself and his command for any military duty which the Governor or Mayor might order him to perform.

Captain Whiton's Company of Heavy Artillery, Massachusetts Volunteers, also on duty at Fort Independence, came to the city, and upon representations made by Major Rodman, U. S. A., in command of the U. S. Arsenal at Watertown, this Company was forwarded at once for guard duty at that important post. Captain Collins, Lieutenant McKibben, and other United States Officers, on duty at Boston, also tendered their assistance and performed valuable service. The rioters assembled in the evening of July 14th in the neighborhood of the Eleventh Battery Armory and attacked it with stones and other missiles. The Infantry under command of Major Stephen Cabot, First Battalion of Artillery, Massachusetts Volunteers, kept inside in perfect order, with guns loaded all ready for attack should the exigency arise. Previous to the arrival of Major Cabot and his command, full preparations were made by Major

Jones, his officers and men. The Major personally ordered three guns loaded and had an attack been made at noon, they were ready for use.

The personal and official relations between Major Cabot and Major Jones, during this important service were perfectly courteous, pleasant, proper and officer-like in every particular and by their harmonious co-operation accomplished the result over which they were well satisfied.

Both of these officers were fully aware of all the dangers surrounding them. The plan of the rioters to attack the Armory and seize the artillery had been disclosed to them by Colonel Kurtz, Chief of Police. The City and State officials were in possession of the same facts and they were all acting with and aiding the force in the battery in preparing everything necessary for the protection of the Armory and suppressing the riot. At length an attempt was made by the mob to force an entrance to the building and obtain possession of the guns. It was not prudent to delay longer, and accordingly Major Cabot gave the order to fire, having first read the "Riot Act" to them from the window of the Armory ordering them to disperse. The effect of this discharge of the gun was electrical, several persons were killed and more wounded, how many will probably never be known, as they were carried away by their friends and afterwards kept hidden. This virtually crushed the great mob, although riotous demonstrations were afterwards made at Dock Square and in other parts of the city, but the presence and firm front of the military, many of them trained and experienced soldiers, and the courage and activity of the police, cowed the desperadoes. The unrest, however, lasted for some days, and it was not until the 21st that the authorities felt justified in relaxing the unusual vigilance and preparedness for stern measures. That one tremendous volley of grape and cannister through the closed doors of the Cooper Street Armory, under two cool and brave officers, was a severe and salutary lesson, doubtless, in the end saving many lives of good and innocent persons, and much valuable property from destruction. It resembled the action of the young lieutenant of Artillery, Napoleon Bonaparte, in the streets of Paris, who put a finishing touch to the French Revolution.

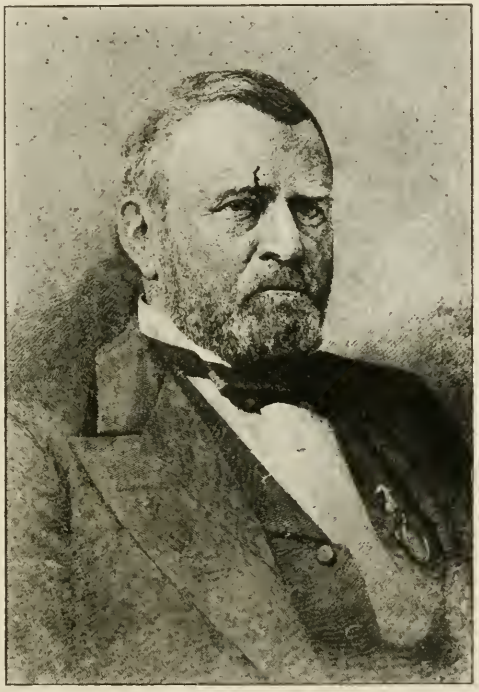
The Forty-Fifth were in Readville promptly in response to the order of Colonel Codman. The Quartermaster furn-

ished the men with arms, ammunition and equipments, and with blankets, slung in the old army fashion, they formed on the "Parade Ground." Here the Colonel gave the men a short drill in "Street Firing," and having loaded their guns with ball cartridges they boarded the train and were landed at Park Square. Having executed the order "Prime," with guns capped and at half cock to show the bystanders they were ready for serious business, they took up their line of march for Faneuil Hall, where quarters had been assigned them. It was the day following the Cooper Street riot and a renewed attack somewhere was expected that night. This, the danger point, and the post of honor, was given to the 45th, Colonel Codman being known as a cool, brave and judicious officer. Four guns were turned over to the Regiment, one at each corner of Faneuil Hall, in charge of gun squads, who had done garrison duty at Fort Macon, and were thoroughly versed in the handling of artillery.

The Regiment was on duty all night, half of the regiment at a time under command of Lieut.-Col. Oliver W. Peabody and Major Russell Sturgis, Jr. There were pickets out on all the neighboring streets, and no persons except market-men were permitted to enter the square. Strict orders were given to fire immediately upon the approach of any threatening body of people, and thus, by a policy of wise severity at the outset to prevent such a prolongation of outrages as had resulted from the misguided leniency of the New York authorities. Detachments were sent to various points, to the bridges of the city. One Corporal's guard was sent to the Federal Street Bridge and on their march through Sea Street, a rough section of the city, were pelted with stones and other missiles, mostly from the windows. The squad wisely refrained from replying, although some of them were struck. The night passed quietly away for the most part. There was a noisy crowd who made some disturbance but they were quickly scattered by the charge of a company of dragoons who were doing "patrol duty.' A regular guard was at the entrance of Faneuil Hall to keep the "boys in" as well as the crowd "out."

The 45th gave an exhibition of "Street Firing" which the Regiment executed in their usual fine style. Though the city in a few days, seemed restored to its pristine security yet

fearing some outbreak on Saturday, or Sunday night, the troops were kept until the following Tuesday. It seemed strange to many of the boys to post sentries and stand guard about the streets and alleys of Boston, with orders to allow no one to pass through, and the indignation of some of our worthy citizens at being compelled to go some other way, was often quite amusing. The days in the Old Hall were



General U. S. Grant
"The Hero of Appomattox"

largely spent in watching the passers by from the windows. On one or two days the regiment had a "battalion drill" on the Common, where a large and admiring crowd watched the evolutions. The rioters began to cool off, reconsidered their plans and wisely concluded to run the risk of being drafted and perhaps die an honorable death in battle, rather than be ignominiously shot down, almost at their own

doors, for resisting the laws of the land. Meantime the men of the regiment, living at a distance, kept dropping in and swelling the ranks, until the number was increased to 500.

On Tuesday, July 21, 1863, they were paid off and discharged and since those days the old "Forty-Fifth" has lived only in history.

The two regiments were relieved from further duty by the following order:

Headquarters Faneuil Hall Square
Boston, July 21, 1863.

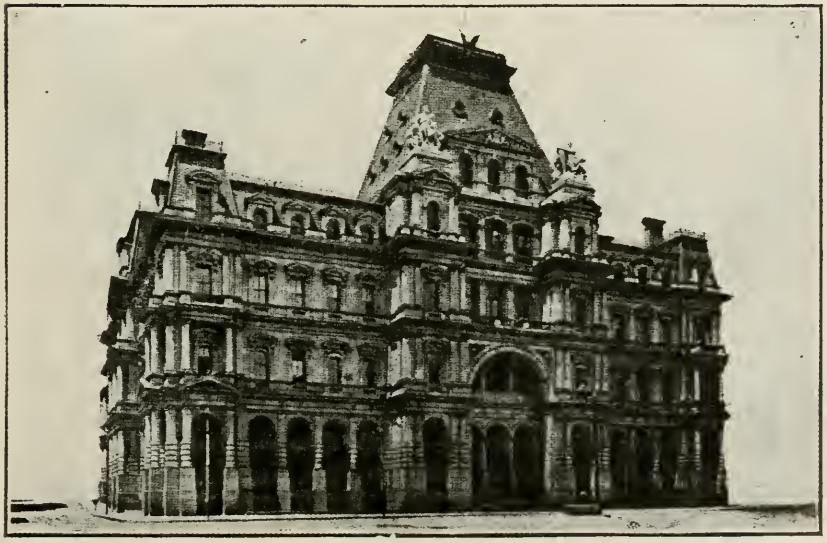
General Order No. 6.

Colonel F. L. Lee commanding the Forty-Fourth Massachusetts Volunteer Militia and Colonel Charles R. Codman, commanding the Forty-Fifth Massachusetts Volunteer Militia are hereby ordered to dismiss their respective commands until further orders. In issuing this order, the General commanding is desired by His Excellency, the Governor, John A. Andrew, to express to them, their officers and men, his thanks for their prompt response to the call of duty, and the admirable manner in which they performed it. Every duty has been performed to the entire satisfaction of the Commanding General.

R. A. PEIRCE,
Brigadier General.

C. J. HIGGINSON,
Acting Adjutant General.

Site of Boston Post Office, 1860



Boston Post Office, 1916

Christ Church, 1775

This church edifice is the oldest in Boston and was completed in 1743. It is six years older than the Old South Meeting House and ten years older than the present King's Chapel. It stands on Salem Street, and is a prominent landmark at the North End; its graceful spire, rising to a height of 175 feet, is an accurate reproduction of the one blown down in 1804. It was from the belfry of this church that the lanterns were hung out on the evening of April 18, 1775, the signal which impelled Paul Revere in his midnight ride, through the villages and farms of Middlesex County, sounding the note of alarm. Paul Revere in his diary says that the lanterns were hung out on the belfry of the North Church, and this has caused confusion in the minds of many, but the apparent discrepancy in accounts was clearly explained in the columns of the "Evening Transcript," a few years ago. The Church of the Mathers, which stood on North Square, was called the old North Church, built at a much earlier date. A dispute arose as to whether the lanterns were hung in the steeple of the Mather Church or of Christ Church. The authorities of the City of Boston went into the subject fully some years ago, and decided that Christ Church was unquestionably the place, and the city placed a tablet to that effect on that spot on the church.

How did Paul Revere come to speak of Christ Church as the North Church, when, as is well known, that was the designation of the Mather Church in North Square? The following is believed to be the explanation. The Mather Church, built in 1650, was the Most Northerly Church, and was called the North Church. Seventy-five years later Christ Church was some distance further North, and it, in turn, became known as the North Church, and the Mather Church, to distinguish it from the new North was called the Old North Church. The Old South and the New Old South is an analagous case today. Judging from Paul Revere's phrase, Christ Church was called the North, not the Old North, while the Mother Church was standing, but after

that was destroyed, the words, "Old North" came to be applied to Christ Church.

The corner stone of Christ Church was laid in 1723 by

Christ Church, 1775

Rev. Samuel Myles, then rector of King's Chapel, who pronounced the following words: "May the gates of Hell never prevail against it." It was opened for Divine services December 29, of the same year, by Rev. Timothy Cutter, the

first rector. In a letter written about this time Dr. Cutter stated that there were "thirty-two Negro and Indian slaves" in his parish.

In less than a dozen years this church will have attained its bi-centenary. Beneath the chancel are buried the remains of Rev. Dr. Cutter, the first pastor, and his wife. In the tower is a very fine chime of bells, the oldest in America, and were first rung in 1745. The bells all bear appropriate inscriptions.

The bells are very sweet in tone, and on a clear and quiet morning can be heard many miles down the bay. One listens to their musical notes and recalls the words of the English poet:

> "Those Evening bells! those Evening bells!
> How many a tale their music tells
> Of youth and home and that sweet time,
> When last I heard their soothing chime."

There are some rare historical relics in this old church. The Bible, Book of Common Prayer, and Silver Communion Service, still in use, were presented to the Church in 1733 by His Majesty, King George, the Second. The old Bible is a most interesting one, and is called the "Vinegar Bible," on account of a curious error which appears on one of the pages, the word "Vinegar" being printed in place of the word "Vineyard" in the chapter of St. Luke, which refers to the "Parable of the Vineyard." Some of the Prayer Books have paper pasted over "King and Royal Family," and the words, "President of the United States" written over it. At one time part of the Communion Set was pledged to the creditors of the church.

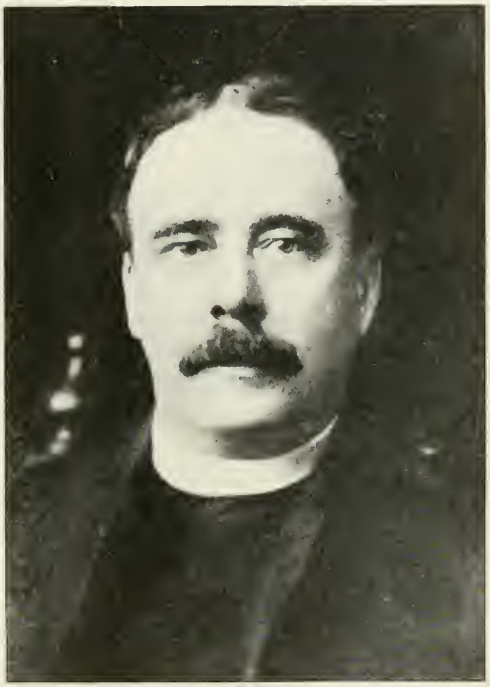
The figures of Cherubim in front of the Organ and the Chandelier, were taken from a French vessel by the Privateer, "Queen of Hungary," and presented to the church in 1746 by Capt. Gruchy, a member of the church. The Chandelier was arranged to hold candles, and it is said it, with the Cherubim, were intended for the French Cathedral in Montreal. While the battle of Bunker Hill was in progress, Generals Gage and Clinton used the belfry of this church as an observatory. When the latter saw how the tide of battle was going against the British, he hastened to Bunker Hill and placed himself at the head of a detachment in an assault against the American redoubt.

Rev. Matthew Byles was pastor from 1758 to 1775. His father was pastor of King's Chapel, and was famous for his wit and jokes. In 1777 he was arrested as a Tory, placed under guard and ordered to be sent to England in forty days. There are many good stories related of him in "Dealings with the Dead." He was discovered one morning pacing before his door with a musket on his shoulder, and one of his neighbors asked the cause. "You see," says the Doctor, "I begged the Sentinel to let me go for some milk for my family, but he would not suffer me to stir. I reasoned the matter with him, and he has gone himself, on condition that I keep guard in his absence." Although he was a Tory, he was intimate with the patriot General Henry Knox, who after the evacuation of Boston by the British, marched through Boston at the head of his artillery. Byles yelled out at him, "I never saw an ox fatter in my life." General Knox, who was very stout, did not seem to relish this personal allusion. Now and then he found his match. He was at one time devoted to a lady, who finally married a Quincy. He met her one day and asked her how she happened to choose Quincy instead of Byles. She promptly replied, "If there had been anything worse than biles Job would have been afflicted by them."

As Christ Church was a Tory Church it was closed in 1776 when the British evacuated Boston but in 1783 it was reopened for service. The belfry of this church will always be associated with one of the most stirring and popular poems in our literature. The well known Boston Historian, Edwin D. Mead, says:—"It is through Longfellow's eyes, that every one of us, on the eve of each Patriots' Day, sees in the belfry height, 'a glimmer and then a gleam of light,' to give assurance that Lexington and Concord shall have their warning."

Christ Church, 1916

The present Rector, Rev. Dr. Alexander Mann, although comparatively a recent comer to Boston, stands in the very front rank of Boston preachers, and is a well known figure

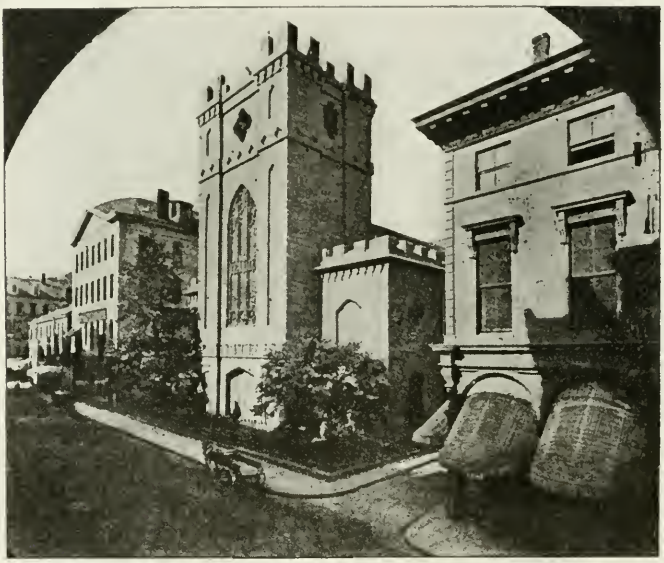


Rev. Alexander Mann, D. D., Rector

to many Bostonians. He was born in Geneva, New York, and on his father's side being of Scotch Highlander descent. After his graduation from the Theological Seminary in New York, he acquired a valuable experience as Rector of St. James of Buffalo. This parish had several mission churches

around the city and during Dr. Mann's pastorate it took three men to look after them. The congregations in these chapels were mostly railroad men and their families. It proved to be a good apprenticeship for understanding the point of view of the average man. At his next parish in Orange, N. J., the work was of an entirely different character.

The Boston Herald says of him: "His hobby is to love



Trinity Church, Summer Street, 1870

people. He thinks no message ever delivered from the pulpit has any value unless it moves its hearers to action. That is what sermons are for, and no sermons can move to action that do not not proceed from the knowledge of living, loving, sufferings of working men and women, a knowledge which can only be acquired by constant contact with people."

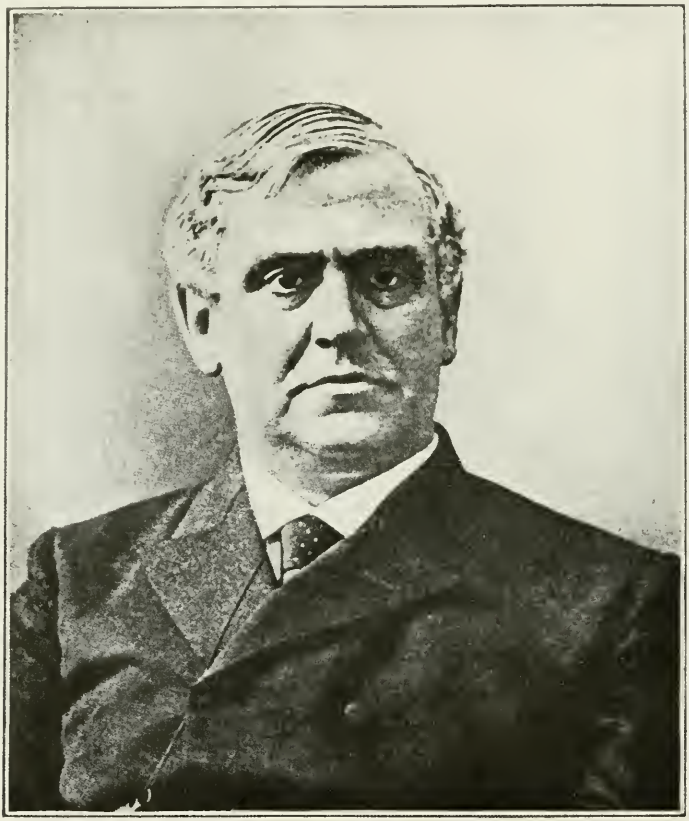
This is one of the oldest Episcopal Churches in Boston, dating back to 1728. Today it is one of the most widely known of all the churches of that denomination. Its first house of worship, erected in 1735, was a very plain wooden building and stood on the corner of Summer and Hawley

Streets, and in that building the Society worshipped for nearly 100 years. One of the most prominent pew holders in that church was Peter Faneuil, and no doubt he was very influential in shaping the destinies of that church. The first pastor, the Rev. Addington Davenport, was a brother-in-law to Faneuil. When General Washington visited Boston in 1787, he attended service at Trinity, and listened to a sermon by Dr. Parker, who afterwards rose to be a bishop. This church might almost be called a Training School for Bishops, as so many of its Rectors have been called to the Episcopate. Among them, George Washington Doane, to be Bishop of New Jersey; John Henry Hopkins, Bishop of Vermont; Thomas March Clark, Bishop of Rhode Island; Manton Eastburn, Bishop of this Diocese; Phillips Brooks, Bishop of this Diocese.

In 1828 the corner stone of a new house of worship was laid on the original site. It was a solid gothic structure of granite and was the home of the parish until 1872 when it went down in that cyclone of flame which swept the business district of Boston. That massive stone building with the square tower was a familiar landmark to two generations of Bostonians and there are many citizens who readily recall its looks. Rev. Phillips Brooks at that time was the Rector of the Church and he wrote a most vivid description of the fire a day or two afterwards. He said: "The desolation is bewildering. Old Trinity seemed safe till night, but toward morning the fire swept into her rear and there was no chance. She went at four in the morning. I saw her well afire, inside and out, and carried off some books and robes, and left her. She went majestically, and her great tower stands now as solid as ever, a most picturesque and stately ruin. She died in dignity. I did not know how much I liked the great gloomy old thing till I saw her windows bursting and the flames running along the old high pews."

For several months prior to the destruction of the church, the parish had been considering a change of location and the subject of a new edifice was left to the direction of a Building Committee. The site chosen by the Committee was the corner of Boylston and Clarendon Streets. The designs of Gamewell and Richardson, Architects, were accepted, and as a result Boston has that splendid church building on Copley Square, one of the finest structures of the kind in the United States, in a most commanding location. The

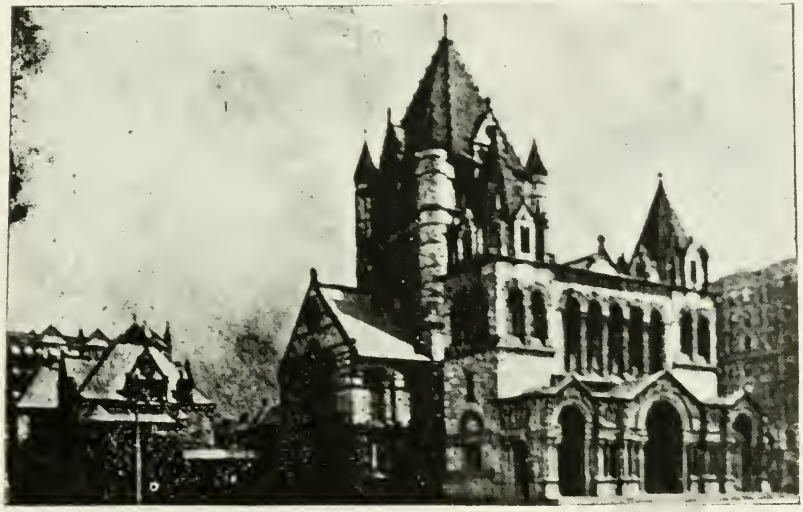
building was completed early in the year 1877 and is in the pure French Romanesque style, in the shape of a Latin cross. The whole interior is finished in black walnut and the vestibule in oak and ash. It has a handsome and unique



Rev. Phillips Brooks

chapel connected with the main structure by an open cloister, the effect of which is very pleasing. The cost of the building was $750,000. Some of the greatest preachers of the denomination have served this church as Rector and we have alluded to those who have been raised to the office of bishop. Perhaps the most widely known of tehm all was the late Rev. Phillips Brooks. He was born in Boston, Dec.

13, 1833, and died Jan. 13, 1893. After his graduation from Harvard College he taught for a short period at the Boston Latin School and later studied at the Theological Seminary at Alexandria, Virginia. He was ordained to the ministry in 1859, and was Rector successively at the Church of the Advent and the Church of the Holy Trinity in Philadelphia. In 1869 he returned to his native city to assume the duties of Rector of Trinity Church, where he remained until 1891, when he was elected Bishop of Massachusetts. His sudden



Trinity Church, Copley Square, 1916

death was the occasion of public mourning seldom equalled in Boston, and his funeral at Trinity Church was a public demonstration of love and respect. Few men have ever impressed themselves so strongly for good upon the minds and hearts of all who came in contact with him. He was beloved by men and women in all walks of life, irrespective of race or creed.

"Dr. Mann shows a keen understanding of human nature and interest in his organization of the work of the Parish. Trinity Church, under his leadership, is doing work among students, both men and women. It stands for the guild principle. There are guilds for nurses, and students, for missions and social work, for sewing, singing and study. Each guild has its own life, individuality and head."

The Christian Science Church

The Christian Science Church

By Clifford P. Smith.

The center of a world-wide religious movement is located in Boston at the corner of Falmouth, Norway and St. Paul Streets. In the triangle formed by these streets are the original edifice, erected 1894, and the later extension or additional auditorium, erected 1905, of "The Mother Church" of the Christian Science denomination, "The First Church of Christ, Scientist, in Boston." The first public services of this church were held in 1879 in a private house in the Charlestown district. Subsequently larger quarters were sought and found in the Hawthorne rooms on Park Street and in Copley Hall on Clarendon Street. Meanwhile branch organizations sprang up in other cities, and in other countries. At present (1917) these "branches of The Mother Church" number over 1600, including some eighteen in Boston and its suburbs, but the original church in Boston continues to be the head and center, so far as denominational organization is concerned, of the Christian Science movement.

The First Church of Christ, Scientist, includes a local congregation that not infrequently fills the more than 5000 seats of the main church building; a publication house located just across St. Paul Street, and the offices of "The Christian Science Board of Directors" and their subordinate officials, who occupy part of the church edifice and two floors of the Massachusetts Trust Company's building at 236 Huntington Avenue. Between Huntington Avenue and Falmouth Street at this point the ground is owned by the Christian Scientists and it has been made a beautifully kept park or garden, which furnishes a footway between the Huntington Avenue car lines and the Church.

The official residence of the "first reader" of The Mother Church is at 385 Commonwealth Avenue, while the house occupied by Mrs. Eddy, the discoverer of Christian Science and founder of the Church of Christ, Scientist, is at 385 Beacon Street, Chestnut Hill, and is still held by the trustees of her estate.

Probably nothing in or about Boston brings so many visitors from all parts of the world to Boston during each and every year as does the presence here of the headquarters of the Christian Science movement.

One activity of this movement needs to be mentioned especially, namely, The Christian Science Monitor, a daily newspaper. Other religious denominations have well-established monthly or weekly periodicals, but the Christian Scientists alone have established a successful daily newspaper. The Christian Science Publishing Society also issues The Christian Science Quarterly Bible Lessons (quarterly), The Christian Science Journal (monthly), Der Herold der Christian Science (monthly), and the Christian Science Sentinel (weekly); all of which, including The Christian Science Monitor, circulate from Boston throughout the United States, Canada, Australia, New Zealand, South Africa, Great Britain, and the continent of Europe.

From its beginning the Christian Science Church has disclaimed reliance on the number of its members, yet its growth has been remarkable for numbers as well as for the intelligence of its members. And from the first this church has ever kept in view its purpose as stated by its founder, to "reinstate primitive Christianity and its lost element of healing." (Church Manual, page 17.)

Methodism in Boston

By Charles S. Nutter, Librarian New England Methodist Historical Society.

Methodism, sometimes designated as "Christianity in Earnest," began in Oxford University, England, in 1729, and in New York City in 1766.

The real beginning of Methodism in Boston was in 1790 when the Rev. Jesse Lee was appointed to this place.

He reached the city on the 9th of July and began immediately to look for a church in which to preach. Failing in this, he tried to secure permission to preach in the Court House, or a schoolhouse, but did not succeed.

He says: "On one occasion I went out on the Common, and, standing on a table, began to sing with only a few persons present. But having prayed and begun to preach, the number increased, so that there were two or three thousand attentive hearers. This may be considered the beginning of Methodism in Boston, and in all those parts of the country."

The first Methodist Society in Boston was formed on the 13th day of July, 1792. On the 28th day of August, 1795, the cornerstone was laid of the first Methodist Meeting House in Boston, which was fixed at the North End, and was built of wood, 46 feet by 36 feet, with galleries in front and on both sides of the house.

By this time some of the clergymen of Boston of the more liberal type, began to look upon the new movement with favor, and a few made subscriptions to the building fund. Among them were the Rev. James Freeman, pastor of King's Chapel, and the Rev. John Murry.

Jesse Lee was said to be a very large man of fine appearance. No portrait of him is extant, which is greatly to be regretted.

One of the most successful preachers of Methodism in Boston was the Rev. Elijah Hedding. He was appointed pastor for two years three times, namely, 1811-12, 1815-16, and 1822-1823.

In 1824, Hedding was elected one of the bishops of the Methodist Episcopal Church. The Hedding Church on Tremont Street, between Concord and Worcester Streets, was named in his honor. It was during his first pastorate in Boston, in 1811, that a young sailor, Edward T. Taylor, ventured into Old Bromfield Street Church and heard Pastor Hedding preach.

In the prayer meeting that followed, he went to the altar and cried for mercy, and before the meeting closed he was a happy convert.

This young sailor in 1829 became the Chaplain of the Boston Port Society, and later of the Seaman's Bethel.

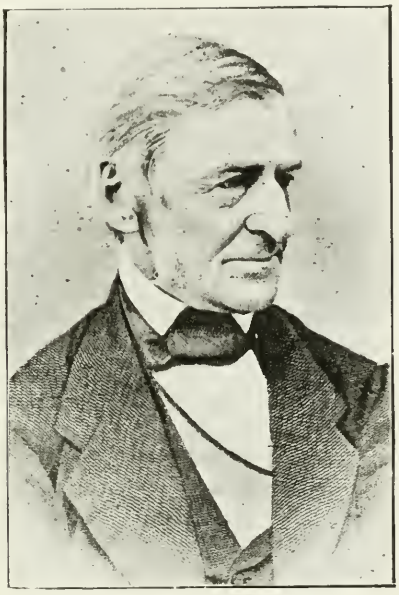
Father Taylor, as he came to be called, was known far and wide and loved by everybody in Boston. His sailor boys carried his name and fame around the world.

Methodism has succeeded in Boston. Many churches have been built in the city proper and there are some very strong and prosperous churches in the suburbs, where many Boston business men reside.

Two Methodist institutions deserve especial mention. One is the "Morgan Memorial," which, with its industries and stores, its training classes and children's settlements, and its Church of all Nations is doing a great work for the unfortunate of Boston. The second great institution we mention is Boston University. It was incorporated in 1869, and has added to its Theological School, a College of Liberal Arts, a School of Law, a Medical School, and a School of Business Administration. In less than fifty years it has outstripped many of its contemporaries, and next to Harvard and Yale has become the greatest University in New England."

Ralph Waldo Emerson

Oliver Wendell Holmes, in his excellent biography of Ralph Waldo Emerson says: "We have in New England a certain number of families who constitute what may be called the academic races. Their names have been on Col-



Ralph Waldo Emerson

lege Catalogues for generation after generation. They have filled the learned professions, more especially, the ministry, from old colonial days to our own time. If aptness for the acquisition of knowledge can be bred into a family, we know what we may expect of one of the academic races. The family made historic by the birth of Ralph Waldo Emerson, had a most striking record in this respect."

His grandfather, the Rev. William Emerson, was a famous preacher at Concord at the outbreak of the American

Revolution. He was an ardent patriot and preached resistance to tyrants from his pulpit, and encouraged his townsmen and their allies to make a stand against the British Soldiery who had marched in warlike array upon their peaceful village. He was eager to do his part in the fight at the bridge, but his friends would not permit him to do so. The next year, 1776, he left his pulpit to join the American forces at Ticonderoga. On his way thither he was stricken with fever and was advised to return to Concord and died on the way home. His son, the second of that name, and father of Ralph Waldo, was a minister and Pastor of the First Church of Boston in 1799. He is described as a handsome man, of fair complexion, tall, with easy and graceful manners, having a very melodious voice and distinct utterance. At that time the First Church was in Chauncey Place, and the parsonage was on Summer Street, nearly opposite Hawley Street. It was in this parsonage that Ralph Waldo Emerson was born, May 25, 1803.

As late as 1843, this section of Boston was a quiet and aristocratic residential neighborhood. Here were the pleasant and comfortable homes of Judge Charles Jackson and of S. P. Gardner, with their beautiful flower gardens, and little orchards, with luscious fruits. In the immediate vicinity was the fine old mansion of Judge William Prescott, and it was in that house that his gifted son, the Historian, wrote that splendid work, The Conquest of Mexico, and "under difficulties almost as formidable as those encountered by Cortes." The Rev. William Emerson died in 1811, and shortly after his death his widow and her two sons removed to a house on Beacon Street, on the site of the Boston Athenaeum building. She kept a few boarders, among them Lemuel Shaw, afterwards Chief Justice of the State of Massachusetts. It was near Boston Common, and Ralph Waldo and his brother Charles drove their mother's cow to pasture there. Ralph Waldo entered the Latin School at an early age. When eleven years old he was turning Virgil into very readable English. Although he became one of the greatest of American writers, he was not particularly distinguished at College. His class mate, Josiah Quincy, said of him that "he gave no sign of the power that was fashioning itself for leadership in a near time, or that he was to be the most original and influential

writer born in America. He was quiet, unobtrusive, and only a fair scholar, according to the standard of the College authorities."

After his graduation from College he became a Divinity Student, meantime teaching in several places, among others at an old fashioned Academy at Chelmsford, Mass One of his pupils there was the Hon. Josiah G. Abbott, who tells of the impression Mr. Emerson made upon him. "He was very grave, quiet and impressive in his appearance. There was something engaging, almost fascinating about him. He was never harsh or severe, always perfectly self controlled, never punished except with words, but exercised complete control over the boys. He had the faculty of making the boys love him." He also taught at Cambridge, where he had the same success with his pupils. During all these years he was pursuing a theological course under the gifted Rev. William E. Channing.

At the time when Emerson reached manhood, Unitarianism was a strong and growing denomination, and they had many able and eloquent preachers. Emerson entered that fold and in 1826 he "was approbated to preach by the Middlesex Association of Ministers." He spent several months in the South for his health, and upon his return to Boston, in 1829, he was ordained a colleague with Rev. Henry Ware, pastor of the Second Church. The resignation of Mr. Ware threw all the pastoral duties upon Mr. Emerson, who performed them faithfully and acceptably, and while pastor of the church he took an active part in the public affairs of Boston, serving on the School Board and as Chaplain of the Massachusetts State Senate. He sympathized with the Anti-Slavery agitation, and Garrison and Phillips were invited to speak from his platform. He was also a warm friend to Father Taylor, the great Sailor preacher at the North End.

In a few years Mr. Emerson resigned the pastorate and the separation was attended with the best and kindest feelings on both sides.

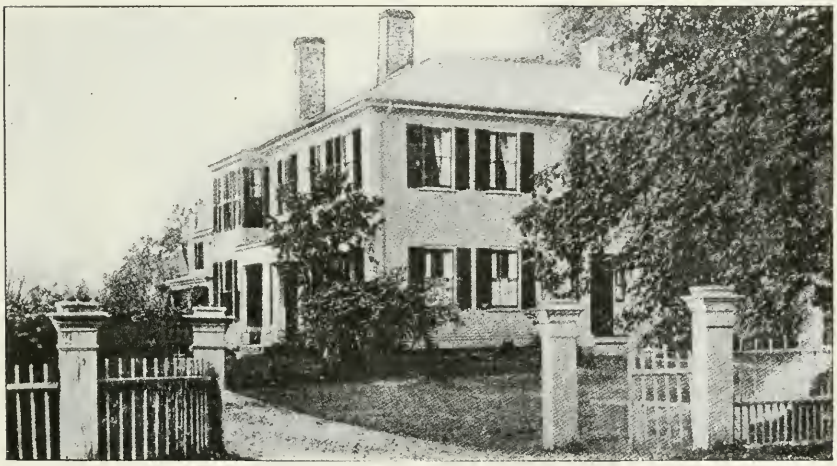
He then made quite an extended tour of Europe and while in Scotland he preached in the Unitarian Chapel in Edinburgh. One who heard him on that occasion says: "The pregnant thoughts and serene self possession of the young Boston minister had a greater charm for me than

the rhetorical splendors of Chalmers. His voice was the sweetest, the most winning and penetrating of any I ever heard. Nothing like it have I ever heard." In 1834 he took up his residence in Concord, the town of his forefathers, and here he made his home the remainder of his life. The house he occupied he called the "Manse." It was built for his grandfather, the Rev. William Emerson, and was an old fashioned gambrel roofed house, and located near the bridge, the scene of the Concord fight of 1775. In one of the rooms he wrote that famous essay, "Nature," which, as one has said, "marked a further stride beyond the bounds of orthodoxy." Some years later Hawthorne wrote in that same room his work, "Mosses from the Manse."

From this time on Emerson devoted his time and talents to literature and to lecturing. His first lectures were on "Water," and "The Relation of Man to the Globe." These lectures do not appear in any of his published works. Later, he gave several lectures relating to his Experiences while in Europe. He also lectured on "Michael Angelo," "Milton," "Luther," "George Fox" and "Edmund Burke." Speaking of his lectures on Milton, Holmes says: "Emerson felt that he was listening in his own soul to whispers that seemed like echoes from that of the divine Singer. Both were turned away from the clerical office by a revolt of conscience against the beliefs required of them; both lost very dear objects of affection in early manhood, and mourned for them in tender and mellifluous threnodies." In 1835 he gave an "Historical Address on the Second Centennial of the Incorporation of the Town." He told the story of Old Concord in as painstaking and faithful a way as if he had been by nature an annalist. Concord is one of the most interesting of New England towns. "In Emerson's day there were several men in Concord who ran to extreme idiosyncrasies; Alcott, in speculations; Hawthorne, who brooded himself into a dream-peopled solitude; and Thoreau, the nullifier of civilization. But Emerson kept his balance among them all. He never lost the saving common sense which enabled him to command, at all times, the respect of his fellow townsmen."

In 1848 he again visited Europe, and upon his return, published his work, "Representative Men," and his selec-

tion of names is characteristic of Emerson. They were Plato, the Philosopher; Swedenborg, the Mystic; Montaigne, the Skeptic; Shakespeare, the Poet; Napoleon, the Man of the World; Goethe, the Writer. His book, "English Traits," called by some the most interesting, is shrewd and suggestive. The English Aristocracy are said to be descended from twenty thousand thieves, who landed at Hastings; btu time has toned most of them and the people at large, down, until they are desirable as plucky, vigorous, independent, each of them an island himself, and are



Emerson's Home in Concord

blessed with a saving stupidity. He called Napoleon the man of stone and iron, the agitator, the internal improver, the liberal, the radical, but withal, the boundless liar." Some of Emerson's sayings, like those of Franklin, have become proverbs with the common people, "Hitch your wagon to a star," and "He builded better than he knew." In 1873, when he made his third trip to Europe, his fame was well established on the other side of the Atlantic and his addresses in England were attended by people of distinguished character. There is a noble spirit of true Americanism running all through Emerson's writings.

In his last published work he says: "Let the passion for

America cast out the passion for Europe. Here let there be what the earth waits for—exalted manhood. What this country longs for is personalities, grand persons to counteract its materialities. Those who find America insipid, they whose homes have been spoiled by London and Paris can be spared to return to those cities. I not only see a career at home, for more genius than we have, but for more than there is in the world." In Emerson there was combined the Poet, the Philosopher and the Prophet. His Poetry will live through the Ages. His Philosophy lifts men out of gross materialism as he "mirrors the inspirations of all great souls of all times, and countries," and by the depth and strength of his thought, he carries men to a higher plane of vision. The careful reader of Emerson's works will find in them many gems of great value. He is a teacher who inspires his pupils, and they gladly follow him. As one writer has said, "In Emerson, America has possessed a keen philosophic seer, worthy of his accorded rank among the master minds of the world, one of the inspiring forces, which work silently and by permeation, but accomplish greater things, than many that are heralded by trumpets."

Extracts from a poem of Emerson read in Faneuil Hall on December 16, 1873, the Centennial Anniversary of the Destruction of the Tea in Boston Harbor.

BOSTON

E Sicut Patribus Sit Deus Nobis.

The Rocky nook with hill tops three
Looked eastward from the farms,
And twice each day the flowing sea
Took Boston in its arms;
The men of yore were stout and poor,
And sailed for bread to every shore.

And where they went on trade intent,
They did what freemen can,
Their dauntless ways did all men praise,
The merchant was a man.
The world was made for honest trade,
To plant and eat be none afraid.

The waves that rocked them on the deep
To them their secret told;
Said the winds that sung the lads to sleep,
"Let us be free and bold!"
The honest waves refused to slaves
The empire of the ocean waves.

Old Europe groans with palaces,
Has lords enough and more;
We plant and build by foaming seas
A city of the poor;
For day by day could Boston Bay
Their honest labor overpay.

We grant no dukedoms to the few,
We hold like rights, and shall;
Equal on Sunday in the pew,
On Monday in the mall,
For what avail the plough or sail,
Or land or sea if freedom fail?

Bad news from George, on the English throne;
"You are thriving well," said he;
"Now by these presents be it known
You shall pay us a tax on tea;
'Tis very small—no load at all,—
Honor enough that we send the call."

"Not so," said Boston, "good my lord,
We pay your governors here
Abundant for their bed and board,
Six thousand pounds a year.
(Your highness knows our homely word,)
Millions for self-government,
But for tribute never a cent."

The cargo came! and who could blame
If Indians seized the tea,
And chest by chest, let down the same,
Into the laughing sea?
For what avail, the plough or sail
Or land or sea, if freedom fail.

The townsmen braved the English King,
Found friendship with the French
And honor joined the patriot ring,
Low on their wooden bench
Kings shook with fear, and Empires crave
The secret force to find,
Which fired the little State to save
The rights of all mankind.

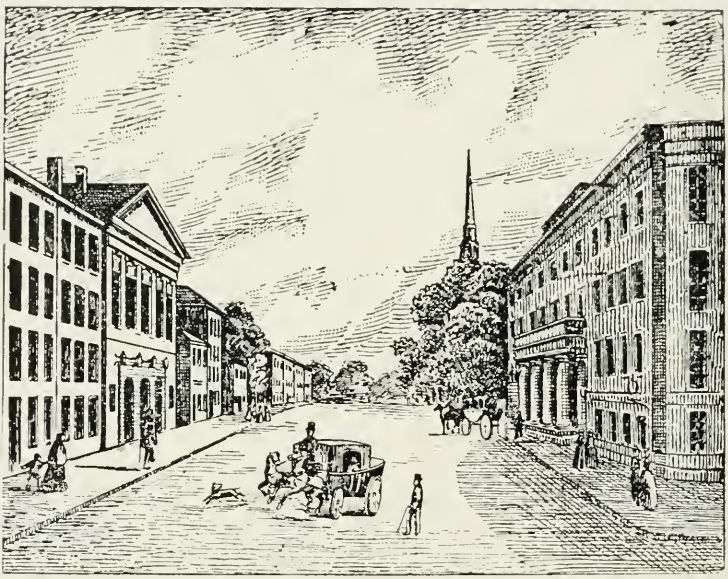
But right is might through all the world,
Province to province faithful clung,
Through good and ill the war-bolt hurled
Till freedom cheered and joy bells rung.

A blessing to the ages thus
Shield all the roofs and towers,
God with the Fathers so with us
Thou darling town of ours!

Some Views on Tremont Street

We are standing in front of King's Chapel and looking west. Just across the street is a narrow four-story brick building enclosed on two sides and overtopped by the Parker House. On the first floor of this building was the book store of Mr. Burnham who did a thriving business in second hand books. The Parker House management looked with longing eyes on this little piece of land, but were kept waiting many years before they obtained possession. The addition to the Hotel now covering the site of the bookstore, is an architectural gem. The tall building beyond the book store is Tremont Temple which was destroyed by fire a few years ago. A new and more elegant Temple arose from the ruins. Adjoining the Temple was Butler's Dry Goods Store and still holds its own there. The upper rooms were occupied by the Young Men's Christian Association in 1862. Across the little court and on the corner of Bromfield Street was the building of the Massachusetts Horticultural Society, a firm substantial structure of Quincy granite. Ten years ago when the society erected their commodious structure on the corner of Massachusetts and Huntington Avenues they sold the Tremont Street Property to a trust and a modern eleven-story office building arose on that corner and is known as the Paddock Building. Across Bromfield Street is the Studio Building. Here in Revolutionary days stood the home of Major Paddock, a prominent citizen of Boston, and an active and outspoken Tory. He was a valuable member of the militia of the Province and commanded the Artillery Regiment. He was a good military man and the instructor in the artillery line of two men who afterwards became valuable officers in General Washington's army, Captain Crane of Boston Tea Party fame and General Henry Knox the Boston bookseller. He builded better than he knew for the patriot cause. In front of the Granary Burying Ground may be seen a row of fine large trees. They were planted by Major Paddock in 1762 and were ever after known as the Paddock Elms. He imported the trees from England and

matured them in Milton. They stood until 1873 when changes in the paving on Tremont Street caused them to grow unsightly and they were cut down. The doughty Major was exceeding wroth with the Yankees who, in their jubilation over the repeal of the Stamp Act, hung lanterns on the branches of the trees. He considered it a desecration of his pets, for he doubtless watched the whole proceedings



Some Views on Tremont Street, 1840

and he offered a guinea reward for "information of the person or persons who had cut and hacked the trees." The old Major was a noted character in his day. A "bon vivant," he christened that portion of Tremont Street, shaded by his elms, "Long Acre," in memory of a convivial section of London. The majestic trees inside of the old Granary Burying Ground still flourish and shade the graves of the sturdy old patriots, who are quietly sleeping there. Major Paddock planned to deliver two of the guns of his company to General Gage. We tell the story elsewhere of how the patriots took them almost from under his very nose and delivered

them to General Washington during the Siege of Boston. These guns saw service through the Revolution. They were christened "Hancock" and "Adams" and are now the property of the Bunker Hill Monument Association and may be seen by all visitors to the monument. Major Paddock left Boston when Washington compelled the British to evacuate Boston, and returning to England was made Governor of the Island of Jersey. On the corner of Winter and Tremont Streets, was the fine residence of Hugh Earl Percy. He belonged to the very flower of the English nobility and was an officer in the British troops in Boston. On April 19, 1775, when the news of the battle of Lexington reached Boston and reinforcements were sent out by the British general, Percy's Red Coats were hurried out of their barracks on Boston Common, and the line stretched down Tremont Street from the Common to Queen (Court) Street, and they started for Lexington, by way of Boston Neck, the fifes and drums playing "Yankee Doodle." It was an anxious day for both the "Loyalists" and the "Continentals" and many were awaiting the outcome of the fight to decide with whom they would cast their lot.

On the corner of Park and Tremont Streets and abutting the Granary Burying Ground, is the far famed Park Street Church of which we speak elsewhere. On the east side of the Burying Ground may be seen the comfortable looking Tremont House, which old Bostonians miss, even to this day. After the destruction by fire in 1818 of the old Exchange Coffee House, which stood in Congress Square, there was no house in Boston worthy the name of Hotel, and it was the source of much regret to the traveling public as well as to the citizens, for there was no place where distinguished visitors could be suitably entertained. In the spring of 1828 a subscription fund was raised and the building of the Tremont House assured. It was completed in August, 1829 and opened in the following October and was the pioneer first class hotel in America. Mr. Dwight Boyden, son of Simeon Boyden, an old innkeeper of Boston, was its first manager, and under his regime was held on October 16, 1829, the opening dinner. The bill of fare used on that occasion was a lithograph of handwriting, the first ever transferred in this country. The lithographer of that day was William S. Pendleton who in 1828 visited Germany and secured the services of

one of the best workmen of that time. When the bankers present were told that the bill was printed they were frightened and one old merchant asked, "If Dwight Boyden's signature is printed, 'what are our checks worth?'" This dinner was divided into four courses and dessert. In the four courses were 37 different kinds of food and the dessert consisted of four varieties of pears and five varieties of grapes. The St. Michael's pears and the grapes were from the gardens and graperies of S. G. Perkins, N. Bridge, and S. R. Johnson. About 120 persons, mostly merchants, were present. His Honor, Mayor Josiah Quincy, presided and among the gentlemen present were Judge Joseph Story, Daniel Webster, Edward Everett, Benjamin Gorham, John Reed of Barnstable, the three last named being then members of Congress, Peter Brooks, Major Barton, David Sears, Harrison Gray Otis, Samuel Appleton, Thomas Perkins, James Perkins, Andrew E. Belknap, Josiah Bradlee, Amos Lawrence, Nathan Appleton, Edmund Dwight, Robert G. Shaw, Patrick T. Jackson, William Appleton, William Lawrence, John C. Jones, Thomas P. Wales, James K. Mills, Dr. George C. Shattuck, Joseph Coolidge, Ebenezer T. Andrews, Giles Lodge, Richard D. Tucker, Daniel P. Parker, Israel Munson, John Hurd, Jr., Edward Tuckerman, Richard Fletcher, Henry B. Rogers, George and Thomas Searle, Joshua Clarke, Geo. W. Pratt, James Reed, James W. Page, Jeremiah Fitch, John C. Lee, John A. Lowell, Charles Bradbury, Frederick Tudor, Daniel Safford, Isaac Stevens, E. A. and W. Winchester, Joshua Davis, Benjamin B. Mussey, Samuel H. Babcock, David Denny, Joseph B. Bradlee, Cornelius Coolidge, Thomas Nutmarsh, Montgomery Newell, Elisha Parks, Lorenzo Draper, Nathaniel R. Sturgis, William Thompson, Benjamin Loring, Ebenezer Chadwick, Samuel Fales, David Lowe, Israel Bangs, Arthur French, W. Tuckerman, Isaac McLellan, Francis Skinner, Henry Gassett, Jacob Hall, Charles Well and John L. Gardner. It was surely a worthy list of names.

In his speech Edward Everett said, "I will, with your leave, propose a toast: 'The Memory of Columbus! The father of American travelers who thought the world too narrow for him even before he was sure there was any other, who crossed the unknown Atlantic for a trip of pleasure and discovered a new continent for his watering place.'"

In the days of Dwight Boyden and John L. Tucker, the

service in the dining room was as elaborate as the steps and figure in an old fashioned minuet. When this hotel was built it was the finest public house in America. Among the early guests at this house were Thackeray and Charles Dickens, the great English authors; Charles and Fanny Kemble, and President Andrew Jackson. John Wilkes Booth, the actor, was there shortly before he assassinated President Lincoln.

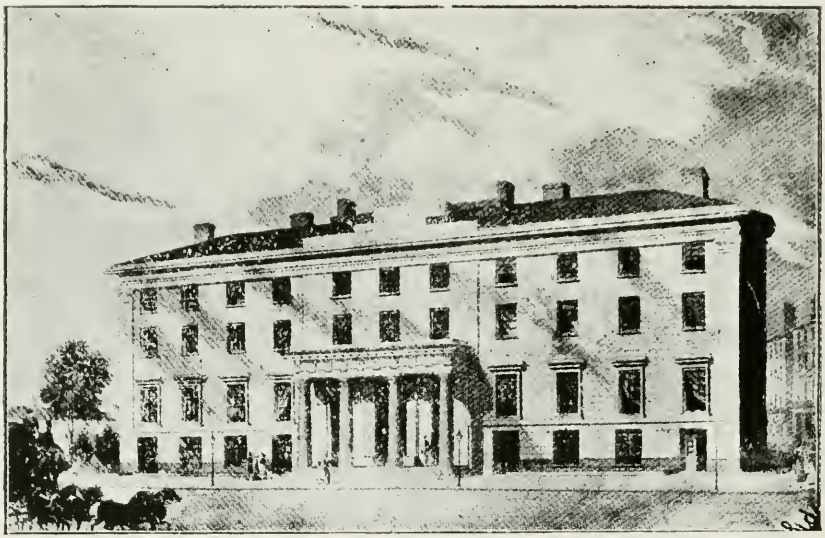
A little farther out on Tremont Stret, between West and

Tremont Street, Looking South, in 1860

Mason Streets, stood a famous block of buildings known as "Colonnade Row," so called because in front of the doors was a porch, supported by Corinthian columns. The block was designed by Charles Bulfinch, the well known architect of the State House, and who designed other famous buildings.

It was erected in 1810 and here for many years resided many of Boston's wealthiest citizens. The house shown on the left hand side of the picture was for many years the home of Amos Lawrence of the great dry goods firms of A. & A. Lawrence Co., a very wealthy man, and a great

philanthropist, who died in this house in 1852. The site, on the corner of West and Tremont Streets is now occupied by an elegant business structure known as the Lawrence Building, and the estate is still in the possession of the Lawrence family. After Lafayette's visit to America in 1825, this portion of Tremont Street, was known as "Lafayette Place," which name it retained for many years. Today the Mall on the Common stretching southward from Park Street along Tremont Street, is called "Lafayette Mall".



Tremont House—1860

Where the Hotel Touraine now stands was once the home of the Adams family and on the hotel building a tablet with this inscription:

On this site stood the Residence of

JOHN QUINCY ADAMS

Sixth President of the United States
Here his son Charles Francis Adams
was born in 1817.
Minister to England 1861-1868

Capt. Dalton's House, Site of Boston Postoffice

Church Green, 1850

New South Church

This is an excellent picture of what was known as the "New South Church," as it appeared sixty years ago. The site is the junction of Summer and Bedford Streets and as far as can be learned the first owner was Richard Tuttle, who set up a windmill on the property, which was then quite near the water. For a long time Bedford Street was known as Blind Lane. When it was widened and laid out as a residential street, this little narrow neck of land was called "Church Green." Our forefathers always selected most eligible sites on which to erect their church edifices, and as they considered this a fitting location for a church in days to come, it received its name, "Church Green," which it has ever since retained. The town owned the lot, but in 1715 deeded it to petitioners who proposed to build a church there to be called the "New South." The father of Samuel Adams, the Revolutionary patriot, lived on Purchase Street, near Congress, and was one of the signers of the petition. A church was built there and finished in 1719, and is described by a contemporary as "a convenient wooden building with a handsome steeple finished after the Ionick order, in which is a bell."

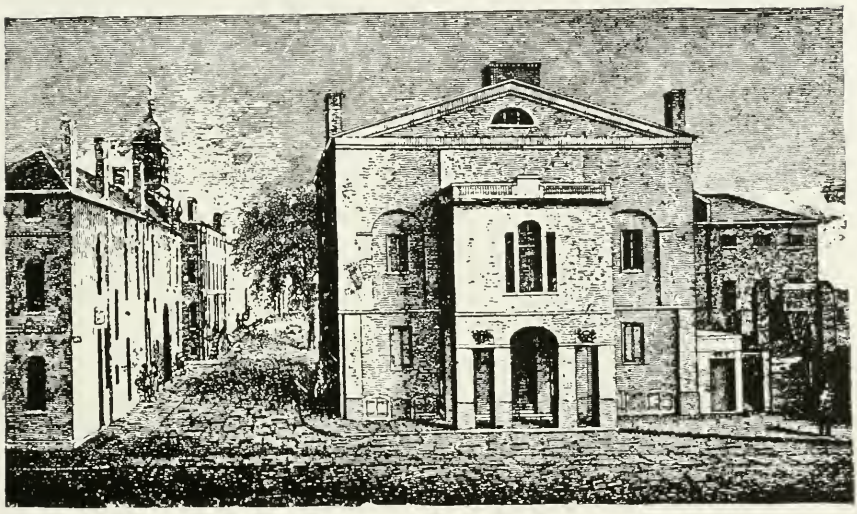
Rev. Peter Thatcher, who was settled in Weymouth, was called to the pastorate and the action stirred up quite a commotion in that staid old town, and also among some of the members of the "New South." There was no opposition to Mr. Thatcher as a man, or to his preaching, but it was a matter of conscience on the part of the members referred to. They considered it immoral for a wealthy church to take away the minister of a smaller and poorer church. This was one of the opponent's arguments: "Weymouth, in God's sight, is as precious as Boston, and the souls there of as great worth as the souls here. And to the common objection that it is a pity that Mr. Thatcher, being so bright a light, should smoke out his days in such obscurity, we answer, first, bright lights shine brightest in the darkest places, and, secondly, bright lights are the obscurer for burning in a room where there are more nd as bright." The vote inviting Mr. Thatcher to become pastor, was carried by a majority of one. There was no objection to Mr. Thatcher's ability or morals, but it seemed

to be a question of principle, as already stated, in the minds of quite a number, and when it came to installing him as pastor, there was a great uproar, and the exercises were carried out with great difficulty. The opposition organized a new society, and built a fine brick church on Hanover Street, known as the "Cockerel Church," which they dedicated in 1721. The church edifice represented in the cut, was the successor of the one in which Rev. Mr. Thatcher preached. It was built of Chelmsford granite in 1814, and was designed by Charles Bulfinch, the architect of the State House. Its location was commanding and ideal, being surrounded by fine residences, and it was considered one of the finest churches in the town. Its graceful spire rising 190 feet above the sidewalk was a noted landmark far down the harbor. The spire seen in the background on the left of the picture was that of the Rowe Street Baptist Church, which stood on the corner of Bedford and Rowe (near Chauncey) Streets, whose pastor in 1858, when this picture was taken, was the Rev. Baron Stow, D. D., one of the great lights of the Baptist denomination. From the church portico of the "New South" one might gaze at the blue waters of the harbor, then scarcely a stone's throw away. Here, as elsewhere, business pressure proved relentless and the grand old structure was torn down in 1868.

Watching the Departure of the British from Boston—1776

Old Boston Theatres

The Puritan atmosphere of early Boston was decidedly unfavorable to theatres and theatre going. But the town grew rapidly, a new and different, and, according to the re-



The Federal Street Theatre

ligious standard, of those days, a more worldly element was added to the population, and this class of citizens demanded amusement, particularly that afforded by the drama. The first Boston Theatre was built in 1794 and stood upon the corner of Federal and Franklin Streets. At that time that section of the city was rapidly becoming the fashionable residential quarter. It was called the "Federal Street Theatre." The original building was burned down, but was rebuilt in 1798, in a more substantial manner and until it was razed in 1852, it continued a most popular place of resort. In 1805 the name was changed to the "Boston." In 1828 it was re-

named "The Old Drury" and the name was again changed to the "Odeon" in 1835. Connected with the theatre was a large and handsome ball room, tea and card rooms and a kitchen. Many famous actors, whose names are still familiar to old theatre goers, have acted their parts on the stage of that old theatre.

It is not generally known that J. Howard Payne, the au-

The Haymarket Theatre and Tremont Street from West Street to Mason Street—1790-1800

thor of "Home Sweet Home," was a playwright and an actor. By the death of his father he was forced to leave college and went upon the stage and played a most successful engagement at this theatre. His talents attracted attention from prominent men, and we are told that through the influence of Daniel Webster and Washington Irving he was given a Consulship at Tunis where he died.

In 1821, the great English actor, Edmund Kean, made his appearance in Boston. He acted in Shakesperian parts, "Hamlet," "King Lear," and "Romeo." Nothing like his splendid acting had ever been seen in Boston, the house was crowded at every performance, hundreds turned away.

Accompanying cut is from an interesting water color by Alexander Robertson, which is now the property of the Boston Public Library. On the right of the picture is Boston Common, the entrance being indicated by the tall arched gateway. Near this gate stood the "pillory" and the "whipping post" which were placed here when they were removed from State Street. Beyond the further line of trees on the Common a glimpse may be had of the Charles River. The building on the right and in the background is the residence of William Foster; the site is now occupied by the Hotel Pelham on the corner of Tremont and Boylston Streets. The two-story and half building in the centre of the picture is "Hatch's Tavern," now the southern corner of Mason and Tremont Streets and the low building behind it is a carriage factory. Rising high above these buildings is the "Haymarket Theatre" as it appeared in 1798. It was a very exclusive theatre, intended for the "bon ton," but it was too ambitious for that day. It had a brief existence, for the Federal Street Theatre was a formidable rival and did some novel advertising. The town at that time could not support two large theatres. It stood on a lot a little south of the Colonnade building. In its day it was the largest and best arranged theatre in the country.

THE NATIONAL THEATRE.

This theatre began its career at a much later date than the "Federal Street" and the "Haymarket" and was located on Portland Street near Traverse Street. The first building erected on this site for amusement purposes was called the "American Amphitheatre" and was used for small indoor circuses and occasional theatrical performances. This was in 1832 and a few years later it was leased by William Polly, who had been manager of the Tremont Theatre, which theatre he left, considering he had been unjustly treated by the proprietors. He started this new theatre as a rival and called it the "Warren." This new venture was most liberally patronized, and Mr. Polly was obliged to rebuild and enlarge it in 1836, and he then called it the "National." There were excellent performances at this theatre and the audiences were always large. So successful did it prove that Mr. Polly could have retired at one time with a very considerable fortune. It continued to be a very popular place of amusement until 1852, when it was destroyed by fire. Two of the great-

est actors of those days, Macready and Hackett, played very successful engagements there. The plays of Shakespeare, "Hamlet," "Macbeth," "Richard the Third," "The Merchant of Venice," "Romeo and Juliet" and "Much Ado About Nothing," were given and always to large audiences. "Othello" proved to be the most popular and the most profitable of the Shakesperean plays. The second National Theatre was burned in 1863 and was never rebuilt. The last theatre never enjoyed the popularity of its predecessor. It had many managers who struggled in vain to make it pay expenses.

BOSTON THEATRE.

The present Boston Theatre opened its doors to the public on Monday evening, September 11, 1854. It was a successor to the old Federal Street Theatre (once called the Boston Theatre), whose building had been sold. The committee chosen to select a site for the new Theatre consisted of John F. Bates, Gardner Brewer, Otis Rich and John E. Thayer. The Company was incorporated on May 15, 1852, with a capital stock of $200,000. The site on Washington Street was valued at that time at $164,000. Today the property is assessed for $825,000. It has been rumored that this famous American playhouse will be demolished. It has rounded out over 60 seasons, and Boston theatre goers will watch its passing out with deep regret.

THE BOSTON MUSEUM

We think we can safely assert that the favorite theatre of the better class of Boston citizens and of playgoers generally was the Boston Museum. It held its high place in their regard all through its long and able management. It first opened its door June 14, 1841, in a building on the corner of Bromfield and Tremont Streets where now stands the Paddock Building. It was at once a popular place of resort, and to meet the demands of an increasing population the attractive building on Tremont Street between Court and School streets was erected and the first performance was given there November 2, 1846. From that date the Museum enjoyed uninterrupted prosperity, and it is said never knew an unsuccessful season. In 1847 the great comedian, William Warren became connected with the Museum, and made his first bow in the well known comedy of "Sweethearts and

Wives," and became an unusual favorite. In 1851 Mrs. Farren made her first appearance and Mrs. J. R. Vincent in 1852. These three sterling actors shared the love and respect of Bostonians and playgoers both on and off the stage for many years. The list of "Stars" who appeared on the boards of that theatre is a long one and includes the names of nearly all the great actors of the last half century.

Boston Museum—1850

Albert W. Mann

Late of Company A, 45th, and Historian of the 45th Mass. Regt., M. V. M.

TO MY COMRADES OF THE GRAND ARMY OF THE REPUBLIC.

There's a picture gallery in my mind, hung with many paintings rare,
And in the calm and quiet days I often linger there;
They are Memory's treasures, gathered from out life's rugged way,

And were painted by the Master hand, whose work will ne'er decay.

There's a cherished, hallowed corner where I spend many pleasant hours,
A group of kindred souls I see in manhood's opening powers;
With flashing eyes and kindling brows and faces to the light,
They pledge their lives to Freedom, to Country and the Right!
'Twas when the lurid cloud of war held the land in its embrace,
There was grief and fear in many hearts and blanched was many a face;
For that gallant Union Army, that marched forth in proud array,
Was driven back from Richmond's gates after many a bloody fray. —

But there were eyes of faith that saw beyond defeat and strife,
When from Slavery's ashes there should rise a purer Nation's life,
For at the helm of State there stood one grand, majestic form,
With heart and lips from malice free, serene in calm and storm.

As Moses in the olden time came forth to lead his race,
So God sent Abraham Lincoln to fill his time and place;
With purpose high, and honest heart and courage, strong and true,
He leaned upon the Almighty arm and safely led us through!

His calls for men, like trumpet tones, rang clear from East to West,
A million freemen answered him of our bravest and our best;
They left their homes and kindred dear, the Union to uphold,
That precious legacy bequeathed by patriot sires of old!

How well they fought and suffered is known to every one,
How generous in the Victory when the giant task was done!
And now "Old Glory's" brilliant folds, in peace, float everywhere,
And Comrades of the "Blue" and "Gray" their country's greatness share.

Events Preceding the Civil War

Abraham Lincoln was nominated for President by the Republican Convention at Chicago in June 1860. That Presidential campaign was without doubt the most exciting and the most memorable in the history of the country. There were two principal parties in the field.

First. The Republican, who declared freedom to be the normal condition of all territory and that slavery can exist only by authority of municipal law. Abraham Lincoln was its standard bearer.

Second. The wing of the Democratic Party led by John C. Breckenridge, who declared that no power existed that might lawfully control slavery in the territories; that it existed in any territory in full force, whenever a slaveholder and his slaves entered it; and that it was the duty of the National Government to protect it there.

Only the politicians of the two parties named seemed to have any decided convictions on the great subjects which had agitated the country and which were the points at issue. It was a desperate conflict from July to November and grew more intense as it approached its culmination at the polls. The election of Mr. Lincoln revealed the existence of a thoroughly organized conspiracy against the life of the Republic, widespread, powerful and malignant.

One of the principal conspirators, William L. Yancey, made a pilgrimage through the Northern States, for the purpose of vindicating the claims of the Southern extremists, concerning state supremacy and the extension of slavery and spoke in the "Cradle of Liberty,"—Faneuil Hall. He was listened to patiently and respectfully and returned to his Southern home to arouse the masses of his section into rebellion. Another Southern leader, Wise, of Virginia, after the election of Mr. Lincoln, said: "The South will not wait until the fourth of March, we will be under arms before then."

Following the intelligence of Mr. Lincoln's election the Legislatures of several Southern States passed the ordinance of Secession. South Carolina led the way. Within her bor-

ders were the most active and violent conspirators. Amidst the wildest rejoicings she formally seceded December 20th, 1860.

Georgia, Alabama, Mississippi, Louisiana and Florida at once joined in the movement. A few months later, Virginia, Tennessee, North Carolina, Arkansas and Texas fell into line. This revolt covered a territory of over a million square miles. They formed themselves into a new association which they called the Southern Confederacy, and declared their intention to maintain by arms what they had done. On March 28th, 1861, was printed a report of a speech made at Savannah, Georgia, by Vice-President Alexander H. Stephens of the Southern Confederacy, in explanation of the new Confederate Constitution, in which he defined the position of the Confederacy towards slavery as follows:

"The new Constitution has put to rest forever all the agitating questions relating to our peculiar institution. African slavery as it exists among us is the proper status of the Negro, in our form of civilization." Referring to the Confederacy he went on to say:

"Its corner stone rests upon the great truth that the Negro is not equal to the white man; that slavery, subordination to the superior race, is his natural and moral condition." This, our new government, is the first in the history of the world, based upon this great physical, philosophical and moral truth. The truth has been slow in the process of its development, like all other truths in the various departments of science.

The Negro, by nature, or by the curse against Canaan, is fitted for that condition which he occupies in our system. For His own purposes God has made one race to differ from another, as He has made 'one star to differ from another star in glory.'" It is but fair to state here that while this speech was applauded by his hearers, it aroused much bitterness against Stephens among many Southerners who did not take such an extreme view.

The threatening war cloud hung over the land when President Lincoln was inauguarated and took the oath of office. A plot was laid to assassinate him on his way to the Capital. On the sixth of April, 1861, to the Commissioners of the Seceding States, who called upon him, Secretary of State Seward said that the Government would not acknowledge them in their official capacity; that in the events which had recently occurred he saw "a perversion of a temporary and

partisan excitement to the purpose of an unjustifiable and unconstitutional aggression upon the authority of the Federal Government, and not a rightful and successful revolution, and an independent nation with an established government." To the Virginia delegation who called upon him about the same time, President Lincoln was equally plain and explicit. When asked what course he intended to pursue toward the Confederate States, he replied that he should adhere to the plan marked out in his inaugural. The power confided in him he should use to hold, occupy and possess property and places belonging to the Government. If an assault was made upon Fort Sumter, as had been threatened, he should use every means at his command to repossess it. In any event he should repel force by force.

Major Robert Anderson was in Fort Moultrie in Charleston Harbor, with a mere handful of men, two companies of the First United States Artillery and nine musicians, a total of seventy-five enlisted men. On the night of December 26, 1860, he transferred this force to Fort Sumter, spiking the guns of Fort Moultrie as he left. The State authorities at once seized upon Fort Moultrie and all the other forts in the harbor, except Fort Sumter, and also took possession of the U. S. Arsenal, Post Office and Custom House in the City of Charleston. They threw up fortifications on Morris Island, extinguished the coast and harbor lights, and removed the heavy buoys from the channel to prevent the sending of supplies and reinforcements to Fort Sumter. Towards the close of his administration, President Buchanan made a little show of loyalty, and upon the departure of some of the conspirators from his Cabinet, replaced them with true Union men, among them the Hon. John A. Dix, whose famous message will long live in American history: "Shoot the first man who hauls down the American flag." An effort was made to send supplies and reinforcements to the suffering garrison at Fort Sumter. The steamer "Star of the West," was despatched from New York, and arrived off Charleston, January 9, 1861. Just as she was entering the inner harbor all the soldiers were sent below, leaving only the working crew on deck, nd she endeavored under the guise of a peaceful merchant vessel to reach Fort Sumter.

But the deception was of no avail. The insurgents were awaiting her arrival. The Charleston Mercury had been advised of her sailing and the object of her voyage. Secretary

Thompson, a member of President Buchanan's Cabinet, over his own signature, said: "As I was writing my resignation, I sent a despatch to Judge Longstreet that the 'Star of the West' was coming with reinforcements." He ordered a messenger to telegraph the State authorities at Charleston, "Blow the 'Star of the West' out of the water," but the messenger was more loyal than his master and withheld the despatch. When the "Star of the West" was within two miles of Forts Sumter and Moultrie, and wholly unsuspicious of danger, a masked battery on Morris Island, only three-quarters of a mile distant, opened fire upon her.

While the American flag was flying from her fore, the heavy balls were flying over her deck and through her rigging. The steamer was unarmed and as all on board were in danger of destruction or capture, the captain turned the vessel's bow oceanward, and returned to New York. The garrison in Fort Sumter had received no advices from the Government. Major Anderson's mail and despatches came by way of Charleston, and on several occasions these were opened by the State authorities in that city.

THE FALL OF FORT SUMTER.

At the close of March, 1861, there were 7000 men and 120 cannon menacing Major Anderson and his brave little garrison. The spiked guns of Fort Moultrie had been restored to good order and others added to them. Six batteries had been erected on Sullivan's Island, all bearing on Fort Sumter. There were batteries, also, on Mt. Pleasant and James Island. All the sandy shores of Morris, Sullivan and James Islands were dotted with fortifications, twenty in number, armed with heavy guns and well manned. A formidable floating battery, designed and built by a deserter from the U. S. navy, was placed in position, ready for the assault when it should be ordered. For three weary months, Major Anderson saw these preparations going on, without the power or authority to strike a single blow. Buchanan's policy with the insurgents had been temporizing and vacillating, and thus Major Anderson was compelled to keep his guns muzzled while treason flourished, and the old flag was insulted. His situation during all this time was full of anxiety and perplexity. Hs garrison toiled and suffered and his stock of provisions was running very low. He could get

nothing in the way of supplies or re-enforcements from the government by way of the sea, as the insurgents commanded the harbor, and in Charleston, he could only procure a limited amount of provisions, and even these were obtainable only at the will of the State authorities. The crisis at last came. On the eighth of April, 1861, President Lincoln sent official notice to Governor Pickens of South Carolina, that supplies would be conveyed to Fort Sumter at all hazards. This despatch set Charleston into a fever of excitement. From Montgomery, Alabama, the headquarters of the Confederate Government, came the order to General Beauregard, in command at Charleston, to demand the surrender of Fort Sumter. This was on the tenth of April. On the eleventh, Beauregard sent three members of his staff to Fort Sumter with a letter to Major Anderson, in which he conveyed a demand for the evacuation of the fort. Major Anderson had, for some time, expected such a demand and replied that his sense of honor and obligation to his Government would not allow him to comply. At the same time he informed Beauregard's aids, verbally, that the condition of his supplies was such that he would be compelled by menaces of starvation to leave the fort in a few days. After further negotiations, in order to prevent bloodshed, he agreed to evacuate the fort by noon of the fifteenth, should he not previous to that time "receive controlling instructions from his Government or additional supplies." The Government was making preparations to relieve Fort Sumter. The steamer Baltic and the U. S. ships Powhatan, Pawnee, Pocahontas and Harriet Lane, and the tugs Yankee, Freeborn and Uncle Sam, were fitted out with orders to rendezvous off Charleston.

The Baltic, Pawnee and Harriet Lane reached Charleston Bay on the morning of April 12th, but Major Anderson was not aware of the relief close at hand. The conspirators, however, were thoroughly informed. When the scouts of Beauregard informed him that these U. S. vessels were outside the bar, his demand for the surrender of Fort Sumter became immediate and imperative, and as Major Anderson still refused to comply, the first gun was fired against Fort Sumter on the twelfth from a battery on James Island. The sound of that mortar was the signal for battle along the line. As we have before remarked the insurgents numbered sev-

eral thousands while the garrison numbered less than eighty men. "The odds were fearful, but leaning trustfully on the arm of the Almighty, the commander determined to resist." The firing of the insurgent batteries became more and more accurate and began to tell upon the walls and parapet of the fort. Some of the barbette guns were dismounted and the barracks were set on fire by the enemy's red hot shot. Meanwhile the little garrison turned their eyes often and anxiously towards the sea, hoping and praying for relief. At noon Surgeon Crawford descried through the mist, vessels bearing the dear old flag.

But the buoys in the channel had all been removed, a blinding storm was raging and the vessels could not cross the bar. The hours wore heavily away. The supply of ammunition began to fail; food and drink were served to the brave little band as they stood and worked at the guns. Before sunset all their guns but six had been abandoned. The next morning broke clear and fine and the insurgents renewed the bombardment with increased vigor and added terrors. Red hot shot was rained into the fort, and four times the buildings had been set on fire, and each time the flames had been extinguished. At last the barracks were ignited and the garrison was powerless to save them. To have attempted it would have cost many precious lives. The flames spread and the situation became more and more distressing. The heat was becoming intolerable, and as the fire was rapidly approaching the magazine, it became necessary to close and lock the door. The dense columns of flame and smoke that rose high above the fort, gave notice to the insurgents that its inmates were in a heated furnace; and yet they inhumanly increased the fury of the attack from all quarters. The garrison were frequently compelled to lie upon the ground with wet cloths upon their faces to prevent suffocation by smoke. Yet they would not surrender, the old flag was still flying. On the 14th of April further resistance became impossible, and negotiations having again been opened by a flag of truce, Major Anderson accepted the terms which had been offered before the hostilities, namely, the departure of the garrison with company, arms and property, and all private property and the privilege of saluting and retaining the flag. "When the flag was lowered at the close of the salute, the garrison in full dress left the fort and em-

barked on the Isabel, the band playing "Yankee Doodle."

The fort was evacuated, not surrendered. The flag had been lowered not given up, dishonored but not captured. Major Anderson and his little band sailed for New York. Precisely four years from that date, Major General Robert Anderson raised that war-worn flag over all that remained of Fort Sumter. The fall of Fort Sumter was the opening act in the long and bloody drama of the Civil War. As the telegraph flashed the tidings over the land, there was the most intense excitement. President Lincoln at once issued a call for 75,000 armed men to "aid in suppressing rebellion." All over the North, there was a quick response to this trumpet call, for the defence and maintenance of the Union. Such a grand uprising of great people was never before witnessed. Men, women and children felt the enthusiasm. Political animosities were forgotten, religious differences vanished, all hearts were united in the one great bond of patriotism. The flag was everywhere displayed from places of business, public buildings, church towers and the homes, alike of rich and poor. In the large cities there were flag raisings in the business districts, where thousands gathered and listened to the appeals of eloquent speakers and the music of military bands, playing patriotic airs. A little later, when war settled down upon the nation, there were enlisting offices where the men who formed the grand union army signed the "muster rolls" and from whence they went forth to fight for their country, singing as they marched.

"We are coming, Father Abraham, by Richmond's bloody tide,
To lay us down for freedom's sake, our brothers' bones beside."

And they kept marching on until their martial tread shook the continent and the thunder of their artillery was heard around the world.

Massachusetts and Boston in the Civil War

The shot that was fired at Fort Sumter was the signal for the greatest popular uprising the world has ever seen. The news of the evacuation of the fort reached Boston on Sunday, and no one of the present generation can imagine the intense excitement it produced.

A patient and long suffering people were aroused to a white heat of indignation.

From every public building, from the spires of churches and from innumerable private residences, the Stars and Stripes were flung to the breeze. As one writer says, "the fife and drum was heard in the streets, and recruiting offices were opened in vacant stores, or in tents hastily pitched in the public squares. All sorts and conditions of men left their business and stepped into the ranks, and in a few days, the Government was offered several times as many troops as had been called for. Boys of 15 sat down and wept, because they were not permitted to go, but here and there one dried his tears when he was told he might go as a drummer, or as an officer's servant. Everybody seemed anxious to put forth some expression of loyalty to the National Government and the Starry Flag."

On Monday, April 15, 1861, President Lincoln issued a call for 75,000 militia from the several States, "to suppress the combination against the laws, and to cause the laws to be duly executed." There was no wavering, no uncertain sound in that famous document, and it met with a responsive thrill in every loyal heart.

The Governor of Massachusetts at the outbreak of the war was John Albion Andrew, who was born in Windham, Maine, May 31, 1818. He graduated at Bowdoin College in 1837, studied for the law and was admitted to the bar in 1840. Coming to Massachusetts to make his permanent home, he became intensely interested in the anti-slavery movement, and rendered legal services in fugitive slave cases. Having been elected to the House of Representatives of Massachusetts in 1858, and having been a delegate

to the Republican Convention which nominated Abraham Lincoln for the Presidency in 1860, he was elected in November of that year Governor of Massachusetts. His services as Governor from 1861 to 1865, embracing the

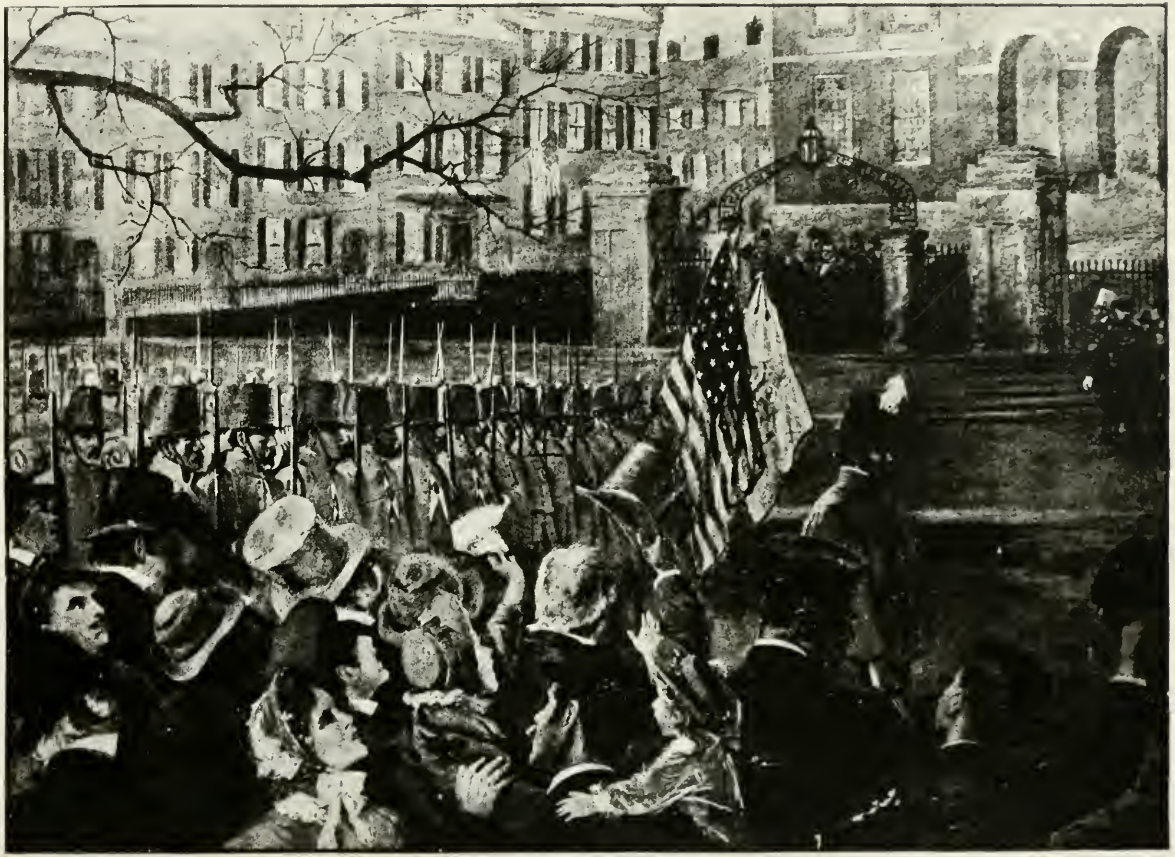
Governor John A. Andrew

period of the Civil War, were discharged with the utmost fidelity, and he was often a counselor of President Lincoln in affairs of State. He was constantly urging upon the National Government the importance of enlisting colored troops and finally had his desire gratified in the authority given him to enlist two regiments in Massachusetts, the

54th and the 55th, whom he bade God speed as they left for the seat of war. The former under the gallant Robert Gould Shaw made a brave assault on Fort Wagner, South Carolina.

Colonel Robert Gould Shaw

This was the first of the colored regiments to be raised in the North for service in the war. Governor Andrew detemined to select for officers of these colored regiments, the very best material that could be found in the Massachusetts Volunteer Service. They should be of acknowledged military ability and experience, of the highest social



The Sixth Massachusetts Regiment Passing the State House on Their Way to Washington, April 1861

position, if possible, in the State, and men who believed in the capacity of colored men to make good soldiers. He immediately fixed upon Robert G. Shaw, for Colonel of the Fifty-Fourth. He was a captain in the Second Regiment, Massachusetts Infantry, a gentleman of education, a brave officer, and connected by blood and marriage with one of the oldest and most respectable families in the State. Captain Shaw was relieved from his command, and came to Boston to superintend the recruiting of the regiment.

In less than one hundred days it was filled to the maximum. There were so many others who desired to enlist that it was decided to raise another regiment and this (the 55th) was also rapidly filled. The 54th was ordered to South Carolina and embarked on the 28th of May, 1863, on board the United States transport, "De Molay."

In the passage through Boston it received a splendid ovation, but the men kept close ranks, not a man left his place, not a straggler was seen. Two sons of Frederick Douglass the colored orator, were in the ranks; the father himself was present to witness the departure of his sons.

In less than two months this regiment participated in that deadly and unsuccessful assault on Fort Wagner in South Carolina, led by their gallant Colonel, who was instantly killed. Because he commanded colored troops he was intensely hated by the Confederates and they foolishly thought they had dishonored him, when, as they proclaimed, they had buried his body "in a pit under a heap of his niggers." Colonel Shaw is immortalized in his native city by the Shaw Memorial, on Beacon Street, opposite the State House.

Governor Andrews was a wise, far seeing Governor. He early discerned the coming appeal to arms, and for some months previous to the President's call, he had begun to recruit, arm and equip the State Militia. When that call came Massachusetts had thirteen thousand men ready, not only to go to the front, but to furnish their own camp equipage and rations. Four thousand of them responded to the first call for three months' volunteers. The first regiment to start for Washington was the Sixth Regiment, Colonel Edward F. Jones commanding, which left Boston April 17, 1861, only three days after the fall of Fort Sumter.

The passage of the train bearing this regiment was one long ovation from Boston to Philadelphia. At the latter city, as at New York, the men were received with enthusiastic hospi-

tality, welcomed, fed and plied with good things, for their already overstocked haversacks; and it began to seem as though war was a continuous picnic. At least until the defence of Washington should begin, they were under no apprehension of trouble. But before them was Baltimore.

On approaching that city, April 19th, the anniversary of the battle of Lexington, the officers were warned that the passage of the regiment through that city would be forcibly opposed by a mob, which had already collected and was marching through the city with a secession flag. Colonel Jones ordered ammunition to be distributed, and passing through the cars

in person, he warned the men that they were to pay no attention to abuse, or even missiles, and that if it became necessary for them to fire on the mob, they would receive orders to that effect from the Commander.

The passage of trains through Baltimore at that period was by horse power across the city from one depot to another. The horses being quickly attached, as soon as the locomotive was taken off, cars carrying about two-thirds of the regiment were drawn rapidly over the route, but to intercept the remaining four companies, the mob barricaded the tracks, and it became necessary for those to abandon the cars, and cover the remaining distance on foot. At once they became the target for showers of stones thrown by the mob, and in order to lessen the need of armed resistance, the officers gave the order

to "double quick." It was a mistake, but a common one, when citizen soldiers are dealing with a mob, the most merciful, as well as the wisest course, being to scatter the mob promptly. The mob thought they had the troops on the run, and were encouraged to believe that they either dared not shoot, or that they were without ammunition. Then the order to "fire" was given to the troops, and several of the crowd, rioters and spectators, fell. The Mayor of Baltimore joined the officers at the head of the column to give his authority

State House—1917

to its progress, and also to tell the officers to defend themselves.

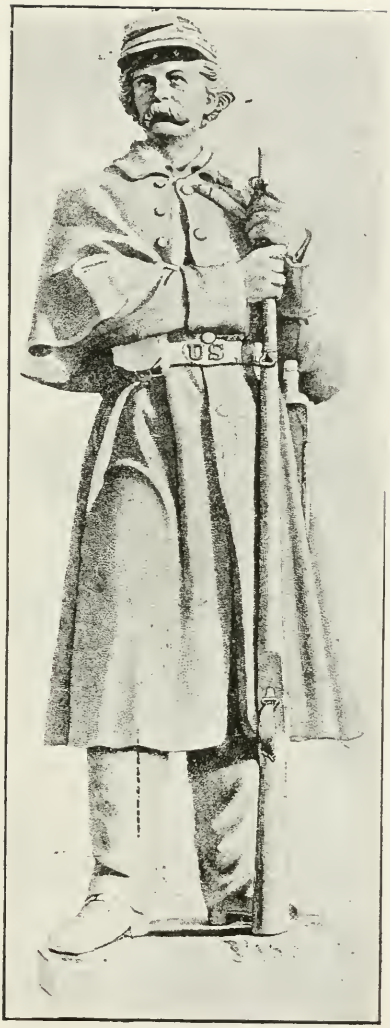
Instead of being faced about to confront the mob, the troops were marched steadily forward, turning about as they advanced, and delivering a desultory fire, which, however, did not deter the mob from continuing the attack. The regiment's loss was four killed and thirty-six wounded. The men were furious over the affair, and it required all the authority of the Colonel to keep them from leaving the cars and taking vengeance on Baltimore for the death of their comrades. They were the first whole regiment to arrive in Washington in response to the call of the President and they were quartered in the United States Senate Chamber.

During the war Boston responded promptly to every call for men, or money, and sent of her citizens into the Army and

Navy, 26,119 men, of whom 685 were commissioned officers. In the sanitary work the Boston people, the women pre-eminently, were among the foremost and most active.

For four long years, like every large city, Boston was in a constant state of excitement. Her rejoicing at the close of the war in 1865 was turned into mourning by the death of President Lincoln. In common with the other great cities of the North, Boston gave expression to the universal feeling of grief by a funeral procession of great length.

"The Militia Regiments of Massachusetts were the first to respond to the call of the President; the first to march through Baltimore to the defense of the Capitol; the first to shed their blood for the maintenance of the government; the first to open up a new route to Washington, by way of Anapolis; the first to land on the soil of Virginia,and hold possession of the most important fortress in the Union; the first to make the voyage of the Potomac, and approach the Federal city by water, as they had been the first to reach it by land. The soldiers of Massachusetts did their duty and the nation owes them a debt of gratitude which can never be repaid."



The Boys in Blue Who Saved the Union

The Boys in Blue Who Saved the Union

(Compiled from the "Boston Globe" by permission.)

The war for the Union was the greatest war of the 19th century. In that conflict larger armies participated, more persistent energy was displayed, more sanguinary battles were fought, losses were more appalling in extent, the cost was vastly excessive, and no issue was more decisive.

Twenty States with a population of 20,000,000 people and backed by an aggregate wealth of $11,000,000,000 faced 10,000,000 people in 11 States, with a wealth of about $5,000,000,000 to recognize the integrity of the Union.

Out of that struggle emerged a greater nation and a stronger brotherhood.

The Union States put onto the field armies numbering 2,859,132 men, who for four long years confronted Confederate armies aggregating 1,234,000. Not once until the end did the opposing armies loosen the grip on the other's throat. Two thousand two hundred and sixty-one conflicts occurred.

The Union Armies lost in killed in battle and in death from disease 359,258. Further losses in wounded and missing, 642,348, brought the total up to 991,876.

Deaths from wounds and disease in the Confederate Army numbered 133,821, and other losses in missing and captured aggregated 989,791.

On the Union side one man in 65 was killed in action; one in 56 died from wounds; one in 13 died of disease; one in 15 was captured or reported missing; one in 10 was wounded in action.

President Lincoln issued 11 different calls for troops, aggregating the enormous number of 2,675,000, and even more than this number took up arms in response. The army of the United States, which on April 1, 1861, numbered 16,367 officers and men, increased by leaps and bounds throughout the war, and at the end the Government had 1,000,516 troops under arms.

In ten weeks after secession the Confederate States had

assembled 112,000 men. The maximum of Confederates in arms, 481,000, was reached January 1, 1864. A year later the army was smaller by 50,000, and it rapidly dwindled in the next three months.

On both sides the armies were composed of the boys of America. Nearly half the Union soldiers were from farms, and another quarter from mills and shops. It was a light complexioned army, nearly half of them with blue eyes, a quarter with gray, and less than one-fifth dark. They averaged 5 feet 7 3-4 inches in height, the Kentuckians leading with an average height of 5 feet 8 3-4 inches.. Connecticut soldiers were of the lowest stature, 5 feet 6 1-2 inches. Out of 1,000,000 recorded measurements, 3,613 were over 6 feet 3 inches, and among them were some over 7 feet. Soldiers from the whole army would have given regiments of tall men surpassing the famous giant guards of Frederick the Great.

The men were paid $13 a month in greenbacks, which at one time were worth less than 40 cents on the dollar, or hardly more than $5 for a month's pay.

Gettysburg was the greatest battle of the war. Antietam was the bloodiest. The Confederates assembled their largest army—94,138 effective men—at the seven days' battle, and never afterwards led its like. Grant led the largest Union Army—118,769 effective men—at the Wilderness. There were 112 battles in which one side or the other lost over 500 killed and wounded. There were 1,882 general engagements, battles, skirmishes in which at least one regiment participated. The 5th New Hampshire Infantry sustained the greatest loss of any infantry regiment, 295 from battle wounds and 178 from disease, a total death list of 473. The 1st Maine Cavalry sustained the greatest loss of any cavalry regiment in the army, 174 men dead from battle wounds and 344 from disease, a total death roll of 518. The 1st Maine Heavy Artillery suffered the greatest loss of any regimental organization in the army, 423 dead from wounds and 260 from disease, a total death roll of 683.

Nativity of the soldiers—Native born, 75 per cent; Germany, 8 3-4 per cent; Ireland, 7 1-2 per cent; England, 2 1-2 per cent; British America, 2 1-2 per cent; other countries, 3 3-4 per cent.

Massachusetts furnished 152,048—13,000 more than her quota.

Gettysburg has been often compared with the battle of Waterloo. They were the two most decisive battles of the age.

Waterloo

Troops Engaged—Allies, 72,000; French, 80,000.
Guns—Allies, 186; French, 252.
Losses—Allies, 23,185; French, 26,300.

Gettysburg

Troops Engaged—Union, 83,289; Confederate, 72,054.
Guns—Union, 300; Confederate, 250.
Losses—Union, 23,049; Confederate, 28,062.

The Total Cost of the War to the Union

Current expenses—Bounties other than Federal, private contributions, loss of soldiers' productive labor, war claims, interest and pensions, was $9,932,185.07.

The Navy's Glorious Part

The Navy was engaged in 65 battles during the war. At the outbreak of hostilities the enrollment of officers and men aggregrated 7,600, which before the war closed was swelled to 132,554. There were 1,824 killed or mortally wounded in action, of whom 342 were scalded to death by escaping steam from boilers pierced by the enemy's shot, and 308 men were drowned.

Total naval losses were—Killed in action, 1,804; wounded, 2,226; died from disease and accidents, 3,000; total, 7,030.

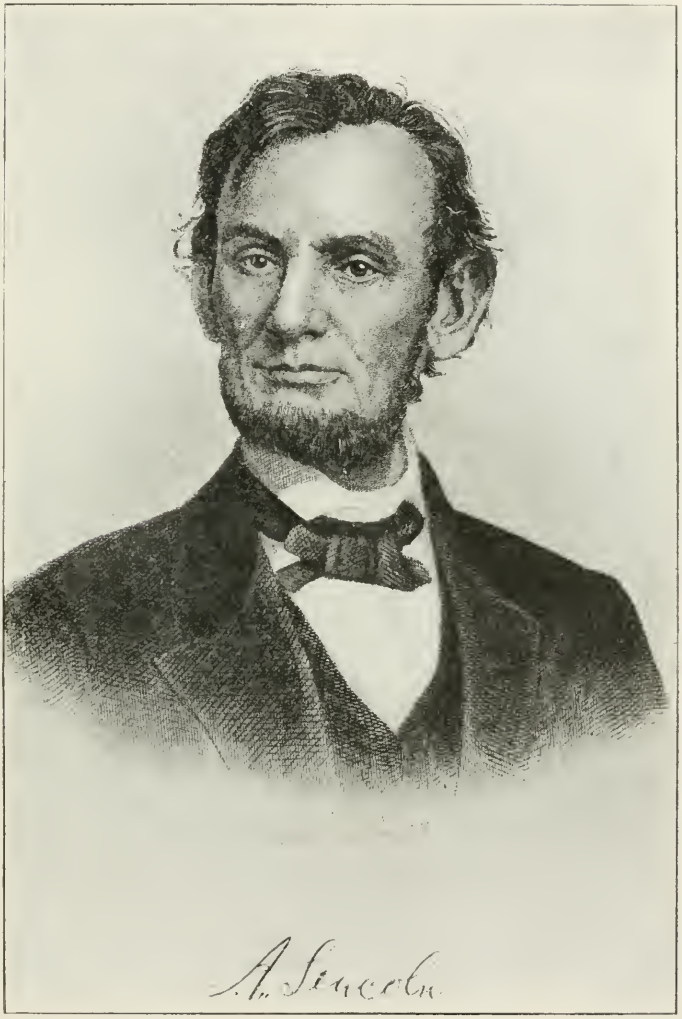
The most important naval engagement to the world at large was the battle March 8, 1862, between the Monitor and the Confederate ironclad "Merrimac, the first battle in the world between ironclads, for that day saw the doom of all existing naval ships then in the world. The most famous engagement occurred June 19, 1864, seven miles off Cherbourg, France, when the U. S. S. Kearsarge engaged and sank the Confederate privateer Alabama, which was built and fitted out in England. The engagement lasted one hour and two minutes. In size, armament and number of crew, the combatants were very evenly matched.

The last infantry volley of the war was fired April 9, 1865, by the 24th Army Corps to cut off the retreat of Lee at Clover Hill, near Appomattox, Va.

General Lee surrendered April 14, 1865.

The last surrender of the war was May 26, 1865, by General Kirby Smith at Baton Rouge, La.

Peace Proclamation issued May 9, 1865, by President Johnson.



Lincoln's Gettysburg Address

"Fourscore and seven years ago, our fathers brought forth on this continent a nation conceived in liberty and dedicated to the proposition that all men are created equal.

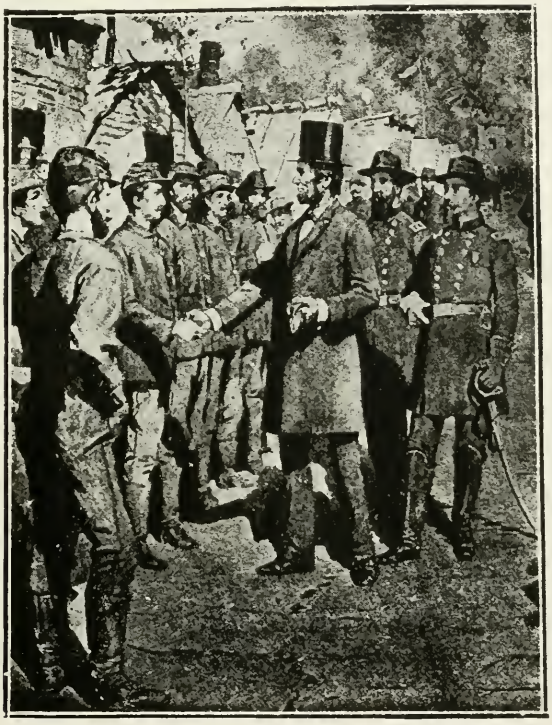
"Now we are engaged in a great civil war, testing whether that nation, or any nation so conceived and so dedicated, can long endure. We are met on a great battlefield of that war. We have come to dedicate a portion of that field as a final resting place for those who here gave their lives that the nation might live. It is altogether fitting and proper that we should do this. But in a larger sense we cannot dedicate, we cannot consecrate, we cannot hallow this ground. The brave men, living and dead, who struggled here, have consecrated it, far above our poor power to add, or detract. The world will little note, nor long remember what we say here, but it can never forget what they did here. It is for us, the living, rather to be dedicated here to the great task remaining before us, that from these honored dead we take increased devotion to that cause for which they gave the last full measure of devotion, that we here highly resolve that these dead shall not have died in vain —that this nation, under God, shall have a new birth of freedom, and that government of the people, by the people, and for the people shall not perish from the earth."

"A martyr to the cause of man,
His blood is Freedom's eucharist,
And on the world's great hero list
His name shall lead the van.

"Yea, raised on Faith's white wings unfurled
In Heaven's pure light, of him we say,
He died upon the self-same day,
A greater died to save the world!"

Lincoln and the Soldiers

From the outset, Abraham Lincoln was the personal friend of every soldier he sent to the front, and somehow every man seemed to know it. No doubt it was on Lincoln's



Lincoln and the Soldiers

visits to the camps around Washington, in the early days of the war, that the body of the soldiers got this idea. They never forgot his friendly hand-clasp, his hearty "God bless you," his remonstrance against some fifteen-year-old boy

masquerading as twenty, his jocular remarks about the height of some soldier towering above his own six feet four. When, later, he visited the Army of the Potomac on the Rappahannock and at Antietam, these impressions of his interest in the personal welfare of the soldiers were renewed. He walked down the long lines of tents or huts, noting the attempts at decoration, the housekeeping conveniences, replying by smiles and nods and sometimes with words to the greetings, rough and hearty, which he received. He inquired into every phase of camp life, and the men knew it, and said to one another, "He cares for us; he makes no fight, but he cares." He was not only the Commander-in-Chief of all the armies of the United States, he was the father of the army, and never did a man better deserve a title than did he the one the soldiers gave him—"Father Abraham."—"Life of Lincoln," by Ida M. Tarbell.

Washington at Valley Forge

An Illinois Soldier at the Funeral of Abraham Lincoln

Rev. Frank B. Cressey of Cambridge, Massachusetts, was a private of the One Hundred and Thirty-third Regiment, Illinois Volunteers. He was grossly cheated out of a First Lieutenancy after enlisting over fifty men, but went into the ranks. His father, the Chaplain of the Second Minnesota Regiment, and four brothers, were also in the Union Army,

Rev. Frank B. Cressey

making six from one family. Mr. Cressey was mustered into and out of the Army at Springfield, Illinois, the home of Abraham Lincoln. The day before the assassinated President's entombment, Mr. Cressey went to Springfield to be present at the funeral. Thousands had already arrived on a similar errand of grief and respect. The funeral car was still at the railroad station, draped, as during its long and devious way of journey, in the emblems of death and a Nation's overwhelming sorrow. The body had been removed to the Hall of Representatives in the State House, where it lay in state. During more than a day of twenty-four hours the people passed by looking on the face of the

dead. Three times, forenoon, afternoon and midnight, Mr. Cressey joined the double procession, which at times was several city blocks long and which continued its tramp, tramp all night and through the earliest gray of the morning, and three times thus saw him who for four years had led the Nation through threatened death to establish life. When the doors were finally closed that the funeral services be held, thousands were still in line, many, like those before them, in tears because of the Nation's bereavement, which was a personal sorrow.

The funeral services over, the procession of thousands moved to the Cemetery, two miles distant. A brass band and a regiment and more soldiers came first, with General Joseph Hooker as chief in command at their head, and looking precisely as one now sees him in bronze in front of the State Capitol in Boston. The hearse, drawn by six coal black horses, covered with the clothing of sorrow, each and all the finest that St. Louis could furnish, and given without price for the occasion, came next, the hearse doors being held together by heavy black ribbon, on account of the unusual length of the casket. After the hearse, special attendants, that no accidents should occur, then carriages filled mostly with Government, Army and Navy officials. Mrs. Lincoln and other relatives not being able to be present. Last of all were citizens by the multitude, some in carriages and some on foot, the United States as a whole rendering homage to the man who had saved the Nation, which some had tried to destroy. Arrived at the Cemetery, the casket, glittering in the sunshine like a casket of precious stones, was lifted upon the shoulders of eight men, marines from the Navy, if no mistake is made here, and most reverently borne within the receiving vault, the band meanwhile touching all hearts with its rendering of the "Dad March in Saul.' Then folowed singing by a German Society of St. Louis, followed by a funeral oration by Bishop Simpson of the Methodist Episcopal Church. Then more music, both vocal and instrumental, then the benediction, and the body of Abraham Lincoln was left in the silence of the tomb.

Hon. James M. Curley
Mayor of Boston

Boston

Its Area, City Government and Present Standing

The Shawmut of the Indians was named Boston, probably out of gratitude to the merchants of Boston, in Lincolnshire, who had subscribed generously to the stock of the Company of Massachusetts Bay. At a meeting of the Company held in Charlestown (where they had established a plantation) on September 17th, 1630, they "ordered that 'Trimountain' shall be called Boston; Mattapan, Dorchester; and the towne upon Charles River, 'Watertown.' Governor Winthrop chose Boston as his abiding place, and on October 3, 1632, Boston was formally declared to be 'the fittest place for publique meetings of any place in the Bay.'"

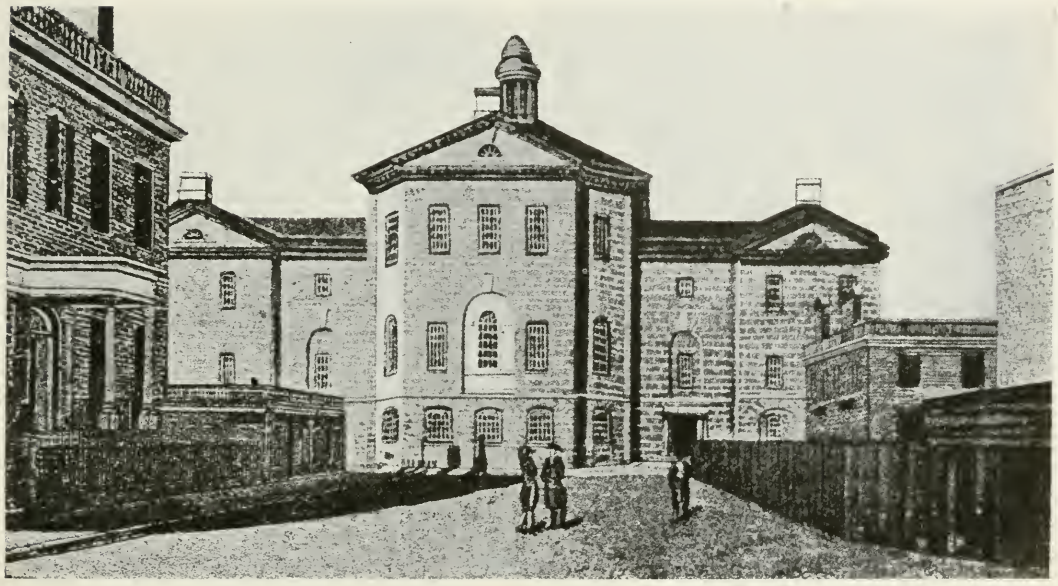
AREA OF BOSTON.

The neck of land called Boston still called Boston proper contained perhaps 700 acres of land, judging from the 783 acres shown by the official survey of 1794. In the interval of 1630-37, Boston acquired jurisdiction over most of the territory now included in Chelsea, Winthrop, Revere, East Boston, Brookline, Quincy, Braintree, Randolph and Holbrook, besides certain islands in the harbor. From 1637 to 1640 when "Mount Wollaston" was set off as Braintree, Boston exercised jurisdiction over a territory of at least 40,000 acres. Within its present limits (1916) there are only 27,364 acres including flats and water. After 1640 many grants of land were made to Boston by the General Court, situated in the northern and western parts of the state. Some of these tracts were afterwards sold by the city. November 13th, 1705, Muddy River was set off as the town of Brookline and January 8th, 1739, Runney Marsh was set off as the town of Chelsea. Annexations of territory within the present limits of the City of Boston, have been made as follows: Noddles' Island, East Boston, 1637; South Boston from Dorchester, 1804; Roxbury, 1868; Dorchester, 1870; Brighton, 1873; Charlestown, 1873; West Roxbury, 1874; Hyde Park,

1911. The original territory of Boston has been largely increased by made land as hown by the map hereto annaved.

GOVERNMENT OF BOSTON.

The first government of the town of Boston was inaugurated March 14, 1635, when 12 overseers (Selectmen) were chosen. In September 1636, this number was reduced to



Old City Hall—1850

10, and so remained until 1700, when seven Selectmen and eight Constables were made the town's officials. As the population increased, more officials were deemed necessary for the proper administration of the town's affairs, and in 1750, the number was increased to twenty. When Faneuil Hall was completed the town elections were held there. The first vote by wards was in 1799, the population at that time being about 25,000. The subject of a City Charter was agitated very early in the history of the town, and it was voted upon by the citizens in the years 1708, 1794 and in 1815, and on these three occasions public opinion was shown to be very

strongly against it. But the matter still continued to be very earnestly discussed and at last those favoring a charter carried the day in 1822. An application was made to the Legislature for a Charter which was adopted by a vote of 2797 yeas to 1881 nays. The election for city officials was held April 16th, resulting in the choice of John Phillips as Mayor, who received 2500 votes out of a total of 2650 votes cast. Eight Aldermen and eight Councilmen were also elected and the inaugural ceremonies took place May 1, 1822. Mr. Phillips was the father of Wendell Phillips, the great anti-slavery agitator. Mr. Phillips died the following year. Some of the very best citizens of Boston, of high standing in mercantile and professional life, have occupied the Mayor's chair. The list is not so long as to be out of place here. So well did they acquit themselves in that honorable and responsible position that a number of them served several years in succession. Following John Phillips was Harrison Gray Otis, then Charles Wills, Theodore Lyman, Samuel T. Armstrong, Samuel A. Eliot, Jonathan Chapman, Martin Brimmer, Thomas A. Davis, Josiah Quincy, Jr., John P. Bigelow, Benjamin Seaver, Jerome V. C. Smith, Alexander H. Rice, Frederick W. Lincoln, Jr., Joseph M. Wightman, Otis Norcross, Nathaniel B. Shurtleff, William Gaston, Henry L. Pierce, Samuel C. Cobb, Frederick O. Prince, Hugh O'Brien, Thomas N. Hart, Samuel A. Green, Albert Palmer, Augustus P. Martin, Nathan Matthews, Jr., Edwin U. Curtis, Josiah Quincy, Patrick A. Collins, George A. Hibbard, John F. Fitzgerald and James M. Curley.

The first city government held its sessions in Johnson Hall, School Street, and there continued until 1630, when the Old State House was occupied. In 1841 they returned to their old quarters in Johnson Hall. A portion of Faneuil Hall was also utilized for some of the city offices.

Many old Bostonians will recognize in the cut of the Old City Hall, a familiar landmark. It was built for a County Court House and in its day was one of the most imposing buildings in the town.

But Boston was growing, the City Fathers were more numerous, new departments of light and water became parts of the great city machine and must be comfortably quartered under one roof, therefore a larger and more modern City Hall was a necessity. The old picturesque building, solid and substantial, which could weather the blast of centuries,

was torn down soon after the commencement of the Civil War, and the present City Hall erected on its site. It was built on land, originally purchased of Thomas Scott in 1645. The style of architecture of the present City Hall is the

City Hall, Boston

Italian Renaissance, modified and elaborated by the taste of the French architects. The building with its furniture cost $500,000. The front and west side are of white Concord granite, those of the Court Square and City Hall Avenues are from stone from the Old City Hall, which it replaced.

The corner stone of the present City Hall was laid Decem-

ber 22d, 1862, during the administration of Joseph M. Wightman. Over fifty years have elapsed and it is still an elegant and imposing public building.

MAYORS.

All through her history, Boston has been famous for the public spirit of her citizens, for their intelligence and activity in all political matters. As a natural result party rancor has often ran high and the motives and acts of her Mayors and other officials have been closely scrutinized and often bitterly assailed. Perhaps this may be considered a part of the penalty which a man must expect and be willing to pay when he enters upon the duties of the office. The real value of the services rendered must frequently be left to the calm and impartial judgment of later generations. It is generally admitted today that much of Boston's prosperity is due to the foresight, the business sagacity and public spirit of some of her great Mayors, and yet the enterprises and improvements, suggested and urged by them for the betterment of the city, were stigmatized as "jobs" by their political opponents. It was during the administration of the first Josiah Quincy, that Quincy Market was completed and dedicated August 26, 1826. It is today one of the greatest and best market buildings in the country and is admirably located for the purposes intended. Not only the market building but the extensive improvements around it constituted it the greatest enterprise of the kind that had ever been undertaken in Boston and it was due to the remarkable energy and enterprise of Josiah Quincy, who, according to Drake, "invested the sluggish town with new life and brought into practical use a new watchword, 'Progress.'" In connection with the work of building this market six new streets were opened and a seventh greatly enlarged, including 167,000 feet of land, and flats, docks and wharf rights obtained to the extent of 140,000 square feet." "All this," we quote from Quincy's history, "was accomplished in the centre of a populous city, not only without any tax, debt or burden upon its pecuniary resources, but with a large permanent addition to its real and productive property. The cost of the market building, exclusive of the land was $150,000. The cost of the market, land and street and other improvements was $1,141,272."

Under another and later Josiah Quincy the bringing of several railway lines into one grand terminal and the adjacent

improvements incident thereto was accomplished. The wisdom and foresight of this movement is now universally acknowledged. Other enterprises for the benefit of the city in a business and artistic sense had their inception in the brains of energetic and public spirited Mayors who were supported in their execution by public spirited officials and citizens. Among these enterprises we mention the filling in of the Back Bay, the levelling of Fort Hill and building of Atlantic Avenue, the extension of Washington Street, the

Hon. Josiah Quincy, Mayor

building of the East Boston Tunnel and the Subways, and the laying out of new parks and boulevards, making Boston one of the most beautiful and attractive cities in the country. She has always been a great commercial centre and must continue to be by reason of her unrivalled harbor and water communications. Her ships of other days from the yards of those famous builders, Donald McKay of East Boston, and the Briggs of South Boston, were the finest on the ocean and carried "Old Glory" into every part of the world, were models of naval architecture, and the speediest sailing vessels ever constructed. The captains were largely from that nursery of seamen, Cape Cod, and were not only bold and skilful navigators, but in many instances, keen business men and

large ship owners. They made wonderful passages around Cape Horn in the days of '49, and to Australia and the East Indies. The Civil War dealt a heavy blow to American shipping, as many large vessels were destroyed by the English

Hon. Thomas N. Hart

built and equipped Confederate cruisers, which was no doubt a part of an English scheme to cripple American commerce which was fast becoming a formidable rival. In this way a great deal of the carrying trade of the world was transferred to English bottoms and soon after subsidized steamers replaced sailing vessels, and thus a large element of American

power and prosperity slipped from her grasp. But within the last two decades, shrewd investors have come to realize that no city offers better or safer real estate investment than this good old city of Boston. As a result the business section has been greatly changed and improved and many old landmarks have disappeared, sometimes to the regret of many citizens.

The wealthy and influential business men are now working through two powerful organizations, the Chamber of Commercea and Board of Trade to make Boston one of the greatest shipping ports of the world. A magnificent system of docks, warehouses and elevators has been planned and is being carried to completion, which will cost millions and will put Boston in the forefront and secure to her a large portion of the immense export trade of the West and bring to her docks the largest ocean liners The scope and magnificence of the project reflects great credit on the brains, the pluck, and the enterprise of Boston's business men.

MAYOR HART, 1889-1890, 1900-1901.

A public man taking office without a definite program may do some good, as opportunity offers, but is not apt to make an enduring impression. Mayor Hart is identified with many measures affecting Boston, such as the theory and practice of home rule, the separation of the public school establishment from city council control, the introduction of the trolley street-car system, all the year round employment of city labor, and the security of clerks and other subordinates during good behavior (stat. 1890, ch. 418).

As a business man, Mayor Hart gave special attention to the business affairs of the city, and particularly to the finances. This topic had become urgent under the act passed by the General Court in 1885 (ch. 266), limiting both the tax and the debt of the city. If the General Court could manage Boston, and if good government could be established by statute, the law of 1885 was proper. It worked out differently. The tax rate was kept down; but the debt increased ominously, and the General Court authorized this increase.

Mayor Hart demanded a change for the better. He fought almost single-handed. In 1900, after a campaign of education, the point was carried. The tax rate of Boston

for current expenses was raised from $9 per $1000 of assessed valuation to $10.50. Having thus increased the tax burden of the people, the political effect appeared at the next general election, when Mayor Hart was overwhelmingly defeated. Yet no effort has been made to reverse the financial policy of Mayor Hart.

A safe test of government is the ledger. The city of Boston is fortunate in having the annual reports of the city auditor, telling exactly the income and outgo of the city. Few governments make reports as complete and trustworthy. The annual report of the city auditor for 1901-2 records on page 44 the receipt of $7,768,948.80 as the final payment for the water supply system taken from the city. This completed the case, some previous payments having been made, and the settlement having been effected on the basis of about $13,000,000. The estimates of the value taken by the State, namely, the city water supply, not including the distribution service, were made by Mayor Hart and accepted by Governor Crane. The alternative was a lawsuit lasting for many years, yet not dealing with a real law question. It was a business compromise. The money obtained was used as far as possible for reducing the city debt. The auditor's report for 1901-2, page 239, accordingly reports the net debt of the city January 31, 1902, at $47,152,085.52. Two years before it stood at $58,333,337.59.

The late Mayor, the Hon. John F. Fitzgerald, was in thorough sympathy with all these plans and gave as his motto when elected in 1905, "a better, bigger and busier Boston," and during his term of office preached constantly from this text at home and abroad. He had no apologies to make for the city of his birth and the city which he loved. It was his aim to see her reach that high vantage ground, which her past history and the intelligence, business capacity and character of her citizens entitled her to occupy. His record since he started out in political life is full of achievements for the good of the common people as well as for the business interests of the city. Born in the North End, he knew its needs, and the North End Park is a memorial to his humanity and of his love for the scenes of his childhood. During his administration the "High School of Commerce" was founded, likewise the "School of Practical Arts for Girls." Both of these institutions are useful and valuable. Other achievements were the founding of the Consumptives Hos-

pital, the Playground of the Parker Hill District, the securing of the Saturday half holiday for City Employees, the appropriation for the reconstruction of the Old State House. He appointed a Dock Commissioner to ascertain what improvement could be made in the Dock System. The pas-

Hon. John F. Fitzgerald

sage of the $9,000,000 Dock Bill by the Legislature of 1911 was a very satisfactory answer to his inquiry, and no small credit for that action is due him, for the foresight, hopefulness and energy displayed by him in carrying on that campaign. He has proved himself, in the higher sense, what most men admire, "a good fighter," and for what he believes to be right, he can give and take hard blows. He has been

in the "lime light" and partisanship has been running high, but he can afford to await the verdict of a later generation as to the true value of the services rendered by him.

The present Mayor, Hon. James M. Curley, is running the gauntlet of all his predecessors, and when his administration is completed it will be possible to see and appreciate his many good deeds which have been for the financial and moral benefit of the city, for which all just and reasonable men will give him full credit.

SOME THINGS WORTH KNOWING ABOUT THE BOSTON OF TODAY.

From Boston Globe.

Boston has the finest sewerage system in the country; richest population in the country; shortest and most direct route to Europe; one of the most noted Art Museums in the country; one of the finest municipal Libraries in the country; one of the finest fresh water basins in the world; the greatest University in the country; the finest Institute of Technology in the country; the finest municipal hospital in the country; the best educational facilities for the blind; the finest and largest arboretum in the country; the largest stone dry dock in the country; the largest wool storage house in the world; the largest commercial organization in the country; the largest watch factory in the world; the largest candy factory in the country; the largest shoe manufacturing plant in the world; the largest entomological laboratory in the world; the finest floating hospital for children in the world; the best drives of any city in the country; Boston in the favorite Convention City in the country.

COMPARISON ON TEXTILE PRODUCTS.

Value—Boston, $98,561,100; Providence, $27,626,619; Philadelphia, $15,193,673; New York, $10,603,997; Chicago, $10,403,449; St. Louis, $7,824,596.

VALUE BOOT AND SHOE PRODUCTS.

Boston, $69,945,133; St. Louis, $19,101,666; New York, $14,291,175; Cincinnati, $10,840,778; Philadelphia, $5,931,033; Chicago, $5,592,684.

INDUSTRIAL DISTRICT—INCREASE IN INDUSTRIES.

New York, 32.8; Boston, 29.2; Chicago, 20.4; Philadelphia, 16.3; St. Louis, 14.6.

MASSACHUSETTS LEADS IN COTTON INDUSTRY.

Number of spindles—Massachusetts, 19,835,610; South Carolina, 3,793,387; North Carolina, 3,124,456; Rhode Island, 2,455,304.

1911—Population within 50 miles of Boston compared with other large cities: New York, 7,321,485; Boston, 3,470,587; Philadelphia, 2,943,848; Chicago, 2,843,057; St. Louis, 1,228,184.

These figures show that 1-26 of the entire population of the United States is within 50 miles of Boston's City Hall. Almost all these people trade in Boston stores.

PER CAPITA WEALTH OF CHIEF CITIES

1911—Boston, $2,159.82; New York, $1,844.95; Pittsburg, $1,292.02; Baltimore, $1,116.97; Philadelphia, $844.81; St. Louis, $822.20; Chicago, $381.20.

SAVINGS OF THE AMERICAN PEOPLE.

1911—New York, $1,526,935,581; Massachusetts, $770,814,452; California, $334,965,870; Pennsylvania, $175,194,529; Ohio, $126,710,271; Illinois, $31,396,607; Missouri, $27,643,257.

SCHOOL AND COLLEGE ATTENDANCE—PUBLIC SCHOOL ATTENDANCE.

New York, 727,710; Boston (Met), 236,662; Philadelphia, 174,136; Chicago, 112,133; St. Louis, 87,170.

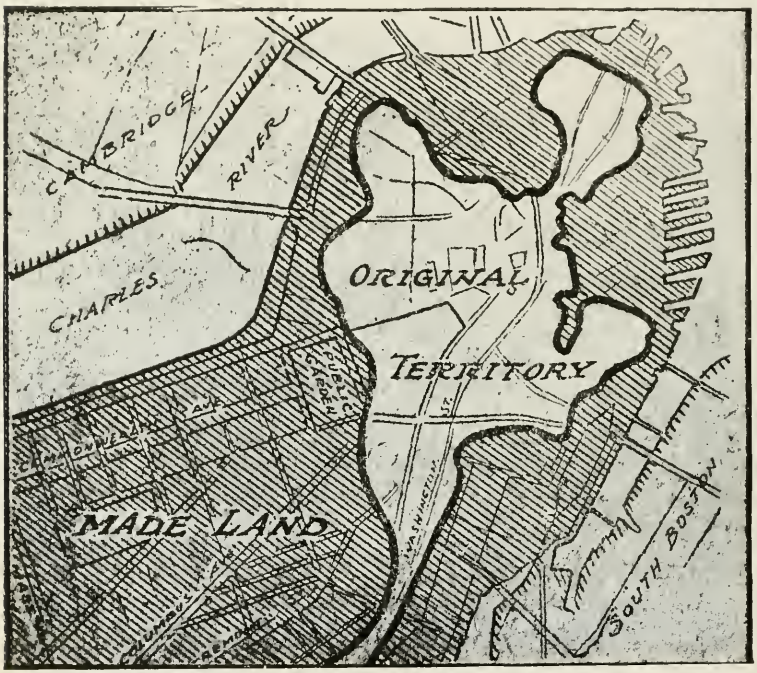
PARK ACRES OF GREAT CITIES OF THE WORLD.

Boston, 20,570 acres; London, 19,000 acres; Paris, 17,943 acres; Berlin, 11,980 acres; New York, 6,929 acres; Chicago, 4,388 acres; Vienna, 4,270 acres; Philadelphina, 4,171 acres; Los Angeles, 3,737 acres; Minneapolis, 3,379 acres; St. Louis, 2,659 acres; Kansas City, 2,465 acres.

Boston has the largest and finest park system in the world, with 30 miles of picturesque river banks, over 12 miles of delightful seashore, 79 miles of beautiful boulevards, and over 50 miles of entrancing woodland roads and paths. The wonderful bathing beaches about Boston, the best and safest in America, are part of the park system.

The total valuation of the City of Boston, Real Estate and Personal five years ago was $1,393,760,423.

The total Expenditure, city and county, was $34,288,549.-74.



Original Boston and Made Land

A Boston Town Meeting of the Olden Time

THE LIBRARY
UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA
Santa Barbara

THIS BOOK IS DUE ON THE LAST DATE
STAMPED BELOW.

Series 9482

3 1205 00204 2933

UC SOUTHERN REGIONAL LIBRARY FACILITY
AA 000 874 604 2